

Vieyra

A NEW
PORTUGUESE
GRAMMAR

IN FOUR PARTS;

CONTAINING

- I. Rules for the combination and use of the different Parts of Speech.
- II. The Syntax, in which are explained, after a more copious manner than hitherto attempted; the peculiar uses of the PORTUGUESE PARTICLES.
- III. A Vocabulary, more particularly containing the Terms of COMMERCE, WAR, and NAVIGATION, with a variety of Phrases and familiar Dialogues, taken from common conversation and the best authors.
- IV. Various Passages extracted from the most approved modern and ancient writers; with a view to facilitate the reading of the ancient and most valuable Portuguese books.

The Seventh Edition, carefully revised and improved, and the Portuguese Words properly accented, according to the latest and best Authorities.

By ANTHONY VIEYRA, Translagano.

Neceſſe eſt enim inter quos mercaturæ & contractuum ſint, inter eos quoque ſermonis eſſe commercia. UBERTUS FOLIETA.

L O N D O N ;

PRINTED FOR F. WINGRAVE, IN THE STRAND.

PC 5066

Vs
1809

387270

'29

T O
ROBERT ORME, Esq.

S I R,

THE best Historians and the greatest Poet my country has produced, have dedicated their talents to the subject which at present employs yours; and as no one is more sensible than yourself of the Geographical, Commercial, and Political Knowledge, which may be derived from an acquaintance with their writings on Indian affairs, this work of mine can nowise be addressed with greater propriety than to yourself.

I am, SIR,

Your most humble servant,

ANTHONY VIEYRA.

ROBERT ROBERTS, Esq.

THE following is a list of the names of the persons who have been admitted to the office of the Secretary of the Board of Education, since the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

1. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

2. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

3. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

4. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

5. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

6. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

7. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

8. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

9. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

10. Mr. Robert Roberts, Esq., Secretary of the Board of Education, from the first of January, 1860, to the first of January, 1861.

P R E F A C E.

AS the usefulness of the Portuguese language is so well known to all English merchants who carry on a general trade with the different Parts of the known world, it will be needless to use any arguments here to prove it; and I shall refer what I have to say on the copiousness and energy of this language, to the Preface to my English and Portuguese Dictionary.

The reader will find in the First Part of this Grammar, what is material as a foundation of the whole.

At the end of the Second Part is a full explanation of the Particles, on which I have bestowed more time and labour, because this subject has been hitherto much neglected, although the principal ornament and elegance not only of the Portuguese, but of every other language, chiefly consist in the proper arrangement and judicious interspersion of these words.

In the Third Part is a larger collection than hitherto published of the terms of Trade, War, Navigation, &c. which the present intercourse between the two nations renders particularly useful.

Having

Having found a great difficulty in procuring Portuguese books in this Country, I have been commonly obliged to furnish with part of my private collection those Gentlemen whom I have had the honour of assisting in the study of this language, during my residence here; therefore, in the Fourth Part I have given some passages selected from the best Portuguese Authors, and which will, at the same time, facilitate the reading of their most eminent Historians, such as Goes, Barros, Pinto, &c. whose Orthography differs considerably from the more modern.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

<i>OF the Portuguese Alphabet, and the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter</i>	Page	1
<i>Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables</i>		3
<i>Of the Articles</i>		8
<i>Of the Nouns</i>		11
<i>Of the Pronouns</i>		25
<i>Of Verbs</i>		44
<i>Of the Participles</i>		113
<i>Of the Adverbs</i>		114
<i>Of the Prepositions</i>		117
<i>Of the Conjunctions</i>		118
<i>Interjective Particles</i>		120
<i>Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language</i>		121

C O N T E N T S.

P A R T II.

<i>Of the Division of Syntax</i>	122
<i>Of the Syntax of Articles</i>	126
<i>Of the Syntax of Nouns, and first, of the Substantives</i>	131
<i>Of the Syntax of Adjectives</i>	132
<i>Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives</i> ..	135
<i>Of the Syntax of Pronouns</i>	136
<i>Of the Syntax of Verbs</i>	139
<i>Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds</i>	152
<i>Of Prepositions</i>	154
<i>Of the Portuguese Orthography</i>	191
<i>Of the Quantity of Syllables, and their Sound</i>	209
<i>Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin</i> ..	215

P A R T III.

<i>The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language</i>	218
<i>A Vocabulary of Words most used in Discourse</i>	1
<i>Of the Portuguese Coin</i>	57
<i>A Collection of Portuguese Proverbs</i>	58
<i>Familiar Dialogues</i>	67
<i>Letters on Mercantile Affairs, &c.</i>	83

P A R T IV.

<i>Several useful and entertaining Passages, whereof the greatest Part is collected from the best Portuguese Writers, as Andrade, Barros, &c.</i>	118
---	-----

PORTUGUESE AND SPANISH LANGUAGES.

Lately Published.

1. A Dictionary of the Portuguese and English Languages, in Two Parts : Portuguese and English, and English and Portuguese : by Anthony Vieyra. In two large Volumes, 8vo. a new Edition, carefully revised and improved, and the Portuguese Words properly accented, to facilitate the Pronunciation to Learners.
2. An Abridgment of the above in a pocket volume.
3. A New Grammar of the Portuguese and English Languages. By Mr. Vieyra. 8vo. New Edition, with the Portuguese Words properly accented, 7s. 6d.
4. Exercises upon the different Parts of Speech of the Portuguese Language, referring to Mr. Vieyra's Grammar. 12mo. 3s. 6d.
5. Grammatica Portugueza e Ingleza, a qual serve para Instruir aos Portuguezes na Lingua Ingleza. 4s. 6d. boards. 8vo.
6. Historia de Gil Braz de Santilhana traduzida em Portuguez, 4 tom. 12mo.
7. Historia de Portugal, por Antonio de Moraes Silvo, natural do Rio de Janeiro, e continuada atéos nossos tempos, por Hippolyto Jose da Costa, 2 tom. 12mo.
8. Selections in Portuguese and English, for the Use of Persons learning those languages, with the Portuguese Words properly accented. 8vo.
9. A new Dictionary of the Spanish and English Languages, in Two Parts—1. Spanish and English; 2. English and Spanish. A New Edition, corrected and improved. By Joseph Baretti. 2 vols. 8vo.
10. The same abridged, in a small size.
11. A New Spanish Grammar : or, the Elements of the Spanish Language. By Mr. Delpino. A new Edition, improved by Delpneyo. 8vo. 7s.
12. Fernandez's New Practical Grammar of the Spanish Language; a New Edition, considerably enlarged by the Author. 8vo. 6s.
13. Exercises upon the Rules of Construction of the Spanish Language, with references to the above Grammar. By Mr. Ferrández. A New Edition, greatly improved by the Author. 3s. 6d.
14. Las Aventuras de Gil Blas de Santillana; Nueva Edición revisadas por el Rév. Don Felipe Fernandez. 4 vol. 12mo.
15. Don Quixote de la Mancha, compuesta por Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra. Nueva Edicion por M. Fernandez. 4 tom. 12mo.
16. Novelas Nuevas, por Mr. De Florian, traducidas libremente, é ilustradas con algunas notas curiosas é instructivas, por Don Gaspar Zavala y Zamora. 12mo.
17. Gonzalvo de Cordova, por Mr. De Florian, trad. por D. Juan Lopez de Penalvor, 2 tom. 12mo.

London : Printed for F. Wingrave, Strand.

A NEW

A NEW

PORTUGUESE GRAMMAR.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

OF THE PORTUGUESE ALPHABET,

And the manner of pronouncing each separate Letter.

THE Portuguese alphabet contains twenty-four letters, viz.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z.

The A is expressed by a sound like that of *a* in the English words *at, rat, fat, &c.*

B is expressed by a sound like that of the *be*, in the first syllable of the English word *Betty*.

C is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *celebrated*.

D is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *declare*.

E is expressed by a sound like that which we give to the English *a* when we pronounce the word *care*.

B

F is

F is expressed by the same sound as in English.

G is expressed by a sound like that of the first syllable of the English word *generation*.

H is expressed by a sound like that of the English word *aglast* if you cut off the two last letters *st*, and keep the accent on the second *a*.

I is expressed by the sound of our *ee*.

J is called *j consoánte*, i. e. the *j* consonant, and has the same power as the *g* before *e* or *i*.

L, as in English.

M, as in English.

N, as in English.

O has nearly the same sound as in the English word *store*.

P is expressed by a sound like that of *pe* in the English word *penny*.

Q is expressed by a sound like that of the English *k*.

R is expressed by a sound like that of the English participle *erred*, if you can cut off the last letter *d*.

S, as in English.

T is expressed by a sound like that of *tha* in the English word *Thames*.

U is expressed by a sound like that of *oo* in the English word *poop*.

V is expressed by a sound like that of *oo*; they call it also *oo consoánte*, i. e. the *v* consonant.

X is expressed by a sound like that of our pronoun personal *she*, if you add an *s* to it, or as *shees*.

Y is expressed by a sound like that of *i* in the English word *visible*, and is called *ypsilón*.

Z is expressed by the sound of our English *zed*, leaving out the *d*, or *zea*.

Of the manner of pronouncing the Portuguese Letters as combined in Syllables; and first

OF THE VOWELS.

A.

A in Portuguese is commonly pronounced like *a* in the following English words, *adapted*, *castle*, &c. It is sometimes pronounced with less strength, and closely, as in *âmbos*, where the *a* is pronounced like *a* in the English word *ambition*.

E.

The letter *e* has two different sounds; the one open like *ay* in *daily*; the other close, like that in the English word *mellow*. Examples of the former, *fê*, *faith*, *pê*, *foot*, &c. Examples of the latter, *rêde*, a net, *parêde*, a wall, &c. In this consists a great part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation, which however, cannot be learnt but by a long use, notwithstanding all the rules that can be given.

I.

Is pronounced like *ee* in the English word *steel*, *âço*; or like *i* in the English words *still*, *ainda*; *visível*, *visível*.

O.

This vowel has two sounds; one open, as in the word *dó*, *pity*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *o* in the word *store*; the other close, as in the Portuguese article *do*, *of*, and the word *redondo*, *round*, where the *o* is pronounced like our *u* in *turret* or *stumble*. It is likewise in the different pronunciation of this vowel that consists the greatest part of the beauty of the Portuguese pronunciation; but it can be learned only by a long use.

U.

The vowel *u* is pronounced like *oo* in English.

Y.

Y has the same sound as the Portuguese vowel *i*.

OF CONSONANTS.

B

Keeps always the same sound as in English.

C

Before *a*, *o*, *u*, and the consonants *l*, *r*, is properly pronounced as *k*; but before *e* and *i* it takes the hissing sound of *s*: it takes also the sound of *s* before *a*, *o*, *u*, when there is a dash under it thus *ç*.

I could wish the learned in Portugal would follow the resolution of the Royal Academy of Madrid, by expunging such dash, and placing the s in its stead, since they have in both languages the same hissing sound which frequently occasions great confusion in the proper use of them.

C before *h* is pronounced like *ch* in the English words *charity*, *cherry*, &c.

Double *c* is sounded only before *e* and *i*, the first with the sound of *k*, and the other with the hissing sound of *s*; as in *accidente*, *accident*, pronounce *aksidente*.

D

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

F

Is pronounced always as in English.

G

Before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, *gosto*, taste; *gaiola*, cage; *grito*, a cry.

G before

G before *e* and *i* denotes the sound of *j* consonant.

Gua sounds almost like our *wa*: example, *guárda*, pronounce *gwarda*.

Gue, *gui*, are pronounced as *gue* in the word *guest*, and *gi* in the word *gift*; but in the verbs *arguir* and *redarguir*, it is to be pronounced as if it were written *argueer*, &c.

H.

The letter *h* is never aspirated nor pronounced at the beginning of words, as *hóra*, an hour; *homem*, a man: but, according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an *h*.

H when preceded by a *c*, makes a sound with it like our *ch*. See the letter C, and also the letters L and N.

J

Is pronounced like our *j* consonant.

K.

The Portuguese have no such letter as *k*.

L

Is pronounced in Portuguese as in English.

Lh is pronounced like *g* before an *l* in the Italian words *figlio*, *foglio*, &c.

M

Is pronounced as in English, when placed before a vowel with which it forms a syllable; but, when it is at the end of words, and preceded by the letter *e*, it forms in Portuguese a nasal sound like that of the French words *vin*, wine; *pain*, bread; except *sóem*, *tóem*, from the verbs *soár*, *toár*, and some others.

M at the end of words, preceded by an *a*, *e*, or *i*, has such a nasal obtuse sound that can only be learned from a master's mouth.

N.

N being before a vowel with which it forms a syllable, is pronounced as in English; otherwise, it only gives a nasal sound to the vowel that precedes it.

N before *h* has the same sound as *gn* in Italian, or in the French words *Espagne*, *Allemagne*.

P.

P and *ph* are pronounced as in English.

Q

Is pronounced like *k*: example, *quéro*, I am willing, pronounce *keró*.

☞ The vowel *u* after *q* in the word *qual*, which, must be uttered so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear, is pronounced as in the English word *quantity*, in order to distinguish it from the substantive *cal*, lime.

R.

R and double *r* are pronounced as in English.

S.

S and *ss* are pronounced as in English.

S between two vowels is pronounced like a *z*; particularly in the words ending in *oso*, and *esa*, as *amoroso*, *cuidadoso*, *mêsa*, *defêsa*, &c.

T

Is pronounced as in English.

V

Is pronounced as in English.

X

Is pronounced as *sh* in English; except in the word *axioma*, in which, according to *Feyjo*, the *x* is to be pronounced like *c*.

X after

X after the vowel *e* is pronounced like *cs*, in the words *extençam*, *extenuádo*, *expulso*, *excellênte*, and some other words.

X between two vowels is pronounced like *gz* in the words *exactamênte*, *exornár*; except *Alexandre*, *Paixám*, *Puxo*, *báxo*, and some other words, that may be learnt by use. You must take care to pronounce the *g* so smoothly as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

Z

Is pronounced as in English, but at the end of words it is pronounced like *s*, as *rapáz*, boy; *Francez*, French; *perdíiz*, partridge; *vox*, voice; *lux*, light, &c.

The tittle, or little dash, which the Portuguese call *til*, is set by them over some letters instead of *m*; as *bē* instead of *bem*; *convē* instead of *convém*; *hūa* instead of *huma*; and as it is then to be considered as an *m*, see what we have said about the pronunciation of that letter.

They also set their *til* over the vowels, *ao*, *aa*, in the end of words, thus *āo*, *āa*. See what we have said above of *m* at the end of words preceded by an *a*.

OF DIPHTHONGS.

The meeting of many vowels in one and the same syllable constitute what is called Diphthongs, and they are the following in the Portuguese language.

Aa, as in *maçãa*, an apple.

Ae, as in *cães*, dog.

Ay, as in *páy*, father.

Ai, as in *máis*, more.

Ao, as in *páo*, wood.

Au, as in *causa*, a cause.

Eo, as in *céo*, heaven.

Ey, as in *réy*, king.

Ei, as in *améi*, I loved.

Eu, as *éu*, I.

Io, as *vio*, he saw.

Oe, as in *poēm*, they put ; *compóem*, they compose ;
meloēs, melons, &c.

Oy, as in *bóy*, an ox ; *fóy*, he was.

Ou, as *dou*, I give ; *sou*, I am.

Ue, as *azúes*, blue :

¶ The two vowels in the following words must be plainly and distinctly pronounced :

Ai, as in *paíz*, a country, pronounce *pa-íz*.

Ea, as in *lampréa*, a lamprey, pronounce, *lampré-a*.

Ia, as *clemência*, clemency, pronounce, *clemência-a*.

Io, as in *navio*, a ship, pronounce, *navi-o*.

Iu, as *viúva*, a widow, pronounce, *vi-úva*.

Oa, as *Lisboa*, Lisbon, *próa*, a poop, pronounce,
Lisbó-a, &c.

Oe, as *tóem*, *sóem*, from the verbs *tóar*, and *soár*,
pronounce *to-em*, &c.

Oi, as *roím*, bad, pronounce *ro-ím*.

Oo, as *cooperaçám*, co-operation, pronounce, *co-
operação*.

Ui, as *ruína*, a ruin, pronounce *ru-ína*.

CHAP. II.

OF THE ARTICLES.

THOSE particles called Articles, are properly prepositions, commonly put before nouns, to shew their gender, number, and case.

These articles are definite or indefinite.

Of the Definite Article.

The definite article marks the gender, number, and case, of the nouns which it precedes.

The

The English tongue has but one definite article, namely *the*, which serves for both numbers.

The Portuguese has two, viz: *o* for the masculine and *a* for the feminine.

The definite article has five cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative; because the vocative in the nouns is designed and preceded merely by the particle *o*.

The Declension of the Masculine Article o.

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, <i>o</i> , the.	Nominative, <i>os</i> , the.
Genitive, <i>do</i> , of the.	Genitive, <i>dos</i> , of the.
Dative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , to the.	Dative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , to the.
Accusative, <i>ao</i> , or <i>o</i> , the.	Accusative, <i>aos</i> , or <i>os</i> , the.
Ablative, <i>do</i> , from or by the.	Ablative, <i>dos</i> , from or by the.

The Declension of the Feminine Article a.

Singular.	Plural.
Nominative, <i>a</i> , the.	Nominative, <i>as</i> , the.
Genitive, <i>da</i> , of the.	Genitive, <i>das</i> , of the.
Dative, <i>á</i> , to the.	Dative, <i>ás</i> , to the.
Accusative, <i>a</i> , the.	Accusative, <i>as</i> , the.
Ablative, <i>da</i> , from the.	Ablative, <i>das</i> , from or by the.

☞ Observe, that the Portuguese have an article for each gender, both in the singular and the plural.

Of the Indefinite Article.

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the plural as well as the singular number.

The indefinite article has but four cases, the genitive, dative, accusative, and ablative.

One may put *de* before a noun masculine as well as a feminine, as *húma coróa de réy*, a king's crown; the word *réy* is masculine; *hum chapéu de pálla*, a hat of straw; the word *pálha* is of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article *de* is also put before the plural as well as the singular number: example, *húma coróa*

corôa de flores, a crown of flowers; *hum prato de arrôz*, a plate of rice.

Declension of the Indefinite Article.

Genitive, *de* of.

Accusative, *a*.

Dative, *á*, to.

Ablative, *de*, from.

☞ The accusative of this article is not expressed in English: example, *Eu conheci a seu páy*, I knew his father, *eu conheci a sua mãy*, I knew his mother.

The indefinite article may also be put before infinitives, and then it signifies *to*; as, *he tempo de fallár, de dormír, de ler, &c.* it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, &c. *eu vou a ver, a fallár*, I am going to see, to speak.

N. B. Whenever we meet with *of* and *to* in English, followed by *the*, remember they are the indefinite articles, and then we must make use of the indefinite article *de*, or *a*, in Portuguese.

When the verb is in the infinitive mood, and serves as nominative to the following verb, they put the article *o* before it; as *o comér e o dormír são as cousas máis necessárias nesta vida*, eating and sleeping are the greatest necessities of life.

When the preposition *in* is followed by the article *the* or by a pronoun possessive, as *in the, in my, in thy, in his*, we must render it in Portuguese by *em o* or *no, em os* or *nos*, for the masculine; and by *em a* or *na, em as* or *nas*, for the feminine: example, in the garden, *em o jardim*, or *no jardim*; in the street, *em a rua* or *na rua*; in thy book, *em o teu*, or *no teu livro*; in his bed, *em a sua*, or *na sua cama, &c.*

When after the preposition *with*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *com*, we find the articles *the*, or a pronoun possessive, as *with the, with my, &c.* we may say, *com o* or *co, com a* or *coa, com os* or *cos, com as* or *coas*: example, with the prince, *com o* or *co príncipe*; with the sword, *com a* or *coa espáda*; with the eyes, *com os* or *cos olhos*; with my books, *com os* or *cos meus livros, &c.*

When

When the preposition *with* is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality or kindred, as *with your majesty, with your highness, with your excellency, with his brother, &c.* *with* must then be rendered by the Portuguese word *com*, as *com vossa majestade, com vossa altéza, com seu irmão*, without using the article.

Observe, that sometimes the dative and accusative of the indefinite article are not expressed in English, particularly before pronouns personal and proper names; example, *convém a nos*, it behoves us; *António matou a Pedro*, Anthony killed Peter.

CHAP. III.

OF THE NOUNS.

THE Portuguese nouns have various terminations, as will appear hereafter.

They have but two genders, the masculine and feminine.

The Portuguese nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin, and the article only distinguishes the case.

Of nouns ending in a; and of their declension.

Singular.

Plural.

Nom. <i>a rainha</i> , the queen.	Nom. <i>as rainhas</i> , the queens.
Gen. <i>da rainha</i> , of the queen.	Gen. <i>das rainhas</i> , of the queens.
Dat. <i>á rainha</i> , to the queen.	Dat. <i>às rainhas</i> , to the queens.
Acc. <i>a rainha</i> , the queen.	Acc. <i>as rainhas</i> , the queens.
Voc. <i>o rainha</i> , O queen.	Voc. <i>o rainhas</i> . O queens.
Abl. <i>da ou pélla rainha</i> , from or by the queen.	Abl. <i>da ou pellas rainhas</i> from or by the queens.

We have already observed that the Portuguese Nouns have no variation of cases; therefore there is

no occasion to display more examples of their declensions, because you need but change the article according to their gender.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in a.

Nouns ending in *a* are generally of the feminine gender ; as *rosa*, a rose ; *janélla*, a window, &c. You must except *día*, a day, *planéta*, a planet ; and other nouns ending in *a*, belonging to a man ; as *mariôla*, a porter ; *jesuita*, a jesuit : those derived from the Greek are likewise masculine ; as *dôgma*, *epigrâmma*, *clima* ; except scientific names as *mathe-mática*, *theologia*, &c.

Except also from this general rule some nouns that have the accent upon the last syllable ; as *alva-rá*, a charter, or a prince's letters patent ; *Pará*, one of the captainships of the Portuguese America, &c.

Observe, that the plural of nouns ending in *a* is formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular ; as likewise the plural of all nouns that terminate in vowels.

Observe also, that nouns ending in *ãa* are of the feminine gender, and form their plural as those ending in *a*.

Of the Gender of Nouns ending in e.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender ; as *dente*, a tooth ; *válle*, a valley ; *vêntre*, the womb, &c.

The exceptions are *fé*, faith ; *fônte*, a fountain ; *chave*, a key ; *tôrre*, a tower ; *ave*, a fowl ; *carne*, flesh or meat ; *gênte*, people ; *môrte*, death ; *néve*, snow ; *noite*, night ; *pônte*, a bridge ; *pêste*, plague ; *pârte*, part ; *serpênte*, a serpent ; *lebre*, a hare.

Except also all names of virtues, vices, faculties, and those expressive of the passions of the mind ; as *virtude*, virtue ; *santidade*, holiness ; *bondade*, goodness ; *vaidade*, vanity ; *ociosidade*, idleness, &c.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, *idade*, age ; *velhice*, old age ; *rusticidade*, rusticity ; *capacidade*, capacity ; *felicidade*, happiness ; *sorte*, fortune ; *arte*, art ; *arvore*, a tree ; *fertilidade*, fertility ; *sede*, thirst ; *sêbe*, a hedge ; *couve*, cabbage ; *herdade*, a farm or manor ; *chaminé*, a chimney ; *parede*, a wall ; *saude*, health ; *rede*, a net ; *maré*, the tide ; *febre*, fever ; *galé*, a gallery, &c.

Of the Gender of the Nouns ending in i.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine ; as *extási*, a rapture ; *nébri*, a hawk, &c.

Of Nouns ending in o.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ; as *livro*, a book ; *filho*, a son ; *bráço*, an arm ; *vestido*, a garment ; *espélho*, a looking glass, &c. Except *não*, a ship ; *filhó*, a fritter or pancake ; *eiró*, an eel.

Of Nouns ending in u.

All nouns ending in *u* are masculine ; as *perú*, a turkey ; *grón*, a crane.

Of Nouns ending in y.

Nouns ending in *y* are of the masculine gender ; as *réy*, king ; *páy*, father ; *bóy*, ox, &c. except *léy*, a law ; *máy*, a mother.

Of the other Terminations of Nouns, or of those terminating in consonants.

1. All nouns ending in *al*, are masculine ; as *sinál*, a sign or token ; *sal*, salt. You must except *cal*, lime, which is feminine, and has no plural.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the letter *l* of the singular into *es* ; as *sináes* from *sinál* ; *animáes* from *animál*.

2. Nouns ending in *ar* are of the masculine gender ; as *ar*, air.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *áres* from *ar*.

Some

Some nouns ending in *as* in the plural are feminine, and have no singular; as *mígas*, *exéquias*, &c.

3. Nouns ending in *az* are of the masculine gender; as *rapáz*, a boy; except *paz*, peace. The plural is formed by the addition of *ez* to the singular.

4. Nouns ending in *el* are masculine; as *annél*; a ring; *papél*, paper, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *is*; as *annéis*, from *annél*; *papéis*, from *papél*.

5. Nouns ending in *em* are of the masculine gender; as *hómem*, a man; *péntem*, a comb, &c. Except *órdem*, order; *viagem*, a voyage; *vírgem*, a virgin, &c. but *salvagem*, a sort of beast, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*; as *hómens* from *hómem*, &c.

6. Nouns ending in *er* are of the masculine gender; as *podér*, powder; *prazér*, pleasure, &c. Except *colhér*, a spoon; *mulhér*, a woman.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *colhéres*, from *colhér*.

7. Nouns ending in *ez* are of the masculine gender; as *freguéz*, a parishioner or a customer; *mez*, month; *arnéz*, *levéz*, *revéz*, &c. Except *surdéz*, deafness; *torquéz*, *vez*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *freguézes*, from *freguéz*; but *tez* has no plural.

8. Nouns ending in *il* are of the masculine gender; as *funíl*, a funnel; *barríl*, a barrel.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *s*, as *funís*, from *funíl*, &c. Except *aquatíl*, *fácil*, *pensíl*, &c. which change the *il* into *eis* in the plural, as *fáceis*, from *fácil*.

9. Nouns ending in *im* are of the masculine gender, as *espadim*, a little sword.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *espadíns* from *espadím*.

10. Nouns ending in *ir* or *yr* are of the masculine gender; but *martir* or *martyr*, a martyr, is common.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

11. All nouns, ending in *iz* are of the masculine gender; as *apprendiz* an apprentice; *nariz*, nose; *verniz*, varnish; *matiz*, a shadowing in painting; *chafariz*, *chamariz*, &c. Except *aboiz*, *perdiz*, *raiz*, *cordóniz*, *matriz*, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *perdizes* from *perdiz*.

12. Nouns ending in *ol* are of the masculine gender; as *anzól*, a hook; *sól*, the sun, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *anzóes* from *anzól*, &c.

13. Nouns ending in *om* are of the masculine gender; as *som*, sound; *dom*, gift, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *sons* from *som*, &c.

14. Nouns ending in *or* are of the masculine gender; as *amór*, love, *temór*, fear, &c. Except *dor*, pain; *cór*, colour, &c.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular, as *amóres* from *amór*.

Nouns ending in *os* are of the masculine gender; as *Déos*, God.

The plural of these nouns is formed by changing the *s* into *zes*, as *Deózes* from *Déos*.

15. Nouns ending in *oz* are of the masculine gender; as *albernóz*, a Moorish coat; *arróz*, rice; *algóz*, hangman, &c. Except *nóz*, a walnut, *vóz*, voice; *fóz*, the mouth of a river.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

16. Nouns ending in *ul* or *um* are of the masculine gender ; as *sul*, the south ; *Saúl*, Saul, a proper name of a man ; *atúm*, tunny-fish.

The plural of those ending in *ul*, according to the learned *Bluteau*, is formed by changing the *l* of the singular into *es*, as *súes* from *sul*, *azúes* from *azúl* blue, &c. Except *cónsules* from *cónsul*, a consul.

The plural of those ending in *um*, is formed by changing the *m* of the singular into *ns*, as *atúns* from *atúm*.

17. Nouns ending in *uz* are of the masculine gender ; as *arcabúuz*, an arquebuss.

The plural of these nouns is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

18. Nouns ending in *ão* are of the feminine gender ; as *mão*, hand ; *composição*, composition, *oração*, oration, &c. Except *pão*, bread ; *anão*, a dwarf ; *oução*, a hand-worm ; *trovão*, thunder ; *esquadrão*, a squadron ; *pião*, a child's top ; *borrão*, a blot with ink ; *papelão*, brown paper ; *chão*, the ground, *quinhão*, a share.

There is no certain rule for the formation of the plural of the nouns ending in *ão* ; because some change the *ão* of the singular into *ães*, as *Alemães*, from *Alemão*, a German ; *capitães*, from *capitão*, a captain ; *caês*, from *caô*, a dog, *paês*, from *paô*, a loaf ; &c. Some change the *ão* of the singular into *ãos* ; as *cidadãos*, from *cidadão*, a citizen ; *christãos*, from *christão*, a christian ; *cortezãos* from *cortezão*, a courtier ; *villãos*, from *villão*, a villain, &c. Some change the *ão* of the singular into *ões* ; as *esquadrões*, from *esquadrão*, a squadron ; *trovões*, from *trovão*, thunder ; *conclusões*, from *conclusão*, a conclusion of these sheets ; *orações*, from *oração*, an oration : and generally all the Portuguese nouns that may be easily made English, by changing their termination *ção* into the English termination *tion*, as *declinação*, declension or declination, *consideração*, consideration, &c. and these are of the feminine gender.

19. All

19. All nouns signifying a male, must be of the masculine gender; as *dúque*, duke; *marquêz*, a marquis; *cónde*, count, and those denoting a female are always feminine.

You may form two general rules from what has been said concerning the formation of the plural of nouns, viz.

I. That all nouns ending in any of the vowels have their plural formed by adding the letter *s* to the singular.

II. That the plural of nouns ending in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, is formed by adding *es* to the singular.

Of Augmentatives.

The Portuguese have their augmentatives formed by the increase of one or two syllables, which they add to the end of their nouns, and serve either to augment the signification of nouns, or to declare a thing contemptible; and so, from *homem*, a man, they form, *homemzárão*, a great strong man; *tólo*, a fool, *toléirão*, a great fool, &c. and some others that may be learnt by use. They have also their augmentatives for the feminine; as, *mulheróna*, a great stout woman; *toleiróna*, &c.

There are a great many nouns that appear, by their termination, to be augmentatives, though they are not; as, *forão*, a ferret; *atafóna*, an ass or a horse-mill, &c.

Of Diminutives.

The diminutives lessen the signification of their primitives.

The diminutives in the Portuguese language are always formed by changing the last vowel of the primitives into *inho*; but they denote either smallness of things, or kindness and flattery; as *bichinho*, a little worm, from *bicho*, a worm; *coitadinho*, from *coitado*, a poor little man; *bonitinho*, a little pretty person

person or thing, from *bonito*, pretty. Sometimes they are formed by adding *zinho* to the primitives ; as *cãozinho*, a little dog, from *cao*, a dog, *irmãozinho*, dear little brother, from *irmão*, &c.

The diminutives that serve for the feminine have their termination in *inha*, or *zinha* ; as *mãozinha*, a little hand, from *mão*, a hand ; *cabecinha*, a little head, from *cabêça*, a head. You may see in the last example, that the diminutives serving for the feminine and ending in *inha*, are formed by changing the last syllable *a* of the primitive into *inha*.

Observe that many nouns appear to be diminutives without being so , as *moinho*, a mill ; *espinha*, a fish-bone.

Note, the diminutives in Portuguese convey sometimes a bad meaning, and denote contempt.

Of Nouns Adjective.

All adjectives ending in *o* make their feminine by changing *o* into *a* ; as *dôta*, from *dôto*, learned ; but *mão*, bad, makes *mã* in the feminine.

Those that end in *ão* have their feminine in *ãa* ; as, *sãa*, from *são*, healthy ; *louçãa*, from *louçao*, brisk, gay, beautiful ; *mêaa*, from *meão*, middling, ordinary.

Those ending in *e* are common to both genders ; as, *fôrte*, strong, &c.

Those that end in *m* make their feminine by adding an *a* to the masculine ; as, *húma*, from *hum*, one ; *algúma*, from *algúm*, some, &c. and sometimes by changing the *m* into *a* ; as, *commúa*, from *commum*, common ; *bóa*, from *bom*, good.

Those that end in *u* make their feminine by adding *a* to the masculine, as *núa*, from *nu*, naked ; *crúa*, from *cru*, raw.

Those that end in *ez* are common to both genders ; as *cortéz*, civil, kind ; *capáz*, capable, &c. except some which make the feminine, by adding *a* to the

the masculine ; as, *Francéza*, from *Francéz*, French ; *Portuguéza*, from *Portuguéz*, Portuguese.

Espanhól, Spanish, makes *Espanhóla* in the feminine ; but generally those that end in *l* are common to both genders ; as, *affável*, affable ; *crúel*, cruel, &c.

Of the Comparison of Adjectives.

The comparison of adjectives is the way of increasing their signification by certain degrees, which are three, viz. the positive, comparative, and superlative.

The positive lays down the natural signification of the adjective ; as, *nóbre*, noble ; *gránde*, great.

The comparative raises it to a higher degree, by comparing it to the positive, which in Portuguese is performed by the adverbs *máis*, more ; *ménos*, less ; as, *máis nobre*, more noble ; *ménos bella*, less handsome.

There are some adjectives which do not admit of *máis* or *ménos* before them ; as, *celéste*, *nacido*, *comprádo*, *desterrádo*, &c.

There are four Portuguese comparatives which end in *or* : they may also be expressed by *máis*, more, before their positive ; as,

Mayór, greater, *máis gránde*.

Menór, less, *máis pequêno*.

Peór, worse, *máis roím*.

Melhór, better, *máis bóm*.

To which may be added *superiór*, superior ; *inferiór*, inferior ; *deteriór* ; and some others.

Observe, that there can be no comparison made without the word *than* ; and that this word is expressed in Portuguese by *que*. Ex. *Máis cláro que o sol*, clearer than the sun ; *máis bráncó que a néve*, more white than the snow. The particle *que* is sometimes preceded by the word *do*. Ex. *isto he máis do que eu lhe disse*, this is more than I told him ;

he mais prudente do que parece, he is more wise than it appears

N. B. The comparatives *superiôr*, *inferiôr*, and some others, do not require *que* before the second term but the dative of the articles, viz. *á*, *ás*, *áo*, *aos*: Examp. *O êtro he superiôr á este*, the other is superior to this.

When the Portuguese have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they makê use of, *muíto mais*, a great deal or much more; as also of *muíto ménos*, a great deal, or much less. Ex. *Cæsar he muíto mais estimádo que Pompéo*, Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey; *Pompéo fôí muíto ménos feliz que Cæsar*, Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.

Of the Superlative.

The Portuguese superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into *íssimo* for the masculine, and into *íssima* for the feminine: thus, from *bêllo* is formed *bellíssimo* and *bellíssima*, most handsome. But sometimes the superlative is formed by adding *muíto*, very, to the positive; as, *muíto álto*, very tall.

Observe that some superlatives are differently formed; as, *frigidíssimo*, from *frío*, cold; *amicíssimo*, from *amigo*, friend; *antiquíssimo*, from *antigo*, ancient; *capacíssimo*, from *capáz*, capable; *nobilíssimo*, from *nôbre*, noble; *acérrimo*, from *ácre*, sharp, or acerb; *riquíssimo*, from *rico*, rich; *fertilíssimo*, from *fértil*, fruitful; *boníssimo*, from *bóm*, good; *fidelíssimo*, from *fiel*, faithful; *sacratíssimo*, from *sagrádo*, sacred, &c.

The most is expressed also in Portuguese by *o mais* and *a mais*; as the most fair, or fairest, *o mais bêllo*, *a mais bêlla*. But you must observe, that there are some adjectives which do not admit of *muíto*, very, *o mais*, or *á mais*; as *mórto*, *desterrádo*, &c.

Observe, that by changing the last letter of the superlatives into *amente*, superlative adverbs are composed;

composed ; as, from *doutíssimo*, learned, *doutíssimamente*, most learnedly, &c. But the positive adverbs are formed by adding *mênte* to the feminine of the positive ; as, *doutamente*, learnedly, from *dôuta*, the feminine of *dôuto* ; *prudentemente*, prudently, from *prudente*, prudent.

Of numeral Nouns ; and first, of Cardinal.

The cardinal nouns are such as express the number of things ; as,

<i>Húm</i> , one	<i>Vinte e dôus</i> , twenty-two
<i>Dôus</i> , two	<i>Vinte e três</i> , &c. twenty-three, &c.
<i>Três</i> , three	<i>Trinta</i> , thirty
<i>Quátro</i> , four	<i>Quarênta</i> , forty
<i>Cinco</i> , five	<i>Cincoênta</i> , fifty
<i>Sêis</i> , six.	<i>Sessênta</i> , sixty
<i>Sête</i> , seven	<i>Setênta</i> , seventy
<i>Oúto</i> or <i>oíto</i> , eight	<i>Oitênta</i> , eighty
<i>Nôve</i> , nine	<i>Novênta</i> , ninety
<i>Déz</i> , ten	<i>Cém</i> , a hundred
<i>O'nze</i> , eleven	<i>Duzêntos</i> , two hundred
<i>Dôze</i> , twelve	<i>Trezêntos</i> , three hundred
<i>Trêze</i> , thirteen	<i>Mil</i> , a thousand
<i>Quatôrze</i> , fourteen	<i>Dôus mil</i> , two thousand
<i>Quínze</i> , fifteen	<i>Milhão</i> , or <i>cónto</i> , a million
<i>Dezasêis</i> , sixteen	<i>Húma dezêna</i> , half a score
<i>Dezasête</i> , seventeen	<i>Húma Duzía</i> , a dozen
<i>Dezôuto</i> , eighteen	<i>Húma Vintêna</i> , a score
<i>Dezanôve</i> , nineteen	<i>Dúas Vintênas</i> , two score
<i>Vinte</i> , twenty	<i>Tres Vintênas</i> , three score
<i>Vinte e húm</i> , twenty-one	

Observe, that all the cardinals that are adjective nouns, are not declined, being of the common gender, except *hum*, *húma*, one ; *dôus*, *dúas*, two ; and those composed of *cênto*, a hundred ; as, *duzêntos*, *duzêntas*, two hundred ; *quátro cêntos*, *quátro cêntas*, four hundred, &c. and when the feminine *húma* is preceded by *á*, and followed by *á outra*, then *húma* signifies *first*, and *á outra*, *secondly*.

The plural, *húns*, *húmas*, is taken sometimes instead of *algúns*, *algúmas*, signifying some ; as *húns reys*, some kings ; *húmas rainhas*, some queens.

N. B. *Céto* loses *to* before a noun, either masculine or feminine, and the *n* is changed into *m*; therefore you must say, *cem soldádos*, not *cento soldádos*. It only retains *to* and *n* when it is followed by another number, as *céto e hum*, &c. a hundred and one, &c. and when it is substantive.

N. B. Sometimes *céto* is made a substantive; as *hum céto de castánhas*, one hundred of chesnuts; and so all the cardinal numbers, when preceded by an article, or by another noun of numbers, as *o cinco de páos*, the five of clubs; *hum sete*, a seven.

The cardinal number is rendered into English by the ordinal, when it expresses the day of the month, or the date of any act; as, *chegou a quátro de Máyo*, he arrived the fourth day of May.

Ordinal Nouns.

Ordinal nouns are such as express the order of things; as,

<i>Priméiro</i> , first	<i>Décimo-oitávo</i> , eighteenth
<i>Segúndo</i> , second	<i>Décimo-nóno</i> , nineteenth
<i>Tercéiro</i> , third	<i>Vigésimo</i> , or <i>ventésimo</i> , twentieth
<i>Quárto</i> , fourth	<i>Vigésimo-primeíro</i> , one and twentieth
<i>Quínto</i> , fifth	<i>Trigésimo</i> , thirtieth
<i>Séxto</i> , sixth	<i>Quadrágésimo</i> , or <i>quarentésimo</i> , fortieth
<i>Sétimo</i> , seventh	<i>Quinquagésimo</i> , fiftieth
<i>Oitávo</i> , eighth	<i>Sexagésimo</i> , sixtieth
<i>Nóno</i> , ninth	<i>Septuagésimo</i> , seventieth
<i>Décimo</i> , tenth	<i>Octagésimo</i> , eightieth
<i>Undécimo</i> , or <i>onzéno</i> , eleventh	<i>Nonagésimo</i> , ninetieth
<i>Duodécimo</i> , twelfth	<i>Centésimo</i> , the hundredth
<i>Décimo-tércio</i> , thirteenth	<i>Millésimo</i> , the thousandth
<i>Décimo-quárto</i> , fourteenth	<i>U'ltimo</i> , the last
<i>Décimo-quínto</i> , fifteenth	
<i>Décimo-séxto</i> , sixteenth	
<i>Décimo-sétimo</i> , seventeenth	

The proportionable numbers are, *simplez*, *duplicádo* or *dobrádo*, *triplicádo* or *triplice* or *tresdobrádo*, *quadruplicádo* or *quádruplo*, *centuplo*; a single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.

The

The distributive nouns are, *hum á hum*, one by one ; *dous á dous*, two by two.

In English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs ; but in Portuguese they have only *primeiramente*, and *secundariamente*, or *segundariamente*, first, secondly ; and to express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say, *em tercêiro lugar*, *em quarto lugar*, in the third place, in the fourth place.

A method (for those who understand French) to learn a great many Portuguese words in a short time.

We must observe, that the French syllable *cha* is generally expressed in Portuguese by *ca*, rejecting the *h*. Examp. *Charbon*, *charité*, *chasteté*, *chapon*, *chapelle*, *chapiure*, &c. the Portuguese say, *carvão*, *caridade*, *castidade*, *capão*, *capella*, *capítulo*, &c. Observe also the following rules.

French words ending in *ance*, or *ence* ; as, *constance*, *vigilance*, *clémence*, *prudence*, &c. in Portuguese end in *ância* or *ência* ; as *constância*, *vigilância*, *clemência*, *prudência*, &c.

Agne makes *anha* ; *montagne*, *montanha* ; *campagne*, *campanha*.

Ie makes *ia* ; *comédie*, *comedia*. Here you lean the accent upon the *e*, and not upon the *i*, as in French ; *poésie*, *poesia*.

Oire makes *ória* ; *gloire*, *glória* ; *victoire*, *victória*.

Ure makes *úra* ; *imposture*, *impostura* ; *figure*, *figura*.

Ison makes *zão* ; *raison*, *razão* ; *prison*, *prizão*.

On makes *ão* ; *charbon*, *carvão* ; *baron*, *barão*.

Ulier makes *ulár* : *regulier*, *regular* ; *particulier*, *particular*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in e.

Ant, *ante* ; *vigilant*, *vigilante* ; *amant*, *amante*.

Ent, adjective, *énte* ; *prudent*, *prudente* ; *diligent*, *diligente*.

Té makes *dáde* ; pureté, *puridáde* ; libéralité, *liberalidáde*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in vel.

Able, vel ; louable, *louvável* ; aimable, *amável*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in ez.

Ois, names of nations, *ez* ; François, *Francéz* ; Anglois, *Ingléz*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in o.

Ain, and *ien*, names of nations, *áno* ; Romain, *Románo* : Italien, *Italiáno* ; Napolitain, *Napolitáno*.

Aire, ário : salaire, *salário* ; téméraire, *temerário*.

Eau, eo, chapeau ; *chapéo*.

Ent, substantive, *énto* ; sacrement, *sacraménto*.

Eux, óso ; généreux, *generóso* ; gracieux, *gracióso*.

If, ivo ; actif, *activo*, passif, *passívo*.

C, co ; porc, *pórco* ; Turc, *Túrco*.

French Terminations ending in Portuguese in or.

Eur, or ; terreur, *terrór* ; humeur, *humór* ; chaleur, *calór*.

Change of Terminations of the Verbs and Participles.

Er, in the infinitive mood of the first conjugation, makes *ár* ; aimer, *amár* ; chanter, *cantár*.

Ir makes *ir*, in the infinitive mood : as, partir, *partír* ; sentir, *sentír*.

Oir makes *er* in the infinitive mood ; as, concevoir, *concebér*.

The participles in *é* make *ádo* ; aimé, *amádo* ; parlé, *falládo*.

The participles in *i* make *ído* ; dormi, *dormído* ; menti, *mentído*.

The participles in *u* make *do* : as, conçu, *concebído*, entendu, *entendído*, &c.

There are a great many Portuguese words that have no manner of analogy with the French, which prevent these rules from being general.

CHAP. III.

OF PRONOUNS.

THE pronouns are personal, conjunctive, mixed, positive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

Of personal Pronouns.

The pronouns personal are *eu* and *nos* for the first person ; they serve for the masculine and the feminine.

Tu and *vos* for the second; these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

Elle for the third person of the masculine gender; and *éles* in the plural.

Ella, for the third person of the feminine gender, makes in the plural *éllas*.

The pronouns personal are declined with the article indefinite, *de*, *a*, *á*, *da*.

The Declension of personal Pronouns.

First Person.

Singular Number.

Nom. *Eu*, I.
 Gen. *de mim*, of me.
 Dat. *á mim*, to me.
 Acc. *a mim*, me.
 Abl. *de mim*, or *por mim*,
 from or by me.

Plural Number.

Nom. *nós*, we.
 Gen. *de nós*, of us.
 Dat. *a nós*, or *nos*, us.
 Acc. *a nós*, us.
 Abl. *de nós*, or *por nós*,
 from or by us.

With me is rendered by *comigo*; and sometimes they add the pronoun *mêsmo* to it; *me* is expressed by *me* in the Portuguese; as speak to me, *fallái-me*; tell me, *dizéi-me*: send me, *mandái-me*; write to me, *escrevéi-me*; *elle disse-me*, he told me, &c.

With us is rendered by Portuguese by *com nósco*.

Us

Us is rendered by *nos*. Examp. tell us, *dizéi-nos*; give us, *dái-nos*; show us, *mostrái-nos*; *elle disse-nos*, he told us, &c. In these examples *us* is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive, as you will see hereafter.

Second Person.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. <i>tu</i> , thou,	Nom. <i>vós</i> , ye or you.
Gen. <i>de ti</i> , of thee.	Gen. <i>de vós</i> , of you.
Dat. <i>á ti</i> , or <i>te</i> , to thee.	Dat. <i>á vós</i> , or <i>vós</i> , you.
Acc. <i>á ti</i> , or <i>te</i> , thee.	Acc. <i>á vós</i> , or <i>vós</i> , you.
Abl. <i>de ti</i> , or <i>por ti</i> , from or by thee.	Abl. <i>de vós</i> , or <i>por vós</i> , from or by you.

With thee is rendered by *contigo*; and sometimes they add to it the pronoun *mésmo*. *You*, or *yourself*, after imperatives are rendered by *vos*, and not *vós*; as, be you contented, *contentái-vos*; show yourself, *mostrái-vos*; hide yourself, *escondéi-vos*.

Thee or *thyself*, are expressed after imperatives by *te*; as *móstrate*, show thyself.

With you is rendered in Portuguese by *com vósco*.

Third Person. For the Masculine.

Singular.	Plural.
Nom. <i>elle</i> , he, or it,	Nom. <i>élles</i> , they.
Gen. <i>d'elle</i> , of him, or of it.	Gen. <i>d'élles</i> , of them.
Dat. <i>á elle</i> , to him, or to it.	Dat. <i>á élles</i> , to them.
Acc. <i>á elle</i> , him, or it.	Acc. <i>á élles</i> , them.
Abl. <i>d'elle</i> or <i>por elle</i> , from or by him or it.	Abl. <i>d'élles</i> or <i>por élles</i> , from or by them.

The Portuguese have no particular pronoun, as our *it*, for things that are inanimate.

Remember that the pronoun *him*, or to *him*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese, by *lhe*, and *them*, or to *them*, by *lhes*.

With him is rendered in Portuguese sometimes by *com elle*, and sometimes by *comsigo*, to which they add the pronoun *mésmo*.

Third Person. Feminine.

Singular.

Nom. *élla*, she or it.
 Gen. *délla*, of her or of it.
 Dat. *á élla*, to her or to it.
 Acc. *á élla*, her or it.
 Abl. *délla*, or *por élla*, from
 or by her or it.

Plural.

Nom. *éllas*, they.
 Gen. *déllas*, of them.
 Dat. *á éllas*, to them.
 Abl. *á éllas*, them.
 Acc. *déllas* or *por éllas*,
 from or by them.

Remember that the pronoun *her* or *to her*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Portuguese by *lhe*, and *them*, or *to them*, by *lhes*; as you will see in the pronouns conjunctive.

With her is rendered in Portuguese by *com élla* or *comfigo*.

Of the Pronoun si, himself, or one's self.

There is another pronoun personal that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine: this is *si*, one's self. It has no nominative.

Gen. *de si*, of one's self, himself, or herself.

Dat. *á si*, to one's self, &c.

Acc. *á si*, one's self, &c.

Abl. *de si*, *por si*, from or by one's self.

It is joined with the pronoun *mésmo* or *mésma*; as *de* or *por si mésmo*, by himself; *por si mésmo*, or *de si mésmo*, by herself; *o homem não ama senão a si mésmo*, man loves himself only; *quem nao he bom senão para si, não he bem que viva*, who minds no body but himself only, don't deserve to live; *o vício he abominável de si mésmo*, vice is hateful of itself; *a terra de si*, or *de si mésmo he fértil*, the earth is fruitful of itself.

Observe that they join also the pronoun *mésmo* to pronouns personal, as the French do with their pronoun *même*, viz.

Eu

<i>Eu</i> <i>mêsno</i> , myself.	<i>nós</i> <i>mêsmos</i> , ourselves.
<i>Tu</i> <i>mêsno</i> , thyself.	<i>vós</i> <i>mêsmos</i> , yourselves.
<i>E'lle</i> <i>mêsno</i> , himself.	<i>êlles</i> <i>mêsmos</i> } themselves.
<i>E'lla</i> <i>mêsma</i> , herself.	<i>êllas</i> <i>mêsmas</i> }

o *hómem* *mêsno*, man himself ; *a* *mêsma* *virtude*, virtue itself.

1st. Observe, that *mêsno* with the article is also an adjective, signifying *the same* ; thus *o* *mêsno*, *a* *mêsma*, *os* *mêsmos*, *as* *mêsmas*, the same, relating to some nouns expressed or understood.

2dly. Note, That they also join the adjective *óu-tro*, other, to the plural of the pronouns personal, *I* and *thou* ; so they say, *nos* *óutros*, we ; *vos* *óutros*, you.

3dly. *Comfigó* may be rendered in English (as we have said above) by *with him* and *with her* ; but you must observe, that it may be rendered also by *with them* in the plural ; and sometimes by *about him*, *about her* or *about them*. Exam. *Elle* or *êlla*, *nunca* *tráz* *dinhêiro* *comfigo*, he, or she, never has money about him, or about her.

Of conjunctive Pronouns.

The pronouns conjunctive are so called, because they always come immediately before or after the verb that governs them.

The pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal ; the pronouns personal are,

Eu, I ; *tu*, thou ; *êlle*, he ; *nos*, we ; *vos*, ye ; *êlles*, they.

There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. *me*, to me, or me ; *te*, to thee, or thee ; *se*, to himself, or himself, to herself, or herself ; *lhe* to him, or him, to her, or her ; *nos*, to us, or us ; *vos*, to you, or you ; *lhes*, to them, or them.

Example.

Isto *me* *agrada*, this pleases me ; *he-me* *necessário*, I want.

Dêos *te* *ve*, God sees thee.

E'lla *se* *louva*, she praises herself.

E'u lhe diréi, I will tell him, or I will tell her.

E'u lhes promettí, I promised them: as well for the masculine as the feminine.

The pronoun conjunctive, *lhe*, is always put after the verb, when it is in the imperative mood; as *dizéi-lhe*, tell him; *cortái-lhe as ázas*, cut his wings; but when the verb is in some other mood, it may be put either before or after it; as *élle lhe cortóu*, or *élle cortóu-lhe a cabeça*, he has cut off his head. The same observation takes place in the other pronouns conjunctive.

The pronoun conjunctive, *se*, is sometimes followed by *me*, *lhe*, &c. as *offeréce-se me*, it is offered to me; *representóu-se lhe*, it was represented to him, &c.

1st. Note, that the pronouns conjunctive are very often joined to a verb, preceded or followed by the verb *haver*. Examp. *Dar lhe héi tanta pancáda*, or *eu lhe héi de dar tanta pancáda, que*, &c. I will cudgel him so much, that, &c.

2dly, *Lhe* is sometimes rendered in English by *you*. Examp. *Que lhe parece aquillo?* What do you think of that? *affénte no que lhe digo*, be persuaded, or believe what I tell you.

Of Pronouns mixed.

There are some pronouns in Portuguese which are composed of the pronouns personal and conjunctive, and which therefore are called mixed.

To clear up this matter, you must express them as underneath, changing the letter *e* of the pronoun conjunctive into *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine; as to say, *to me of it*, instead of *me o*, or *me a*, you must say, *mo* or *ma*. In the like manner, instead of *lhe o* or *lhe a* you must say, *lho* or *lha*, &c. as you may observe in the following pronouns mixed, or rather contracted.

<i>mo</i> , m.	{ me of it, or it or him to me.	<i>to</i>	{ thee of it or it or him to thee.
<i>ma</i> , f.	{ me of it. or it or her to me.	<i>ta</i>	{ thee of it or it or her to thee.
<i>mos</i> , m.	{ me of them, or	<i>tos</i> , m.	{ thee of them or
<i>mas</i> , f.	{ them to me	<i>tas</i> , f.	{ them to thee.
<i>felo</i> , m.	{ it to himself, to herself, or to themselves.		
<i>fela</i> , f.	{ it to herself, to himself, or to themselves.		
<i>selos</i> , m.	{ them to himself, to herself, or to themselves.		
<i>selas</i> , f.	{ them to herself, to himself, or to themselves.		
<i>lho</i> , m.	{ to him, or to her of it or it to him, or to her.		
<i>lha</i> , f.	{ to him, or to her of it or it to him, or to her.		
<i>lhos</i> , m.	{ to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.		
<i>lhas</i> , f.	{ to them of it, to him of them, or to her of them.		
<i>nolo</i> , m.	{ us of it, or it to us.		
<i>nola</i> , f.	{ us of it, or it to us.		
<i>nolos</i> , m. p.	{ them to us.		
<i>nolas</i> , f. p.	{ them to us.		
<i>volo</i> , m.	{ you of it, or it of you.		
<i>vola</i> , f.	{ you of it, or it of you.		
<i>volos</i> , m. p.	{ you of them, or them to you.		
<i>volas</i> , f. p.	{ you of them, or them to you.		

Here you have some examples.

Pará dar-lho, to give it to him or to her.

Dái-mo, give it me.

E'u to daréi, I'll give it you.

Entrégo to, I deliver it to you.

Díze-lho, you tell it him, or her.

Entréga lhos, deliver them to him, or to her.

Lá sêlo bája, let that to himself.

Elle nolo disse, he told us of it.

Eu volos mandaréi, I'll send them to you.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, the pronouns mixed may be put either before or after the verbs; as, *pará dizérmo*, or *para mo dizér*, to tell me it; but if the verbs are in the gerund, the pronouns mixed

mixed must be transposed; as, *dizéndo*, and not *mo dizéndo*, in telling me it.

You must make use of these pronouns, both masculine and feminine, according to the gender of the thing named, sent or delivered, and not of the person to whom the thing is said, sent, given, &c.

Of possessive Pronouns.

Pronouns possessive, so called, because they denote that the thing spoken of belongs to the person or thing they are connected with, are of two sorts, absolute and relative. See the remarks hereafter.

The English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive; but the Portuguese have, as, *my*, *o meu*, *a minha*, fem. Plur. *os meus*, *as minhas*, fem.

The pronouns possessive in Portuguese are the following:

Sing. *mêu*, m. *minha*, f. } *my*.
Plur. *meus*, m. *minhas*, f. }

Sing. *têu*, m. *tua*, f. } *thy*.
Plur. *têus*, m. *túas*, f. }

Sing. *seu*, m. } *his or its*.
Plur. *seus*, m. }

Sing. *sua*, f. } *her or its*.
Plur. *súas*, f. }

Sing. *nôssô*, m. *nôssa*, f. } *our*.
Plur. *nôssos*, m. *nôssas*, f. }

Sing. *vôssô*, m. *vôssa*, f. } *your*.
Plur. *vôssos*, m. *vôssas*, f. }

The pronouns possessive are declined with the definite article *o* for the masculine, and *a* for the feminine.

Example.

Singular.

Nom. *o meu livro*, my book.

Gen. *do meu livro*, of my book.

Dat. *áo meu livro*, to my book.

Acc. *mêu livro*, my book.

Abl. *do ou pêllo meu livro*, from or by my book.

Plural

Plural.

- Nom. *os meus livros*, my books.
 Gen. *dos meus livros*, of my books.
 Dat. *âos meus livros*, to my books.
 Abl. *dos ou pêllos meus livros*, from or by my books.

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and their feminines by the article *a*; as my house; *a minha casa*; of my house, *da minha casa*, &c.

Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, as well as those of kindred, but the indefinite article *de*, *a*, &c.

Example.

- Vossa magestade*. your majesty.
De vossa magestade, of your majesty, &c.
Mêu pây, my father.
De mêu pây, of my father, &c.

From the above examples it appears that nouns declined by the indefinite article have no article in the nominative.

Though the definite article is sometimes used before nouns of kindred, yet we ought not to use it, according to the old proverb: *tu vivendo bonos, scribendo sequare peritos*.

Seu is sometimes made use of in room of *vósso* and *vósso*, in the polite way of speaking: so they say, *ténho o seu livro*, I have your book: *fallêi ao seu criado*, I spoke to your servant; *os seus olhos são formosos*, your eyes are handsome.

Remarks upon the Possessives.

The pronouns possessive absolute always come before the noun they belong to. We have expressed them above.

Pronouns

Pronouns possessive relative are so called because they, not being joined to their substantive, suppose it either expressed before, or understood, and are related to it. They are the following:

	Masc.	Fem.	
Sing.	<i>Mêu,</i>	<i>minha,</i>	} mine.
Plur.	<i>Mêus,</i>	<i>minhas,</i>	
Sing.	<i>Têu,</i>	<i>tua,</i>	} thine.
Plur.	<i>Têus,</i>	<i>tuas,</i>	
Sing.	<i>Sêu,</i> his,	<i>sua,</i> hers.	
Plur.	<i>Sêus,</i>	<i>suas,</i> theirs.	
Sing.	<i>Nosso,</i>	<i>nossa,</i>	} ours.
Plur.	<i>Nossos,</i>	<i>nossas,</i>	
Sing.	<i>Vosso,</i>	<i>vossa,</i>	} yours.
Plur.	<i>Vossos,</i>	<i>vossas,</i>	

To express in Portuguese *it is mine, it is thine,* &c. we must say *he meu, he teu,* &c.

The pronouns possessive absolute do not agree, in Portuguese, in gender with the noun of the possessor, as in English, but with that of the thing possessed; as, *a mãe ama a seu filho*, the mother loves her son; *o pai ama a sua filha*, the father loves his daughter. So you see that the pronoun masculine *seu*, in Portuguese, is sometimes rendered by *her* in English, and the feminine *sua* by *his*.

The same observation is to be made upon the possessives relative, according to the gender of the noun that is understood; therefore they say of a hat, (for instance) belonging to a lady, *he o seu*, it is hers; because the noun understood, viz. *chapéo*, hat, is of the masculine gender.

We have already said, that *seu* and *sua*, are sometimes rendered into English by *your*, when they are absolute: but you must also observe, that they are sometimes rendered into English by *yours*, when they are pronouns relative, and that in the polite way of speaking; and so they say, speaking of any thing belonging to a gentleman or lady, *he o seu*, or

he a sua, it is yours ; but if the gentleman or lady are not present, or if they do not speak directly to them, though present, then the pronouns *sêu* and *sua* must be rendered into English by *his* or *hers*.

Note, That the pronouns possessive absolute, in Portuguese, agree also in number with the noun of the thing possessed ; hence it is that they say *a sua história*, its history, speaking of a kingdom, province, &c. or, *his history*, speaking of any history composed by a man ; or, *her history*, speaking of that written by a woman ; or, *their history*, speaking of that written by several hands, or of several people. And from this example you may learn, that the Portuguese have no particular pronoun possessive for things that are inanimate, as we have the pronoun *its*. Hence at last it follows, that when the Portuguese possessives *sêu* and *sua* are relative, they are rendered into English by *his*, or *hers*, or *theirs*, according to the gender and number of the noun of the possessor that is understood.

You must also observe, that they sometimes add the third propoun personal, *dêlle*, of him, *dêlles*, of them, *dêlla*, of her, *dêllas*, of them ; to denote more plainly whose thing it is they speak of ; as *o sêu livro dêlles*, their book ; as, *as suas palavras dêlla*, her words, &c.

Note, that the possessives absolute are left out when they are preceded by a verb, or by a pronoun conjunctive, which sufficiently denote whose thing it is they speak of ; the Portuguese being then contented with the article : as *dêvo-lhe a vida*, I owe my life to him, or to it ; *dêe-me a barriga*, my belly aches.

When the pronouns possessive absolute are before nouns of different genders in the same sentence, and with which they are grammatically construed, they ought to be repeated ; as, *sêu pai e sua mãe*, his father and mother : not *sêu pai e mãe*.

Moreover,

Moreover, the Portuguese use the pronoun possessive absolute in the following case, when we use the possessive relative; a friend of mine, *hum dos meus amigos*.

The possessives *minha, tua, sua, nossa, vossa*, may be also relative, but with a different meaning. Examples; *Levaréi a minha avante*, I will insist upon it, I will obtain it; *elle levará a sua avante*, he will insist upon it, he will do it; *levai a vossa avante*, go on with your resolution; *fazer das suas*, to play tricks, to dodge.

Os meus, os seus, &c. signify my relations, or my friends, thy relations, or thy friends; as, *os seus não o querem*, his parents or relations do not like him; *deixa-o hir com os seus*, let him go with his people, his countrymen, &c.

Take notice, that when the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, they do not put the article in the nominative; they do not say *o este meu livro*, but *este meu livro*, this book of mine. But in all other cases they make use of the indefinite article; as *d' este* or *dêste vósso livro*, &c.

Of the Pronouns demonstrative.

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, this book, *este livro*; that man, *aquêlle homem*.

There are three principal demonstratives in Portuguese, viz. *este*, this; *esse*, that; *aquêlle*, that; but observe that *este* shews the thing or person that is just near or by us; *esse* shews the thing that is a little farther, or near the person; and *aquêlle* shews what is very distant from the person who speaks, or is spoken of, and is expressed in English by *that there*, or *yonder*. You must also observe, that *esse, essa*, is used in writing to any person to express the place or town wherein he dwells; as *tênho fallado nêssa cidade*

com muitos amigos, I have spoken in your city with many friends.

These Pronouns are declined thus :

		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	{	Nom. <i>éste,</i>	<i>ésta,</i>	<i>ísto,</i>	this.
	{	Gen. <i>déste,</i>	<i>désta,</i>	<i>dísto,</i>	of this.
	{	Dat. <i>á éste,</i>	<i>á ésta,</i>	<i>á isto,</i>	to this.
	{	Acc. <i>éste,</i>	<i>ésta,</i>	<i>ísto,</i>	this.
	{	Abl. <i>déste,</i>	<i>désta,</i>	<i>díste,</i>	from this.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	{	Nom. <i>éstes,</i>	<i>éstas,</i>		these.
	{	Gen. <i>déstes,</i>	<i>déstas,</i>		of these.
	{	Dat. <i>á éstos,</i>	<i>á éstas,</i>		to these.
	{	Acc. <i>éstes,</i>	<i>éstas,</i>		these.
	{	Abl. <i>déstes,</i>	<i>déstas,</i>		from these
		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	{	Nom. <i>éssé,</i>	<i>éssa,</i>	<i>íссо,</i>	that or it.
	{	Gen. <i>déssé,</i>	<i>déssa,</i>	<i>díссо,</i>	of that &c.
	{	Dat. <i>á esse,</i>	<i>á éssa,</i>	<i>á isso,</i>	to that.
	{	Acc. <i>éssé,</i>	<i>éssa,</i>	<i>isso,</i>	that.
	{	Abl. <i>déssé,</i>	<i>déssa,</i>	<i>díссо,</i>	from that.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	{	Nom. <i>ésses,</i>	<i>éssas,</i>		those.
	{	Gen. <i>désses,</i>	<i>déssas,</i>		of those.
	{	Dat. <i>á ésses,</i>	<i>á éssas,</i>		to those.
	{	Acc. <i>ésses,</i>	<i>éssas,</i>		those.
	{	Abl. <i>désses,</i>	<i>déssas,</i>		from those
		Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Singular.	{	Nom. <i>aquélle,</i>	<i>aquélla,</i>	<i>aquillo,</i>	that.
	{	Gen. <i>daquélle,</i>	<i>daquélla,</i>	<i>daquillo,</i>	of that.
	{	Dat. <i>á aquélle,</i>	<i>á aquélla,</i>	<i>á aquillo,</i>	to that.
	{	Acc. <i>aquélle,</i>	<i>aquélla,</i>	<i>aquillo,</i>	that.
	{	Abl. <i>daquélle,</i>	<i>daquélla,</i>	<i>daquillo,</i>	from that.
				No Neut.	
Plural.	{	Nom. <i>aquéllas,</i>	<i>aquéllas,</i>		those.
	{	Gen. <i>daquéllas,</i>	<i>daquéllas,</i>		of those.
	{	Dat. <i>á aquéllas,</i>	<i>á aquéllas,</i>		to those.
	{	Acc. <i>aquéllas,</i>	<i>aquéllas,</i>		those.
	{	Abl. <i>daquéllas,</i>	<i>daquéllas,</i>		from those

You

You must observe, that there is an elision of the vowel of the indefinite article in the genitive and ablative of the pronouns *éste* and *éste*, both in the singular and plural; and that they write and pronounce *déste*, *désta*, &c. instead of *de éste*, *de ésta*; and so in the neuter they write *dísso*, *dísso*, instead of *de ísso*, *de ísso*. The same observation you must make upon the pronoun *aquélle*, wherein you will see another elision besides, in the dative case.

Note, That both the Portuguese and Spaniards have demonstratives of the neuter gender; though they do not agree with the substantives as in Latin, because they do not say *ísto hómem*, but *éste hómem*, this man. But the word *cóusa*, thing, is always understood, though the neuter demonstrative does not agree with it; so that it is the same thing to say *ísto*, or *ésta cóusa*, this thing; *ísso*, or *éssa cóusa*, that thing, &c. Example, *ísso he* or *éssa he a cóusa de que nos estamos fallando*, that is the thing we are speaking of; *aquillo he* or *aquella he a cóusa que vos devéis fazer*, that is the thing you must do, &c.

When the preposition *em*, in, comes before the pronouns demonstrative, they make an elision of the vowel of it, and change the consonant *m* into *n*; and so, instead of writing and pronouncing *em éste*, *em ésta*, *em ísto*, *em ísso*, *em aquillo*, they write and pronounce, *néste*, *nésta*, *nísso*, *nísso*, &c. in this, in that, &c.

The words *óutro*, *óutra*, are often joined to the pronouns demonstrative, taking off the last *e*; as *estóutro*, *esóutro*, *aquellóutro*. Example; *Estóutro hómem*, this other man; *estóutra mulher*, this other woman; *esóutro hómem*, that other man.

They also join very often the pronoun *mésmo*, the same, to the demonstrative; as *éste mésmo hómem*, this very same man; *aquille mésmo*, that very same thing.

Aquí, *alí*, and *lá*, are sometimes added to the demonstrative, or on the noun that comes after it, in order

der to specify and particularize it still more ; as *éste* *homem aquí*, this man ; *aquella* *molher lá*, that woman : *aquí*, denoting a near, or present object ; and *lá*, a distant and absent one.

The pronouns *aquella*, *aquella*, *aquelles*, *aquellas*, when they relate to persons, and are followed by the relative *que*, are rendered into English by *he who* or *he that* *she who* or *that*, *they who* or *that* ; as *aquella que ama a virtude* *he feliz*, he who loves virtue is happy ; *aquelles que desprezão a ciência não conhecem o valor d'ella*, they who despise learning know not the value of it. You must observe, that when *aquella*, *aquella*, &c. are preceded by *éste*, *ésta*, &c. then *éste* signifies the last thing or person spoken of, and *aquella*, &c. the first ; as *Cárlos foi grande*, *Frederica ambicioso*, *éste valente*, *aquella poderoso*, Charles was great, Frederic ambitious, the first powerful, the last courageous.

The pronoun possessive absolute *his*, *her*, *their*, construed in English with a noun followed by the pronoun relative *who* or *that* before a verb, is made into Portuguese by the genitive of the pronouns *aquella*, *aquella*, *aquelles*, followed by *que*, and the possessive is left out ; as, all men blame his manners who often says that which himself does not think, *tódo o mundo censura o procedimento daquelle que tem por costume dizer o que não tem no pensamento* ; Providence does not prosper their labours that slight their best friends, *a Providência não abencôa o trabalho daquelles que desprezão os seus melhores amigos*.

The English pronoun *such* followed by *as* or *that* (but not governed of the verb substantive *to be*), is also rendered into Portuguese by *aquelles que*, or *aquelles táes que*, or *aquella que* ; as, such as do not love virtue do not know it, *aquelles or aquélie táes que não amão a virtude, não a conhecem*.

The pronouns *isto*, *isto*, *aquillo*, before *que*, are Englished by *what* ; as *elle diz aquillo que sabe*, he says what he knows.

Aquella is also used to shew contempt; as *que quer aquella homem?* what does that man desire?

Of the Pronouns interrogative.

The pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follows; who, what, which, *quem, que, qual.*

Example.

<i>Quem he?</i>	who is it?
<i>Quem vos disse isso?</i>	who told you so?
<i>Que quereis?</i>	what will you have?
<i>Com que se sustenta?</i>	what does he maintain himself with?
<i>Que estais fazendo?</i>	what are you doing?
<i>De que se faz isto?</i>	from what is this done?
<i>Que livro he este?</i>	what book is this?
<i>Que negócios tendes?</i>	what affairs have you?
<i>Que casa he?</i>	what house is it?
<i>De qual fallais vos?</i>	which do you speak of?
<i>Qual delles?</i>	which of them?
<i>Quem or qual dos dous?</i>	which or whether of the two?

These pronouns are thus declined.

Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.		Singular and Plural. Masculine and Feminine.	
Nom. <i>quem,</i>	who.	Nom. <i>que,</i>	what.
Gen. <i>de quem,</i>	of whom.	Gen. <i>de que,</i>	of what.
Dat. <i>á quem,</i>	to whom.	Dat. <i>á que,</i>	to what
Acc. <i>quem,</i>	whom.	Acc. <i>que,</i>	what.
Abl. <i>de quem,</i>	from whom.	Abl. <i>de que,</i>	from what.

Qual is used in speaking both of persons and things, and is declined thus:

Singular. Masculine and Feminine.	
Nom. <i>qual,</i>	which or what.
Gen. <i>de qual,</i>	of which or what.
Dat. <i>á qual,</i>	to which or what.
Acc. <i>qual,</i>	which or what.
Abl. <i>de qual,</i>	from which or what.

Plural. Masculine and Feminine.

Nom.	<i>quâes,</i>	which <i>or</i> what.
Gen.	<i>de quâes,</i>	of which <i>or</i> what.
Dat.	<i>â quâes,</i>	to which <i>or</i> what.
Acc.	<i>quâes,</i>	which <i>or</i> what.
Abl.	<i>de quâes,</i>	from which <i>or</i> what.

Observe, that when the word *quer* is added to *quem*, or *qual*, it quite alters the meaning; *quemquer* signifying whoever, or any person, and *qualquer* any one, whether man, woman, or thing; and sometimes they add the participle *que* to them, as *quemquer que*, &c.

Of the Pronouns relative.

Pronouns relative are those which shew the relation, or reference, which a noun has to what follows it. They are the following; *qual*, which; *que*, that or which; *cújo*, whose; *quem*, who.

Qual, in a sense of comparison, is followed by *tal*, and then *qual* is Englished by *as*, and *tal* by *of*.

N. B. When *qual* is only a relative, it is declined with the definite articles *o* or *a*.

The pronoun *que* may be relative both to persons and things, and is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; as *o livro que*, the book which; *os livros que*, the books which; *a carta que*, the letter which; *as cartas que*, the letters which; *o mestre que ensina*, the master who teacheth; *a mulher que tenho*, the wife that I have; *o homem que eu amo*, the man whom I love; and it is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	<i>que,</i>	which <i>or</i> who.
Gen.	<i>de que,</i>	of which <i>or</i> of whom.
Dat.	<i>â que,</i>	to which <i>or</i> to whom.
Acc.	<i>que,</i>	which <i>or</i> whom.
Abl.	<i>de que,</i>	from which <i>or</i> from whom.

Que

Que is sometimes a conjunction; as *créo que hiréi*, I believe that I shall go. See the Syntax.

The relative *quem*, who, is only relative to persons; but in the nominative case of the singular is rendered into English by *he who*, or *who*; as, *quem falla deve considerár*, &c. he who speaks ought to consider, &c. *eu não sei quem*, I know not who.

Observe, that *quem* is common to all numbers, genders, and cases; but it has no nominative in the plural.

Quem is declined thus:

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	<i>quem</i> ,	he who, or she who, or whoever.
Gen.	<i>de quem</i> ,	of whom.
Dat.	<i>á quem</i> ,	to whom.
Acc.	<i>quem</i> ,	whom.
Abl.	<i>de quem</i> ,	from whom.

Quem is sometimes a particle disjunctive, and then it signifies *some*; as, *quem canta, e quem ri*, some sing, and some laugh; and sometimes it serves to exclamation; as *quem me dera estar em casa!* how fain would I be at home!

Cujo, cuja, is declined thus:

	Masc.	Fem.	
ing. {	Nom. <i>cujo</i> ,	<i>cuja</i> ,	whose.
	Gen. <i>de cujo</i> ,	<i>de cuja</i> ,	of whose.
	Dat. <i>á cujo</i> ,	<i>á cuja</i> ,	to whose.
	Acc. <i>cujo</i> ,	<i>cuja</i> ,	whose.
	Abl. <i>de cujo</i> ,	<i>de cuja</i> ,	from whose.

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, *cujos, cujas*, whose, &c.

Note, that *cujo* must be followed by the noun or term which it refers to, and with which it agrees in gender, number and case; as, *a pessoa cuja reputação vos admirais*, the person whose reputation you wonder at; *o céu cujo socorro nunca falta*, heaven, whose assistance never fails; *cuja bella cara*, whose fair visage; *cujas bellézas*, whose beauties; *a cujo pai*,

páí, to whose father; *de cujos irmãos tenho recebido*, from whose brothers I have received. Observe also that *cújo* is not to be repeated, though the terms which it refers to be of different number; as, *cúja valia e obras*, whose value and deeds.

Note, that *o, a, os, as, lo, la, &c.* are also pronouns relative, when joined to verbs. See the syntax, chap. iv.

Of the improper Pronouns.

These pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, but have a great resemblance with pronouns, as well as with adjectives. They are the following:

<i>Hum,</i>	one.
<i>Alguem,</i>	somebody.
<i>Algum,</i>	some.
<i>Ninguém,</i>	nobody.
<i>Nenhúm,</i>	none.
<i>Cadahúm,</i>	every one, each.
<i>Cáda,</i>	every.
<i>Oútro, outra,</i>	other.
<i>Oútre,</i>	another.

Qualquer, any one; whether man, or woman, or thing.

Qualquer dos dous, either of the two, or whosoever of the two.

Quemquer, whoever, or any person.

Todo, all, or every. *Tal*, such, &c.

Hum has two terminations, viz. *hum, húma*; and in the plural it makes *buns*, and *búmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Alguem has only one termination, and it is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article.

Algum has two terminations, viz. *algum, algúma*; and in the plural, *alguns, algúmas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article.

Ninguém has only one termination, and is only declinable in the singular with the indefinite article: *ninguem o cré*, nobody believes it.

Nenhúm

Nenbúm has two terminations, viz. *nenbúm*, *nenbúma*, and in the plural *nenbúns*, *nenbúmas*; and is only declinable with the indefinite article: *nenbúm hómem*, no man; *de nenbúm effeito*, of no effect.

Cadabúm has two terminations, viz. *cadabúm*, *cadabúma*; but it has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article.

Cáda has but one termination. It has no plural, and is only declinable with the indefinite article: *cáda dia*, every day; *cáda mez*, every month.

Oútro has two terminations, viz. *oútro*, *oútra*; and in the plural, *oútros*, *oútras*. It is declinable both with the definite and indefinite articles.

*Oútre*m has only one termination. It has no plural, and takes the indefinite article.

Qualquer has but one termination. It makes *quaesquer* in the plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. *Qualquer* is said both of persons and things.

Quemquer has but one termination. It has no plural, and is declined with the indefinite article. It is rendered in English by *any body*: *quemquer vos dirá*, any body will tell you. *Quemquer* is used in speaking of a person.

Todo has two terminations, viz. *tódo*, *tóda*; and in the plural, *tódos*, *tódas*. It is declinable with the indefinite article. It is sometimes taken substantively, and then it signifies *the whole*; as, *o tódo he mayor que a sua parte*, the whole is bigger than its part.

Tal has only one termination. It makes *táes* in the plural, and it is declined with the indefinite article. It is common to the masculine and to the feminine genders; and sometimes it is joined to *qual*; as, *tal qual elle he*, such as it is.

Tal supplies sometimes the place of the person whose name is not specified; as, *hum tal velhaco deve ser castigado*, such a rogue ought to be punished.

C H A P. IV.

O F V E R B S.

THE verb is a part of speech which serves to express that which is attributed to the subject in denoting the *being* or *condition* of the things and persons spoken of, the *actions* which they do, or the *impressions* they receive.

The first and the most general division of Verbs is into personal and impersonal.

A verb personal is conjugated by three persons.

Example.

Sing.	{	<i>eu amo,</i>	I love.
		<i>tu amas,</i>	thou lovest.
		<i>elle ama,</i>	he loves.
Plur.	{	<i>nos amamos,</i>	we love.
		<i>vos amais,</i>	ye love.
		<i>elles amão,</i>	they love.

A verb impersonal is conjugated by the third person of the singular number only ; as, *chóve*, it rains, *convém*, it behoves.

A verb, considered in regard to the syntax, is of four sorts, viz. active, passive, neuter, and reciprocal.

Some of the verbs are regular, and others irregular.

Some are also called auxiliary verbs. We shall give their definitions in their proper places.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be conju-

conjugated with the pronouns personal, *eu, tu, elle,* &c. or without them.

Of the auxiliary Verbs.

The auxiliary verbs are so called, because they help to the conjugation of other verbs. They are four in Portuguese, viz. *havér, ter, to have; ser, estar, to be.* The auxiliary verb *ser, to be,* is also called the verb substantive, because it affirms what the subject is, and is always followed by a noun that particularizes what that subject is; as *ser rico, prudente, douto, &c. to be rich, wise, learned, &c.*

The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb ter, or havér, to have.

The Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tenho, ou hey,</i>	I have.
		<i>tu tens; ou has,</i>	thou hast.
		<i>elle têm, ou há,</i>	he has or hath.
Plur.	{	<i>nos temos, ou havêmos, ou hêmos,</i>	we have.
		<i>vos tendes, ou havéis, ou hêis,</i>	you have.
		<i>elles tem, ou hão.</i>	they have.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tinha, ou havia, ou hía,</i>	I had.
		<i>tu tinhas, ou havías, ou hías,</i>	thou hadst.
		<i>elle tinha, ou havia, ou hía,</i>	he had.
Plur.	{	<i>nos tínhamos, ou havíamos, ou híamos,</i>	we had.
		<i>vos tínheis, ou havíeis, ou híeis,</i>	you had.
		<i>elles tínhão, ou havíão, ou híão,</i>	they had.

Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tive, ou houve,</i>	I had.
		<i>tu tiveste, ou houveste,</i>	thou hadst.
		<i>elle teve, ou houve,</i>	he had.
Plur.	{	<i>nos tivêmos, ou houverêmos,</i>	we had.
		<i>vos tivêstes, ou houverêstes,</i>	you had.
		<i>elles tivêrão ou houverão,</i>	they had.

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu ténho tido,</i>	I have had.
		<i>tu téns tido,</i>	thou hast had.
		<i>élle têm tido,</i>	he has had.
Plur.	{	<i>nos témos tido,</i>	we have had.
		<i>vos téndes tido,</i>	you have had.
		<i>élles tem tido,</i>	they have had.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu tinha tido,</i>	I had had.
		<i>tu tinhas tido,</i>	thou had had.
		<i>élle tinha tido,</i>	he had had.
Plur.	{	<i>nos tínhamos tido,</i>	we had had.
		<i>vos tínhieis tido,</i>	you had had.
		<i>élles tinham tido,</i>	they had had.

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *tivéra, tivéras, tivéra, tivéramos, tivéreis, tivérão.*

First Future.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teréi, ou haveréi,</i>	I shall or will have.
		<i>tu terás, ou haverás,</i>	thou shalt or wilt have.
		<i>élle terá, ou haverá,</i>	he shall or will have.
Plur.	{	<i>nos terémos, ou haverémos,</i>	we shall or will have,
		<i>vos teréis, ou haveréis,</i>	ye shall or will have.
		<i>élles terão, ou haverão,</i>	they shall or will have.

Second Future.

Sing. *eu hei de ter, ou haver, &c.* I must have, &c.

Third Future.

Sing. *eu haveréi de ter, ou haver, &c.* I shall be obliged to have, &c.

Fourth Future.

Sing. *eu havia de ter, ou haver, &c.* I was to have, &c.

Imperative.

Sing.	{	<i>tem tu, ou hájas tu,</i>	have thou.
		<i>ténha élle, ou hája élle,</i>	let him have.
Plur.	{	<i>tenhamos, ou hajamos nos,</i>	let us have.
		<i>ténde, ou havêi, vos,</i>	have ye.
		<i>ténhão, ou hajão elles,</i>	let them have.

The

The imperative has no first person, because it is impossible to command one's self.

Optative and Subjunctive.

I join them together, because their tenses are similar.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha, ou hájas,</i>	that I have, or that I may have.
		<i>que tu tenha, ou hájas,</i>	
		<i>que elle tenha, ou hája,</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>que nos tenhamos, ou hajamos,</i>	we have, or may have.
		<i>que vos tenhamos, ou hajais,</i>	
		<i>que elles tenhamos, ou hajão,</i>	

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tivéra or tivésse,</i>	that I had, or I should, would, &c. have, &c.
		<i>houvéra or houvésse,</i>	
		<i>que tu tivéras or tivésse,</i>	
		<i>houvéras or houvesses,</i>	
		<i>que elle tivera or tivésse,</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>houvéra or houvésse,</i>	that we had, or we should, would, &c. have, &c.
		<i>que nós tivéramos or tivéssemos,</i>	
		<i>houvéramos or houvéssemos</i>	
		<i>que vos tivéreis or tivésseis,</i>	
		<i>houvéreis or houvésseis,</i>	
	{	<i>que elle tivérão or tivéssem,</i>	
		<i>houvérão or houvéssem,</i>	

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teria ou haveria,</i>	I should, would, or could have, &c.
		<i>tu terias ou haverias,</i>	
		<i>elle teria ou haveria,</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>nos teríamos ou haveríamos,</i>	we should, would, or could have, &c.
		<i>vos teríeis ou haveríeis,</i>	
		<i>elles terião ou haverião,</i>	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha tido ou havido,</i>	that I have had.
		<i>que tu tenha tido ou havido,</i>	
		<i>que elle tenha tido ou havido,</i>	
Plur.	{	<i>que nos tenhamos tido ou havido,</i>	we have had.
		<i>que vos tenhamos tido ou havido,</i>	
		<i>que elles tenhamos tido ou havido,</i>	

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	{ se eu tivéra ou tivésse se tu tivéras ou tivésses se elle tivéra ou tivésse	} tido,	{ if I had had, &c.
Plur.	{ se nos tivéramos ou tivéssemos se vos tivéreis ou tivésseis se elles tivérão ou tivésssem		

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

Sing.	{ eu tería tu terías elle tería	} tido,	{ I should have had, &c.
Plur.	{ nos teríamos vos teríeis elles terião		

First Future.

Sing.	{ se eu tivér, tu tivéres, elle tivér,	if I shall have. thou shalt have. he shall have.
Plur.	{ se nos tivérmos, vos tivérdes, elles tivérem,	if we shall have. you shall have. they shall have.

This tense may be conjugated also thus: *bouvér, bouvéres, bouvér; bouvérmos, bouvérdes, bouvérem*. See the synt. of the auxiliary Verbs.

Second Future.

It is composed of the First Future and the Participle.

Sing.	{ se eu tivér tivéres tivér tivérmos tivérdes tivérem	} tido,	{ if I shall have had, &c.
Plur.	{ se eu tivér tivéres tivér tivérmos tivérdes tivérem		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

ter, to have.

Preter-

Preterperfect.

ter tido, to have had.

Participles.

Preterit. Sing. *tido*, *tida*. Plur. *tidos*, *tidas*, had.

Future.

que ha de ter, that is to have.

Gerunds.

tén-do, having or in having. *tén-do*, *tido*, having had.

Supine.

It is supplied in Portuguese by the prepositions *a* or *para*, and the verb in the infinitive ; as,

para ter, to have.

In like manner are conjugated its compounds *conténbo*, *deténbo*, *manténbo*, &c.

Remarks upon the auxiliary verb, *ter*, to have.

The verb *ter*, to have, is an auxiliary or helping verb, which serves to conjugate other verbs : example, *ter lido*, to have read ; *nos temos feito*, we have done ; *elles tem visto*, they have seen, &c.

When the verb *ter* is followed by the participle *que*, before an infinitive mood, it denotes the duty, inclination, &c. of doing any thing ; as, *que téndes que fazer* ? what have you to do ? *ténbo que fazer húma visita*, I must pay a visit ; *elle tem muito que dizer-vos*, he has a great many things to tell you.

Of the auxiliary verb *haver*.

This is one of the most useful verbs in Portuguese, since it is not only auxiliary to itself, as *eu hei de haver*, I must have ; *eu havia de haver*, I was to have, &c. but also to all sorts of verbs ; as *eu hei de cantar*, I will sing, or I must sing, or I am to sing ; *eu hei de ir*, I must go ; *eu havia de fallar*, I was to speak ; *eu hei de escrever*, I must write, &c. In which examples you may see that the verb *haver*, when auxiliary, has generally the particle *de* and the verb of the infinitive mood after it ; and

E

that

that then it denotes a firm resolution, possibility, or necessity of doing any thing, therefore it is not to be rendered into English by the verb *to have*; as you may see by the second, third, and fourth future of the indicative mood.

The verb *haver*, with the particle *de*, and the verb *ser*, to be, after it, is an auxiliary both to the passive verbs, and sometimes to the verb *ser* itself; as, *béi de ser feliz*, I shall be happy: *O príncipe ha de ser respeitádo*, the prince ought to be, or must be, respected.

The same verb *haver* is also auxiliary without the particle *de*; but then it is put after the verb to which it is auxiliary; and so they say, *dárvos béi*, I will give you; *dárlhe-béi*, I will give to him, &c. In which examples you may observe, that the auxiliary verb *haver* is put after the verb and the pronouns conjunctive, *te*, *lhe*, &c. and sometimes it is put after the verbs and the pronoun mixed; as, *mandár volo béi*, I'll send it to you. Take notice, however, that in the foregoing examples the verb *haver* may be put before the other verb; but then it requires the particle *de*, and has a different meaning; as, in the first example, you may say, *béi de dárvos*, I must give to you. You must also observe, that when the indicative present of the auxiliary verb *haver* is auxiliary to other verbs, as in the foregoing examples, you must cut off the last letters *ei* from the future of the verbs; and so you may say *dárlhe-béi*, or *béi de dar lhe*; but not *darêi lhe-béi*, nor *béi de darêi lhe*. Moreover, when the preterimperfect *havia* is to be auxiliary to any verb, and it is to be placed after it, you must make use of *hía*, *hías*, *hía*, *híamos*, *híeis*, *híao*; and so you may say, *dar-lhe hía*, *hías*, &c. but not *dar lhe havia*, *hávias*, &c. I should give to him, thou shouldst, &c.

We shall not be at a loss how to express the interrogation in Portuguese, if we do but put the pronouns personal after the verbs, as in English, and
we

we shall never mistake in saying *terei eu?* shall I have? *temos nos?* have we? *tens tu?* hast thou? *tem elle?* has he? but sometimes they do not mention the pronouns at all; as, *que faremos?* what shall we do; *cantaremos?* shall we sing?

Observe, that *haver* is sometimes Englished by *to be*; as, *que ha de ser de mim?* what is to become of me?

When we speak by negation, we must use the word *não* before the verb; as, *não tenho*, I have not; *vos não conheceis*, you do not know, &c.

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *ser*, or *estar*, to be.

Indicative.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>eu sou</i> or <i>estou</i> ,	I am.
		<i>tu es</i> or <i>estás</i> ,	thou art.
		<i>elle he</i> or <i>está</i> ,	he is.
Plur.	{	<i>nos somos</i> or <i>estamos</i> ,	we are.
		<i>vos sois</i> or <i>estais</i> ,	you are.
		<i>elles são</i> or <i>estão</i> ,	they are.

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu era</i> or <i>estava</i> ,	I was.
		<i>eras</i> or <i>estavas</i> ,	thou wast.
		<i>era</i> or <i>estava</i> ,	he was.
Plur.	{	<i>nos éramos</i> or <i>estávamos</i> ,	we were.
		<i>éreis</i> or <i>estáveis</i> ,	you were.
		<i>erão</i> or <i>estávão</i> ,	they were.

Preterperfect definite.

Sing.	{	<i>eu fui</i> or <i>estive</i> ,	I was.
		<i>foste</i> or <i>estiveste</i> ,	thou wast.
		<i>foi</i> or <i>estive</i> ,	he was.
Plur.	{	<i>fomos</i> or <i>estivemos</i> ,	we were.
		<i>fôstes</i> or <i>estivêstes</i> ,	you were.
		<i>fôrao</i> or <i>estivêrao</i> ,	they were.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present Indicative of the auxiliary verb *ter*, to have, and its own participle, *sido*, or *estado*.

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the preterimperfect indicative, and the participle *sido*, or *estado*,

Sing.	{	<i>eu tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	I had been.
		<i>tinhas sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	thou hadst been,
		<i>tinha sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	he had been.
Plur.	{	<i>tinhâmos sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	we had been.
		<i>tínheis sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	you had been.
		<i>tinhão sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	they had been.

This tense may also be conjugated thus; *fôra*, or *estivera*; *fôras*, or *estiveras*; *fôra*, or *estivera*; *fôramos*, or *estivêramos*; *fôreis*, or *estivêreis*; *fôrão*, or *estivêrão*.

Future.

Sing.	{	<i>eu serêi</i> or <i>estarei</i> ,	I shall or will be.
		<i>serás</i> or <i>estarás</i> ,	thou shalt be.
		<i>será</i> or <i>estará</i> ,	he shall be.
Plur.	{	<i>serêmos</i> , or <i>estaremos</i> ,	we shall be.
		<i>serêis</i> or <i>estareis</i> ,	you shall be.
		<i>serão</i> or <i>estaráo</i> ,	they shall be.

Imperative.

Sing.	{	<i>se tu</i> or <i>está</i> ,	be thou.
		<i>seja</i> or <i>estéja</i> elle,	let him be.
		<i>sejâmos</i> or <i>estejâmos</i> nos,	let us be.
Plur.	{	<i>se de</i> or <i>estai</i> vos,	be you.
		<i>sejão</i> or <i>estêjão</i> êlles,	let them be.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu seja</i> or <i>estéja</i> ,	that I may be, or that I be.
		<i>sejas</i> or <i>estéjas</i> ,	thou mayst be or be.
		<i>seja</i> or <i>estéja</i> ,	he may be, &c.

Plur.

Plur.	{	<i>sejámos</i> or <i>estejámos</i> ,	we may be.
		<i>sejâis</i> or <i>estejâis</i> ,	you may be.
		<i>sejão</i> or <i>estêjão</i> ,	they may be.

First Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu fôra</i> or <i>fôsse</i> ,	that I were or might be.
		<i>estivêra</i> or <i>estivêsse</i> ,	
		<i>fôras</i> or <i>fôsses</i> ,	thou wert.
	{	<i>estivêras</i> or <i>estivêsses</i> ,	he were.
		<i>fôra</i> or <i>fôsse</i> ,	
		<i>estivêra</i> or <i>estivêsse</i> ,	

Plur.	{	<i>que nos fôramos</i> or <i>fôssemos</i> ,	that we were.
		<i>estivêramos</i> or <i>estivêssemos</i> ,	
		<i>fôreis</i> or <i>fôsseis</i> ,	you were.
	{	<i>estivêreis</i> or <i>estivêsseis</i> ,	they were.
		<i>fôrão</i> or <i>fôssem</i> ,	
		<i>estivêrão</i> or <i>estivêssem</i> ,	

Second Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>eu seria</i> or <i>estaria</i> ,	I should or would be.
		<i>serias</i> or <i>estarias</i> ,	thou shouldest be.
		<i>seria</i> or <i>estaria</i> ,	he should be.
Plur.	{	<i>seríamos</i> or <i>estariamos</i> ,	we should be.
		<i>seríeis</i> or <i>estariéis</i> ,	you should be.
		<i>serião</i> or <i>estarião</i> ,	they should be.

Preterperfect.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*, and its own participle *sido*, or *estado*.

Sing.	{	<i>que eu tenha sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	that I have been.
		<i>têhas sido</i> or <i>estado</i> ,	thou hast been.
		<i>têha sido</i> , &c.	he has been.
Plur.	{	<i>tenhâmos sido</i> , &c.	that we have been.
		<i>tenhâis sido</i> , &c.	you have been.
		<i>tênhão sido</i> , &c.	they have been.

Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *ter*, and its own participle.

Sing.	{	<i>se eu tivéra or tivésse</i>	}	if I had been.
		<i>sido or estado</i>		
		<i>tivéras, &c.</i>		thou hadst been.
		<i>tivéra, &c.</i>		he had been.
Plur.	{	<i>tivéramos, &c.</i>		we had been.
		<i>tivéreis, &c.</i>		you had been.
		<i>tivérão, &c.</i>		they had been.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *ter*, and its own participle *sido* or *estado*.

Sing.	{	<i>eu teria sido or estado</i>		I should or would have been.
		<i>terias, &c.</i>		thou shouldst have been.
		<i>teria, &c.</i>		he should have been.
Plur.	{	<i>teríamos, &c.</i>		we should have been.
		<i>teríeis, &c.</i>		you should have been.
		<i>terião, &c.</i>		they should have been.

First Future.

Sing.	{	<i>quando eu for or estiver,</i>		when I shall be.
		<i>fôres or estiveres,</i>		thou shalt be.
		<i>for or estiver,</i>		he shall be.
Plur.	{	<i>fôrmos or estivermos,</i>		we shall be.
		<i>fôrdes or estiverdes,</i>		you shall be.
		<i>fôrem or estiverem,</i>		they shall be.

Second Future.

It is compounded of the future subjunctive of the verb *ter*, and its own participle.

Sing.	{	<i>quando eu tiver sido or estado,</i>		when I shall have been.
		<i>tiveres sido, &c.</i>		thou shalt have been.
		<i>tiver sido, &c.</i>		he shall have been.
Plur.	{	<i>tivermos sido, &c.</i>		we shall have been.
		<i>tiverdes sido, &c.</i>		you shall have been.
		<i>tiverem sido, &c.</i>		they shall have been.

Infinitive.

Present.

ser or estar ; to be.

Preterperfect.

ter sido or estado, to have been.

Parti-

Participles.

Pret.

sido or *estado*, been.

Future.

futuro, or *que ha de ser*, or *estar*, future, or that is to be.

Gerunds.

sendo or *estado*, being.
tendo sido or *estado*, having been.

Supine.

para ser or *estar*, to be.

Remarks upon the verb *ser* and *estar*.

There is a considerable difference between these verbs, *ser* and *estar*, both in Portuguese and Spanish. In English there is no word to distinguish them, since they are both rendered into English by *to be*. *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable essence of a thing, its quality or quantity; *ser homem*, to be a man; *ser bom*, to be good; *ser alto*, to be tall; *ser largo*, to be wide; *ser branco*, to be white, &c. But *estar* denotes a place, or any adventitious quality; as, *estar em Londres*, to be in London; *estar de saude*, to be in health; *estar frio*, to be cold; *estar quente*, to be warm; *estar doente*, to be sick; *estar enfadado*, to be angry; *estar allegre*, to be merry, &c.

Take notice, that you may use *estar* before the gerunds, but not *ser*; therefore you may say, *estou fallando*, *lendo*, &c. I am speaking, reading, &c. but not *sou fallando*, &c.

The three Conjugations of regular Active Verbs.

A regular verb is such as is confined to general rules in its conjugation.

A verb active denotes the action or impression of the subject, and governs a noun which is the object of that action or impression; as, *amár a virtúde*, to love virtue; *receber cartas*, to receive letters.

The regular Portuguese verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive; to wit, in *ar*, *er*, *ir*; as, *amár*, to love; *temer*, to fear; *admittir*, to admit.

An easy Method of learning to conjugate the Portuguese Verbs.

I have reduced all the tenses of the Portuguese verbs to eight; four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs; and the other four may be likewise made general by changing some letters, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are, the future indicative, the first and second preter imperfect subjunctive, and the first future subjunctive.

The future indicative is terminated in all the verbs, in

rei, ras, rá; rémos, réis, ráo.

The imperfect subjunctive, in

ra or sse, ras or sses, ra or sse; rámos or ssemos, réis or sséis, raõ or ssem.

The second imperfect, in

ría, rías, ría; ríamos, rieis, ríaõ.

The first future subjunctive, in

es, mos, des, em.

Note, that I have only put the termination of the second person singular of the future subjunctive, because the first and third of the same number are like their respective infinitives of the three conjugations, which however keep both their last consonant and

and vowel before the terminations I have marked for the second person singular, and for the whole plural. As to the future indicative, you have nothing to do but add *ei* to the respective present infinitive of the three conjugations, in order to form the first person singular; and if you add to the same infinitive present *as*, you will form the second person singular of it, and so of all the rest, by adding to the infinitive present, *a*, *emos*, *eis*, *ão*.

The imperfect subjunctive has two terminations for every person, both in the singular and plural; but if you cut off the last consonant *r* of the infinitive, and then add to it the terminations above-mentioned, you shall form the imperfect subjunctive, according to its two different terminations. Lastly, if you cut off the last consonant of the infinitive, and add to it the terminations above mentioned, you will form the second imperfect subjunctive.

The present indicative of the three conjugations is formed by changing the last letters of the infinitive, viz. *ar*, *er*, *ir*, into *o*; as, *ámo*, *entendo*, *admitto*, from *amár*, *entendér*, *admittir*.

The preterimperfect indicative is formed in the first conjugation, by changing the last consonant of the infinitive, viz. *r*, into *va*, *vas*, *va*, *vámos*, *vêis*, *vão*; but in the second conjugation it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *ía*, *ías*, *ía*, *íamos*, *íeis*, *ião*; and in the third by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into, *a*, *as*, *a*; *ámos*, *éis*, *ão*.

The perfect definite in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *ei*, *áste*, *ou*, *ámos*, *ástes*, *árão*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *i*, *éste*, *éo*, *émos*, *éstes*, *érão*. In the third conjugation, the same tense

is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into *i*, *iste*, *io*, *imos*, *istes*, *irão*.

The present subjunctive in the first conjugation is formed by changing the termination *ar* of the infinitive into *e*, *es*, *e*, *émos*, *éis*, *em*; and in the second conjugation, it is formed by changing the termination *er* of the infinitive into *a*, *as*, *a*, *ámos*, *áis*, *ão*. In the third conjugation, the same tense is formed by changing the termination *ir* of the infinitive into the same terminations, *a*, *as*, *a*, &c.

As to the imperative mood, you may only observe, that the second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, in all the conjugations.

The participles of the preterperfect tense in the first conjugation are formed by changing the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, and *da* for the feminine; and into *dos*, *das*, for the plural; but when you come to verbs of the second conjugation, you change the termination *r* of the infinitive into *ido*, *ida*, &c.

In the third conjugation, you must change the last consonant *r* of the infinitive into *do* for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, &c.

The first Conjugation of the verbs in ar.

The Indicative Mood.

I shall put the pronouns personal, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, &c. no more.

Present.

<i>amo</i> ,	I love.
<i>amas</i> ,	thou lovest.
<i>ama</i> ,	he loves.
<i>amamos</i> ,	we love.
<i>amais</i> ,	ye love
<i>amão</i> ,	they love.

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

<i>amava,</i>	I did love.
<i>amavas,</i>	thou didst love.
<i>amava,</i>	he did love.
<i>amávamos,</i>	we did love.
<i>amáveis,</i>	you did love.
<i>amávão,</i>	they did love.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>améi,</i>	I loved.
<i>amáste,</i>	thou lovedst.
<i>amou,</i>	he loved.
<i>amámos,</i>	we loved.
<i>amástes,</i>	you loved.
<i>amárão,</i>	they loved.

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *amado*, and the present indicative auxiliary verb *ter*.

<i>tenho amado,</i>	I have loved.
<i>tens amado,</i>	thou hast loved.
<i>tem amado,</i>	he has loved.
<i>têmos amado,</i>	we have loved.
<i>têndes amado,</i>	you have loved.
<i>tem amado,</i>	they have loved.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the particle *amado*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

N. B. This tense may be conjugated thus, *amara*, *amaras*, *amara*, *amáramos*, *amáreis*, *amárão*; or,

<i>tinha amado,</i>	I had loved.
<i>tinhas amado,</i>	thou hadst loved.
<i>tinha amado,</i>	he had loved.
<i>tínhamos amado,</i>	we had loved.
<i>tínheis amado,</i>	you had loved.
<i>tinhão amado,</i>	they had loved.

Future.

<i>amaréi,</i>	I shall or will love.
<i>amarás,</i>	thou shalt love.
<i>amará,</i>	he shall love.

ama-

<i>amarémos,</i>	we shall love.
<i>amaréis,</i>	you shall love.
<i>amarão,</i>	they shall love.

Imperative.

<i>ama tu,</i>	love thou,
<i>ame elle,</i>	let him love.
<i>amémos nós,</i>	let us love.
<i>amáí vós,</i>	love you.
<i>ámem elles,</i>	let them love.

Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>que eu áme,</i>	that I may love.
<i>ámes,</i>	thou mayest love.
<i>áme,</i>	he may love.
<i>amémos,</i>	we may love.
<i>améis,</i>	you may love.
<i>ámem,</i>	they may love.

First Preterimperfect.

<i>que eu amára or amásse,</i>	that I might or could love.
<i>amáras, or amásse,</i>	they mightest love.
<i>amára, or amásse,</i>	he might love.
<i>amáramos, or amássemos,</i>	we might love.
<i>amáreis or amásseis,</i>	you might love.
<i>amirão or amássem,</i>	they might love.

When we find the conjunction *if* before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative, when we speak by way of wish or desire; as, If I did love, *se eu amásse*, or *amára*, and not *se eu amáva*, if I had loved; if I had, *se eu tivéra, tivésse*, and not *se eu tinha*; and so in all the verbs.

Second Preterimperfect.

<i>amaría,</i>	I should love.
<i>amarías,</i>	thou shouldst love.
<i>amaría,</i>	he should love.
<i>amaríamos,</i>	we should love.
<i>amaríeis,</i>	you should love.
<i>amaríão,</i>	they should love.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

<i>que eu tenha amado,</i>	that I have loved.
<i>tenhas amado,</i>	thou hast loved.
<i>tenha amado,</i>	he has loved.
<i>tenhamos amado,</i>	we have loved.
<i>tenhais amado,</i>	you have loved.
<i>tenham amado,</i>	they have loved.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

<i>se eu tivêra or tivêsse amado,</i>	if I had loved.
<i>tivêras or tivêsses amado,</i>	thou hadst loved.
<i>tivêra or tivêsse amado,</i>	he had loved.
<i>tivêramos or tivêsseamos amado,</i>	we had loved.
<i>tivêreis or tivêsseis amado,</i>	you had loved.
<i>tivêrão or tivêsssem amado,</i>	they had loved.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *amado* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

<i>teria amado,</i>	I should have loved.
<i>terias amado,</i>	thou shouldst have loved.
<i>teria amado,</i>	he should have loved.
<i>teríamos amado,</i>	we should have loved.
<i>teríeis amado,</i>	ye should have loved.
<i>terião amado,</i>	they should have loved.

Future.

<i>quando eu amar,</i>	when I shall love.
<i>amâres,</i>	thou shalt love.
<i>amar,</i>	he shall love.
<i>amârmos,</i>	we shall love.
<i>amárdes,</i>	you shall love.
<i>amárem,</i>	they shall love.

Second

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *amado*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

<i>quando eu tiver amado,</i>	when I shall have loved.
<i>tiveres amado,</i>	thou shalt have loved.
<i>tiver amado,</i>	he shall have loved.
<i>tivermos amado,</i>	we shall have loved.
<i>tiverdes amado,</i>	you shall have loved.
<i>tiverem amado,</i>	they shall have loved.

Infinitive.

Present.

amar, to love.

Preterperfect.

ter amado, to have loved.

Participle.

Present.

que ama, or amante, that loves.

Pret.

amado, masc. amado, fem. loved.

Future.

que ha de amar, that is to love.

Gerunds.

amando, loving.
tendo amado, having loved.

Supine.

para amar, to love.

Note, the verbs terminating in the infinitive in *câr* take *qu* in those tenses, where the *c* would otherwise meet with the vowel *e*; and those terminating in the infinitive in *gar* take an *u* in those tenses, where the *g* would otherwise meet with the same vowel *e*; that is to say, in the first person singular of the preterperfect definite, in the third person singular,

singular, in the first and third plural of the imperative, and in the whole present subjunctive, which are the tenses I shall give you by way of example in the verbs *peccár* and *pagár*.

Peccár, to sin.

Preterperfect definite.

éu pequéi, I sinned—instead of *peccéi*.

Imperative.

péque elle, let him sin: *pequemos nos*, let us sin; *péquem elles*, let them sin—and not *pécce elle*, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que eu péque, *tu péques*, that I may sin—and not *que eu pécce*, *pécces*, &c.

Pagár, to pay.

Preterperfect definite.

paguéi, I paid.

Imperative.

pague elle, *paguemos nos*, *paguem elles*, let him pay, &c.

Present subjunctive.

que eu pague, *pagues*, *pague*, *paguemos*, *paguéis*, *paguem*, that I may pay, &c.—and not *page*, *pages*, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like *amar*.

Regular verbs in *ar*.

Abafár, to choke, or to smother.

Abalár, to shake.

Abanár, to fan.

Abastár, to satiate.

Abaxár, to bring or let down.

Abençoár, to bless.

Abocanhár, to carp.

Abominár, to abominate.

Abotoár, to button.

Acabár, to finish.

Admoestár, to admonish.

Affrontár, to abuse.

Agarrár, to lay hold of.

Alagár, to overflow.

Amaldiçoár, to curse.

Annulár, to annul, or to make void.

Apresár, to press, or hasten.

Aquentár, to warm.

Argumentár, to argue.

Asoprár, to blow.

Atár, to tie.

Avassalár, to subdue, to conquer.

Azedár, to sour.

Of the Verbs Passive.

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know that the Verbs passive, which express the suffering of an action, are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb *ser*, to be.

EXAMPLE.

Present tense.

<i>eu sou amado,</i>	I am loved.
<i>tu es amado,</i>	thou art loved.
<i>êle he amado,</i>	he is loved.
<i>nos somos amados,</i>	we are loved.
<i>vos sois amados,</i>	you are loved.
<i>elles são amados,</i>	they are loved.

and so throughout the other moods and tenses.

The second conjugation of the verbs in *er*.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

<i>vendo,</i>	I sell.
<i>vendes,</i>	thou sellest.
<i>vende,</i>	he sells.
<i>vendemos,</i>	we sell.
<i>vendeis,</i>	you sell.
<i>vendem,</i>	they sell.

Preterimperfect.

<i>vendia,</i>	I did sell.
<i>vendias,</i>	thou didst sell.
<i>vendia,</i>	he did sell.
<i>vendíamos,</i>	we did sell.
<i>vendíeis,</i>	you did sell.
<i>vendião,</i>	they did sell.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>vendi,</i>	I sold.
<i>vendêste,</i>	thou soldest.
<i>vendêo,</i>	he sold.

<i>vendémos,</i>	we sold.
<i>vendéstes,</i>	you sold.
<i>vendêrão,</i>	they sold.

Preterperfect.

<i>ténho</i>	{	<i>vendído,</i>	{	I have sold, &c.
<i>téns</i>				
<i>tém</i>				
<i>témos</i>				
<i>téendes</i>				
<i>tém</i>				

Preterpluperfect.

<i>tinha</i>	{	<i>vendído,</i>	{	I had sold, &c.
<i>tinhas</i>				
<i>tinha</i>				
<i>tínhamos</i>				
<i>tínheis</i>				
<i>tinhão</i>				

This tense may also be conjugated thus ; *vendêra, vendêras, vendêra, vendêramos, vendêreis, vendêrão.*

Future.

<i>venderêi,</i>	{	I shall or will sell, &c.
<i>venderás,</i>		
<i>venderá,</i>		
<i>venderémos,</i>		
<i>venderêis,</i>		
<i>venderão,</i>		

Imperative Mood.

<i>vênde tu,</i>	sell thou
<i>vênda êlle,</i>	let him sell.
<i>vendúmos nos,</i>	let us sell.
<i>vendêr vos,</i>	sell ye.
<i>vêndão êlles,</i>	let them sell.

Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>que eu vênda,</i>	{	that I may sell, &c.
<i>vêndas,</i>		
<i>vênda,</i>		
<i>vêndámos,</i>		
<i>vêndáis,</i>		
<i>vêndão,</i>		

Preterimperfect.

que eu vendêra or vendêsse, that I might or could sell,
vendêras or vendêsses, &c.
vendêra or vendêsse,
vendêramos or vendêssemos,
vendêreis or vendêsseis,
vendêrão or vendêssem,

Second Preterimperfect.

venderia, I should sell, &c.
venderias,
venderia,
venderíamos,
venderíeis,
venderião,

Preterperfect.

que eu tenha
têhas
têha
tenhamos
tenhâis
tênhão } *vendido,* { that I have sold, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

se eu tivêra or tivêsse,
tivêras or tivêsses,
tivêra or tivêsse
tivêramos or tivêssêmos
tivêreis or tivêsseis
tivêrão or tivêssêsem } *vendido,* { if I had sold, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

eu teria
terias
teria
teríamos
teríeis
terião } *vendido,* { I should have sold, &c.

Future.

Future.

quando eu vendér, when I shall sell, &c.
vendéres,
vendér,
vendérmós,
vendérdes,
vendérem,

Second Future.

<i>quando eu tivér</i>	}	<i>vendído,</i>	{	when I shall have sold, &c.
<i>tivéres</i>				
<i>tivér</i>				
<i>tivérmós</i>				
<i>tivérdés</i>				
<i>tivérem</i>				

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

vendér, to sell.

Preterperfect.

ter vendído, to have sold.

Participle.

Present.

que vénde, that sell, that sells.

Preterit.

vendído, masc. *vendída,* fem. Plur. *vendídos, vendídas,* fold.

Future.

que ha de vendér, that is to sell.

Gerund.

vendéndo, felling.
têndo vendído, having sold.

Supine.

pará vendér, to sell.

After the same manner as the verb *vendér*, are conjugated all the other regular verbs of the second conjugation ending in *er*; as the following;

Acometér, to attack.*Bebér*, to drink.*Comér*, to eat.*Comprehendér*, to perceive, or apprehend.*Cometér*, to commit.*Concedér*, to grant*Correr*, to run.*Devér*, to owe.*Escondér*, to hide.*Emprendér*, to undertake.*Metér*, to put in.*Offendér*, to offend.*Prometér*, to promise.*Respondér*, to answer.*Reprehendér*, to reprove.*Temér*, to fear.*Varrer*, to sweep, &c.

The third conjugation of the verbs ending in *ir*.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

admitto, I admit, &c.*admittes*,*admitte*,*admittimos*.*admittéis*.*admittem*.

Preterimperfect.

admittia, I did admit, &c.*admittias*,*admittia*,*admittíamos*.*admittíeis*.*admittião*.

Preterperfect definite.

admitti, I admitted.*admittiste*,*admittio*,*admittimos*.*admittístes*.*admittirão*.

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *admittido*, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

ténho admittido,*téns admittido*, &c.

I have admitted.

thou hast, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *admittido*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

tinha admittido,*tinhas admittido*, &c.

I had admitted.

thou hadst, &c.

This tense may also be conjugated thus ; *admittira*, *admittiras*, *admittíra*, *admittíramos*, *admittíreis*, *admittirão*.

Future

Future.

admittiréi, I shall or will admit.
admittirás.
admittirá,
admittirémos,
admittiréis,
admittirão,

Imperative.

<i>admitte tu,</i>	admit thou.
<i>admitta elle,</i>	let him admit.
<i>admittámos nós,</i>	let us admit.
<i>admitti vos,</i>	admit ye.
<i>admittão elles,</i>	let them admit.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu admitta, that I may admit, &c.
admittas,
admitta,
admittámos,
admittáis,
admittão,

First Preterimperfect.

que eu admittíra or admittísse, that I might admit, &c.
admittíras or admittísse,
admittíra or admittísse,
admittíramos or admittíssemos,
admittíreis or admittísseis,
admittirão or admittíssem,

Second Preterimperfect.

admittiría, I should or would admit, &c.
admittirías,
admittiría,
admittiríamos,
admittiríeis,
admittirião,

Preterperfect:

This tense is composed of the particle *admittido,*
 and the present subjunctive of the verb *ter.*

que eu tenha admittido, that I have admitted.
ténhas admittido, &c. thou hast admitted, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *ter* and the participle *admittido*.

se eu tivéra admittido, If I had admitted.
tivéras, &c. thou hadst admitted, &c.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the verb *ter* and the participle *admittido*.

eu teria admittido, I should have admitted.
terías, &c. thou shouldst, &c.

First Future.

se eu admittir, If I shall admit, &c.
admittíres,
admittír,
admittírmos,
admittírdes,
admittírem,

Second Future.

It is composed of the first future subjunctive of the verb *ter* and the participle *admittido*.

se eu tiver admittido, If I shall have admitted.
tivéres, &c. thou shalt, &c.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

admittír, to admit.

Preterperfect.

ter admittido, to have admitted.

Participle.

Present.

admittido, for the masc. *admittida*, for the fem. admitted.

Future.

que ha de admittír, that is to admit.

Gerunds.

admittindo, admitting.
têndo admittido, having admitted.

Supines.

pará admittír, to admit.

Conjugate

Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs :

Abrir, to open.

Conduzir, to conduct.

Introduzir, to introduce.

Induzir, to induce.

Produzir, to produce.

Luzir, to shine.

Nutrir, to nourish.

Reduzir, to reduce, to bring

to.

Traduzir, to translate.

Deduzir, to deduct, &c.

Of the irregular Verbs in ar.

There are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that account are called irregulars.

There are but two of the first conjugation, which in some of their tenses depart from the rule of the verb *amar*, viz. *estar* and *dar*. We have already conjugated the first, and the second is conjugated in the following manner.

Indicative.

Present.

dou, I give.

dás, thou givest.

dá, he gives.

damos, we give.

dáis, you give.

dão, they give.

Preterimperfect.

dava,

davas, &c.

I did give, &c. (as in regular verbs of the first conjugation.)

Preterperfect definite.

dêi, I gave.

dêste, thou gavest.

dêu, he gave.

demos, we gave.

dêstes, you gave.

derão, they gave.

Preterperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *dado* and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *ter*; as *tenho dado*, I have given, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

This tense is composed of the participle *dado* and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter*; as *eu tinha dado*, &c. I had given, &c.

Future.

daréi, I shall or will give, &c. (as in the verb *amár*)
darás, &c.

Imperative.

	<i>demos nós</i> , let us give.
<i>dá tu</i> , give thou.	<i>dái vós</i> , give you.
<i>de elle</i> , let him give.	<i>dem elles</i> , let them give.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>que eu de</i> ,	that I may give, &c.
<i>des</i> ,	
<i>de</i> ,	
<i>demos</i> ,	
<i>déis</i> ,	
<i>dém</i> ,	

Preterimperfect.

<i>que eu déra</i> or <i>désse</i> ,	that I might give, &c.
<i>déras</i> or <i>desses</i> ,	
<i>déra</i> or <i>dése</i> ,	
<i>déramos</i> or <i>déssemos</i> ,	
<i>déreis</i> or <i>désseis</i> ,	
<i>dérão</i> or <i>déssem</i> ,	

Second Imperfect.

<i>daría</i> , I should give, &c.	<i>daríamos</i> .
<i>darías</i> ,	<i>daríeis</i> .
<i>daría</i> ,	<i>daríão</i> ,

The preterperfect, preterpluperfect, and the second preterpluperfect, are composed of the participle *dádo*, and the auxiliary verb *ter*, as in the regular verbs.

Future.

<i>quando eu dér</i> ,	when I shall give, &c.
<i>déres</i> ,	
<i>dér</i> ,	
<i>dêrmos</i> ,	
<i>dérdes</i> ,	
<i>dêrem</i> ,	

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *dádo*, &c. as the regular verbs.

Infinitive.

Infinitive.

Present.

dar, to give, &c. as in the regular verbs.

Of the irregular Verbs in er.

I begin with *fazér*, *podér*, and *sabér*, because they occur oftenest in discourse.

Fazér, to do or make.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>fáço</i> , I do.	<i>fazémos</i> , we do.
<i>fázes</i> , thou dost.	<i>fazéis</i> , you do.
<i>fázi</i> , he does.	<i>fazem</i> , they do.

Imperfect.

<i>fazía</i> , I did or did make, &c.	<i>fazíamos</i> .
<i>fazias</i> ,	<i>fazíeis</i> .
<i>fazía</i> ,	<i>fazião</i> .

Preterperfect definite.

<i>fiz</i> , I made, &c.	<i>fizémos</i> .
<i>fizeste</i> ,	<i>fizêstes</i> .
<i>fêz</i> ,	<i>fizerão</i> .

Preterperfect.

<i>tenho feito</i> , I have done, &c.
<i>téns feito</i> , &c.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>tinha feito</i> , I had done, &c.
<i>tínhas feito</i> , &c.

Future.

<i>farei</i> , I shall do, &c. (according to the regular verb.)
<i>farás</i> , &c.

Imperative.

<i>faça tu</i> , do thou.	<i>façámos nos</i> , let us do.
<i>faça êlle</i> , let him do.	<i>fazêi vos</i> , do you.
	<i>fação êlles</i> , let them do.

Optative.

Optative.

Present.

que eu faça, that I may do, &c. (according to the regular verbs.
faças,
faça, &c.

Preterimperfect.

que eu fizêra or fizêsse, that I might do, &c.
fizêras or fizêsses,
fizêra or fizêsse,
fizêramos or fizêssemes,
fizêreis or fizêsseis,
fizêrão or fizêsseem,

Second Imperfect.

faría, I should do, &c. *faríamos.*
farias, *faríeis.*
faría, *farião.*

Future.

quando eu fizér, when I shall do, &c.
fizêres,
fizér,
fizêrmos,
fizêrdes,
fizêrem,

Second Future.

quando eu tivér feïto, when I shall have done.
tivêres feïto, &c.

Infinitive.

fazér, to do.

Gerunds.

fazêndo, doing or in doing,

Participle.

feïto, made or done.

After the same manner are conjugated *desfazér,* to undo; *contrafazér,* to counterfeit; *refazér,* to make again.

Poder,

Podér, to be able.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>póſſo</i> , I can or am able.	<i>podémos</i> , we can.
<i>pódes</i> , thou canſt.	<i>podéis</i> , you can.
<i>póde</i> , he can.	<i>pódem</i> , they can.

Imperfect.

podía, I could or was able, &c.
podías, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>púde</i> , I could.	<i>pudémos</i> , we could.
<i>pudéſte</i> , thou couldſt.	<i>pudéſtes</i> , you could.
<i>púde</i> , he could.	<i>puderão</i> , they could.

Preterperfect.

tênhô podído, &c. I have been able, &c.

Future.

poderêi, I ſhall be able, &c.
poderás, &c.

There is no Imperative.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>que êu póſſa</i> ,	that I may be able.
<i>póſſas</i> ,	thou mayeſt be able, &c.
<i>póſſa</i> ,	
<i>poſſámos</i> ,	
<i>poſſáis</i> ,	
<i>póſſão</i> ,	

Imperfect.

<i>que êu pudéra</i> , or <i>pudéſſe</i> ,	that I might be able.
<i>pudéras</i> or <i>pudéſſes</i> ,	thou mightſt be able, &c.
<i>pudéra</i> or <i>pudéſſe</i> ,	
<i>pudéramos</i> or <i>pudéſſemos</i> ,	
<i>pudéreis</i> or <i>pudéſſeis</i> ,	
<i>pudérão</i> or <i>pudéſſem</i> ,	

Second Imperfect.

podería,
poderías, &c.

I should be able, &c.

Future,

quándo eu pudér;

when I shall be able, &c.

pudéres,
pudér,
pudérmos,
pudérdes,
pudérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

podér, to be able.

Gerunds.

podéndo, being able.

Participle.

pudido, been able.

Sabér, to know.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>sei,</i>	I know.	<i>sabemos,</i>	we know.
<i>sábes,</i>	thou knowest.	<i>sabéis,</i>	you know.
<i>sábe,</i>	he knows.	<i>sabem,</i>	they know.

Imperfect.

<i>sabía,</i>	I did know.
<i>sabías,</i>	thou didst know, &c.
<i>sabía, &c.</i>	

Preterperfect definite.

<i>sei,</i>	I knew, &c.	<i>soubemos.</i>
<i>soubeste,</i>		<i>soubéstes.</i>
<i>soube,</i>		<i>soubêrão.</i>

Preterperfect.

têno sabido, I have known, &c.

Future.

Future.

saberéi, I shall or will know, &c. (according to the
saberás, &c. regular verbs.)

Imperative.

sábe tu, know thou. *saibámos nós,* let us know.
saíba élle, let him know: *sabéi vós,* know you.
saibão élles, let them know.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu saíba, I may know.
saibas, thou mayst know, &c.
saíba,
saibámos,
saibáis,
saibão,

Imperfect.

que eu soubéra or *soubéisse,* that I might know, &c.
soubéras or *soubésses,*
soubéra or *soubéisse,*
soubéramos or *soubéssemos,*
soubéreis or *soubésseis,*
soubérao or *soubésem,*

Second Imperfect.

sabería, I should know, &c. *saberíamos.*
saberías, *saberíeis.*
sabería, *saberião.*

Future.

quando eu soubér, when I shall know, &c.
soubéres,
soubér,
soubérmos,
soubérdes,
soubérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

sabér, to know.

Gerund.

sabendo, knowing.

Participle.

Participle.

fabido (for the masc.) *fabida* (for the feminine,) known.

Of the irregular Verb *trazér*, to bring.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>trágo</i> ,	I bring.	<i>trazémos</i> ,	we bring, &c.
<i>trázes</i> ,	thou bringest.	<i>trazéis</i> ,	
<i>tráz</i> ,	he brings,	<i>trázem</i> ,	

Imperfect.

trazia, I did bring.
trazias, &c. thou didst bring, &c. (according to the regulars.)

Preterperfect definite.

<i>trouxe</i> ,	I brought.	<i>trouxémos</i> .
<i>trouxéste</i> ,	thou broughtest, &c.	<i>trouxéstes</i> ,
<i>trouxe</i> ,		<i>trouxerão</i> .

Preterperfect.

ténho trazido, I have brought, &c.
tens trazido, &c.

Future.

<i>trarei</i> ,	I shall or will bring, &c.	<i>trarémos</i> .
<i>trarás</i> ,		<i>trareis</i> ,
<i>trará</i> ,		<i>traráo</i> .

Imperative.

<i>traze tu</i> ,	bring thou.	<i>tragámos nós</i> ,	let us bring.
<i>traga elle</i> ,	let him bring.	<i>trazêi vós</i> ,	bring you.
		<i>tragão elles</i> ,	let them bring.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu traga, that I may bring, &c.
tragas,
traga,
tragámos,
tragáis,
tragão,

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

que eu trouxéra or trouxéſſe, that I might bring, &c.
trouxéras or trouxéſſes,
trouxéra or trouxéſſe,
trouxéramos or trouxéſſemos,
trouxéreis or trouxéſſeis,
trouxérão or trouxéſſem,

Second Imperfect.

eu traria, I should bring, &c. *trariamos.*
trarias, *trarieis.*
traria, *trarião.*

Future.

quando eu trouxér, when I shall bring, &c.
trouxéres,
trouxér,
trouxérmos,
trouxérdes,
trouxérem,

Infinitive.

Present.

trazér, to bring.

Gerund.

trazéndo, bringing.

Participle.

trazido, masc. *trazida,* fem. brought.

The conjugation of the Irregular Verb ver, to see.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>vêjo,</i>	I see,	<i>vêmos.</i>
<i>vês,</i>	thou seeſt,	<i>vêdes.</i>
<i>vê,</i>	he ſees, &c.	<i>vêm.</i>

Imperfect.

vía, I did ſee, &c.
vías,
vía, &c.

Preter-

Preterperfect definite.

<i>ví,</i>	I saw, &c.	<i>vímos.</i>
<i>víste,</i>		<i>vístes.</i>
<i>vio,</i>		<i>virão.</i>

Preterperfect.

<i>ténho vísto,</i>	I have seen, &c.
<i>téns vísto, &c.</i>	

Future.

<i>veréi,</i>	I shall see, &c.
<i>verás, &c.</i>	

Imperative.

<i>ve tu,</i>	see thou.
<i>vêja elle,</i>	let him see.
<i>vejámos nos,</i>	let us see.
<i>vêde vos,</i>	see you.
<i>vêjão elles,</i>	let them see.

Optative.

<i>que eu veja,</i>	that I may see, &c.	<i>vejámos.</i>
<i>vêjas,</i>		<i>vejaís.</i>
<i>vêja,</i>		<i>vêjão.</i>

Imperfect.

<i>que eu víra or vísse,</i>	that I might see, &c.
<i>víras or vísses,</i>	
<i>víra or vísse,</i>	
<i>víramos or víssemos,</i>	
<i>víreis or vísseis,</i>	
<i>virão or vísem,</i>	

Second Imperfect.

<i>eu vería,</i>	I should see, &c.	<i>veríamos.</i>
<i>verías,</i>		<i>veríeis.</i>
<i>vería,</i>		<i>verião.</i>

Future.

<i>quando eu vir,</i>	when I shall see, &c.
<i>víres,</i>	
<i>vír,</i>	
<i>vírmos,</i>	
<i>vírdes,</i>	
<i>vírem,</i>	

Infini-

Infinitive.

ver, to see.

Gerund.

vendo, seeing.

Participle.

visto, vista, seen.

In like manner are conjugated the compounds *antever*, *prover*, and *rever*.

The verb *prover*, when it signifies *to provide for*, or, *to take care of*, is conjugated in the present indicative thus ;

<i>eu provénho,</i> I take care of, &c.	<i>provimos.</i>
<i>provêns,</i>	<i>províndes.</i>
<i>provém,</i>	<i>próvem.</i>

But when it signifies *to make provision*, it is conjugated thus :

<i>eu provêjo,</i> I make provision, &c.	<i>provêmos.</i>
<i>provês,</i>	<i>provéis.</i>
<i>provê,</i>	<i>próve.</i>

The conjugation of the auxiliary verb *dizer* , to say.

Indicative.

Present

<i>digo,</i> I say, &c.	<i>dizêmos.</i>
<i>dizes,</i>	<i>dizêis.</i>
<i>diz,</i>	<i>dizem.</i>

Preterimperfect.

dizia, I did say, &c.
dizias, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

<i>dise,</i> I said, &c.	<i>dissemos.</i>
<i>dizêste,</i>	<i>dissestes.</i>
<i>disse,</i>	<i>disserão.</i>

G

Preter-

Preterperfect.

ténho ditto, I have said, &c.*têns ditto*, &c.

Future.

dirêi, I shall or will say, &c.*dirás*, &c.

Imperative.

<i>dize tu</i> ,	say thou.
<i>diga elle</i> ,	let him say.
<i>digâmos nos</i> ,	let us say.
<i>dizêi vos</i> ,	say you.
<i>digão elles</i> ,	let them say.

Optative.

que eu diga, that I may say, &c.
digas, &c.

Imperfect.

que eu dissêra or *dissêsse*, that I might say, &c.
dissêras or *dissêsses*,
dissêra or *dissêsse*,
dissêramos or *dissêssemos*,
dissêreis or *dissêsseis*,
dissêrão or *dissêsseem*.

Second Imperfect.

diria, I should say, &c.
diriam, &c.

Future.

quando eu dissêr, when I shall say, &c.
dissêres,
dissêr, &c.

Infinitive.

dizêr, to say.

Gerund.

dizêndo, saying.

Participles.

ditto, *ditta*, said.

Observe.

Observe, that the compounds *desdizér*, to unsay, and *contradizér*, to contradict, are in all points conjugated like *dizér*.

The Conjugation of the irregular Verb querér, to be willing.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

<i>quéro,</i>	I will, or am willing.
<i>quêres,</i>	thou art willing.
<i>quér,</i>	he is willing, &c.
<i>querêmos,</i>	
<i>querêis,</i>	
<i>quérem,</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>quería,</i>	I was willing, &c.
<i>querías, &c.</i>	

Preterperfect definite.

<i>quíiz,</i>	I have been willing, &c.
<i>quízeste,</i>	
<i>quíiz,</i>	
<i>quízêmos,</i>	
<i>quízêstes,</i>	
<i>quizerão,</i>	

Future.

<i>quererêi,</i>	I shall be willing, &c.
<i>quererás, &c.</i>	

Imperative.

<i>quêiras tu,</i>	be thou willing.
<i>quêira êlle,</i>	let him be willing.
<i>quêirâmos nos,</i>	let us be willing.
<i>quêirái vos,</i>	be you willing.
<i>quêirão êlles,</i>	let them be willing.

Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>que eu queira,</i>	that I may be willing, &c.
<i>quêiras, &c.</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>que eu quizéra</i> or <i>quizésse</i> ,	that I were willing.
<i>quizéras</i> or <i>quizésseis</i> ,	thou wert willing.
<i>quizéra</i> or <i>quizésse</i> ,	he were willing.
<i>quizéramos</i> , or <i>quizéssemos</i> ,	we were willing.
<i>quizéreis</i> or <i>quizésseis</i> ,	you were willing.
<i>quizérão</i> or <i>quizéssem</i> ,	they were willing.

Second Imperfect.

<i>eu quereria</i> ,	I should or would be willing, &c.
<i>quererías</i> , &c.	

Future.

<i>quando eu quizer</i> ,	when I shall be willing, &c.
<i>quizeres</i> , &c.	

Infinitive.

<i>querer</i> ,	to be willing.
-----------------	----------------

Gerunds.

<i>querendo</i> ,	being willing.
-------------------	----------------

Participle.

<i>querido</i> ,	been willing.
------------------	---------------

Note, that *quer* is sometimes a conjunction, when repeated in a sentence, and that it is rendered into English by *whether* and *or*; as, *quer vos o tenhais feito*, *quer não*, whether you have done that or no. But when, it is not repeated, and is joined to the particle *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by *at least*; as, *hum se quer*, one at least; and sometimes by *however*, when joined to the particle *que*; as, *as como quer que seja*, however it be. In all which cases, it is not to be confounded with the third person singular of the indicative of the verb *querer*.

Take notice that the verb *querer* is sometimes used with the particle *se* instead of the verb *dever*; as, *as cousas não se querem feitas à pressa*, things must not be done in a hurry.

Of the irregular Verb valér, to be worth.

I shall put no other tenses of this verb than the present indicative, the imperative, and the present of the subjunctive, none but these being irregular.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

<i>válho,</i>	I am worth, &c.
<i>váles,</i>	
<i>vále or val,</i>	
<i>valémos,</i>	
<i>valéis,</i>	
<i>válem,</i>	

Imperative.

<i>vále tu,</i>	be thou worth.
<i>válha elle,</i>	let him be worth.
<i>valhámos nos,</i>	let us be worth.
<i>valéi vos,</i>	be you worth.
<i>válhão elles,</i>	let them be worth.

Subjunctive.

<i>que eu válha,</i>	that I may be worth, &c.
<i>válhas,</i>	
<i>válha,</i>	
<i>valhámos,</i>	
<i>valháis,</i>	
<i>válhão,</i>	

Of the irregular Verb perdér, to lose.

This verb changes the *c* before *o* of the present indicative into *d* in the other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses, if you except the imperative and present subjunctive; in which it is conjugated in the following manner:

Indicative.

Present.

<i>pérco,</i>	I lose, &c.	<i>perdémos.</i>
<i>pérides,</i>		<i>perdeís.</i>
<i>pérde,</i>		<i>pérdem.</i>

Imperative.

<i>pérde tu,</i>	lose thou.
<i>pérca élle,</i>	let him lose.
<i>percámos nos,</i>	let us lose.
<i>perdéi vos,</i>	lose you.
<i>pêrcão éllés,</i>	let them lose.

Subjunctive.

<i>que eu pérca,</i>	that I may lose, &c.
<i>pércas,</i>	
<i>pêrca, &c.</i>	

The compounds of the verb *ter*, as, *conténho*, I contain; *deténho*, I detain, &c. are conjugated like it.

Some verbs of this conjugation are only irregular in the participle passive; as, *escrito*, from *escrever*; *absólto*, from *absolver*.

Those that have the *j* before *o* in the present indicative change the *j* into *g* in all tenses and persons, in which the *j* would otherwise meet with the vowels *i* or *e*; as, *elegér*, to elect; *eu eléjo*, *tu eléges*, &c. I elect, &c.

Imperfect.
elegia, &c.

Preter-def.
elegí, *elegéste*, &c. I elected, &c.

The verbs ending in *éyo* in the present indicative, change that termination into *ía* in the imperfect, and into *i* in the preter-definite, and are so conjugated.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>eu léyo,</i>	I read, &c.	<i>lémos.</i>
<i>les,</i>		<i>lédes.</i>
<i>le,</i>		<i>lem.</i>

Imperfect.

<i>eu líia,</i>	I did read, &c.
<i>lías, &c.</i>	

Preter-

Preter definite.

eu li, I read, &c.
léste, &c.

Imperative.

le tu, read thou. *leámos nos,* let us read.
léa elle, let him read. *léde vos,* read you.
léão elles, let them read.

Subjunctive.

que eu léa, that I may read, &c.
léas,
léa, &c.

You may observe that they lose the *y* through all the other moods and tenses. The verb *crer*, to believe, is conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs in ir.

Ir, to go.

Indicative Mood.

Present tense.

vou, I go. *vamos,* we go.
vás, thou goest. *ídes,* you go.
vái, he goes. *vão,* they go.

Preterimperfect.

hía, I did go, &c. *híamos,*
hías, *híeis.*
hía, *híão.*

Preterperfect definite.

uí, I went. *fomos,* we went.
foste, thou wentest. *fostes,* you went.
foi, he went. *fôrão,* they went.

Preterperfect.

ténho, } *ído* { I have gone, &c.
téns, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

tinha, { *ido,* } I had gone, &c.
tinhas,

Future.

iréi, I shall or will go, &c.
irás, &c.

Imperative.

<i>vai tu,</i>	go thou	<i>vamos nos,</i>	let us go.
<i>vá elle,</i>	let him go,	<i>ide vos,</i>	go ye.
		<i>vão elles,</i>	let them go.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que eu vá, that I may go, &c.
vás,
vá,
vamos,
vádes,
vão,

First Preterimperfect.

que eu fôra or *fôsse,* that I might go, &c.
fôras or *fôsses,*
fôra or *fôsse,*
fôramos or *fôssemos,*
fôreis or *fôsseis,*
fôrão or *fôssem,*

Second Preterimperfect.

iria, I should go, &c.
irias, &c.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *ido* and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Future.

<i>quando eu for,</i>	when I shall go, &c.
<i>fores,</i>	
<i>for,</i>	
<i>formos,</i>	
<i>fordes,</i>	
<i>forem,</i>	

Second Future.

<i>quando eu tiver,</i>	{ <i>ido</i> }	when I shall have gone,
<i>tiveras, &c.</i>		&c.

Infinitive.

Present.

ir, to go.

Gerunds.

indo, going,

Part.

ido, done.

Vir, to come.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>vénho,</i> I come, &c.	<i>vimos,</i>
<i>véns,</i>	<i>víndes,</i>
<i>vem,</i>	<i>vem.</i>

Imperfect.

<i>vínha,</i> I did come, &c.	<i>vínhamos.</i>
<i>vínhas,</i>	<i>vínheis.</i>
<i>vínha,</i>	<i>vínhão.</i>

Preter definite.

<i>vim,</i> I came, &c.	<i>viemos.</i>
<i>vieste,</i>	<i>viestes.</i>
<i>veio,</i>	<i>vierão.</i>

Preter-

Preterperfect.

ténho vindo, I have come, &c.
téns vindo, &c.

Future.

viréi, I shall come, &c.
virás, &c.

Imperative.

<i>vém tu</i> ,	come thou.	<i>venhámos nos</i> ,	let us come.
<i>vénha elle</i> ,	let him come.	<i>vinde vos</i> ,	come you.
		<i>venhão elles</i> ,	let them come.

Optative.

Present.

que eu vénha.

Imperfect.

que eu viéra, or *viésse*.

Second Imperfect.

viria, *virias*, &c.

Infinitive.

Present.

vir, to come.

Gerund.

vindo, coming.

Part.

vindo, come.

The compounds of *vir*; as *convir*, to be convenient; *sobrevir*, to come unlooked for, are conjugated in the same manner.

Of the irregular Verbs, *mentir*, to lie, *sentir*, to feel; *servir*, to serve; *ferir*, to wound.

These verbs change the *i* of the first person singular of the present tense, indicative, into *e* in the other

other persons of the same tense, as well as in the other tenses and moods, except in the imperative and the present conjunctive, in which they are conjugated thus ;

Indicative.

Present.

<i>eu minto,</i>	<i>tu mêntes,</i>	<i>elle mên-te, &c.</i>
<i>eu sinto,</i>	<i>tu sêntes,</i>	<i>elle sên-te, &c.</i>
<i>eu sirvo,</i>	<i>tu sêrves,</i>	<i>elle sêr-ve, &c.</i>

Imperative.

mên-te tu, mên-ta elle, mên-tá-mos nos, mên-tí vos, mên-tão êlles.
sên-te tu, sên-ta elle, sên-tá-mos nos, sên-tí vos, sên-tão êlles.
sêr-ve tu, sêr-va elle, sêr-vá-mos nos, sêr-ví vos, sêr-vão êlles.

Subjunctive.

<i>mên-ta,</i>	<i>mên-tas, &c.</i>
<i>sên-ta,</i>	<i>sên-tas, &c.</i>
<i>sêr-va,</i>	<i>sêr-vas, &c.</i>

The compounds, *desmentir, assentir, consentir, dissentir, presentir*, are conjugated like *mentir* and *sentir*; and also the verbs *afferir, referir, conserir, deferir, differir, inferir*.

Of the irregular Verbs *affligir, to afflict*; *corrigir, to correct*; *ingir, to feign*; *ungir, to anoint*; *compungir, frigir, dirigir, tingir, cingir, &c.*

These verbs change the *g* of the infinitive mood into *j* in those tenses where the *g* would otherwise meet with the vowels *o*, as in the first person singular of the present indicative *afflijo*; or *a*, as in the third person of the imperative in both numbers, in the first plural of the same tense, and in the present subjunctive.

Of the irregular Verb *seguir, to follow*.

This verb changes the *e* of the infinitive mood into *i* in the first person singular of the present indicative,

cative, *eu siga*, I follow : in the present subjunctive, *que eu siga*, that I may follow : and in the imperative, where it is conjugated thus : *sêgue tu, siga elle, sigamos nos, segui vos, sigão elles*.

Take notice that the *u* is lost in those tenses where it would otherwise meet with the vowels *o* and *a*, as you see in the examples; and this observation also takes place in the verbs *distinguir*, to distinguish; *extinguir*, to extinguish, &c.

The compounds are *perseguir*, to persecute; *conseguir*, to obtain; *proseguir*, to pursue.

Of the irregular Verb ouvir, to hear.

This verb changes the *v* of the infinitive mood into *ç* in the first person singular of the present indicative, *eu ouço*, I hear, *tu ouves*, &c. in the present subjunctive, and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus : *ouve tu, ouça elle, ouçamos nos, ouvi vos, ouçam elles*, hear thou, &c.

Of the irregular Verb dormir, to sleep.

This verb changes the *o* of the infinitive mood into *u* in the first person singular of the present indicative, thus : *eu durmo*, *tu dormes*, *elle dorme*, &c. I sleep, &c. In the present subjunctive, *que eu durma*, &c. that I may sleep; and in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus ; *dorme tu, durma elle, durmamos nós, dormi vos, durmão elles*, sleep thou, &c.

Of the irregular Verb fugir, to fly away.

This verb is irregular in the present indicative, and is thus conjugated : *fújo*, *foges*, *foge*, *fugimos*, *fugis*, *fogem*, I run away, &c. It is also irregular in the imperative mood, where it is conjugated thus : *foge tu, fúja elle, fuçamos nos, fugi vos, fuçam elles*. Finally, it is irregular in the present subjunctive; *que eu fúja*, *fújas*, &c.

It keeps the *u* in all other tenses and moods, as also the *g*.

The verb *furgir*, to arrive, or to come to an anchor, has the same irregularity, and makes *súrto*, in the participle passive.

The verbs *subir*, *cubrir*, *encubrir*, *descubrir*, *acudir*, *bullir*, *sumir*, *consumir*, *cuspir*, *construir*, *tussir*, &c. have the same irregularity in regard to the letter *u*.

Of the irregular Verb pedir, to ask.

This verb is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative and subjunctive, as well as in the imperative, in which it changes the *d* into *ç*.

Indicative.

<i>eu péço</i> , I ask, &c.	<i>nós pedimos.</i>
<i>tu pédes</i> ,	<i>vos pedis.</i>
<i>êle péde</i> ,	<i>êles pedem.</i>

Imperative.

<i>péde tu</i> , ask thou.	<i>peçámos nos</i> , let us ask.
<i>peça êle</i> , let him ask.	<i>pedi vós</i> , ask you.
	<i>peção êles</i> , let them ask.

Subjunctive.

<i>que eu péça</i> , that I may ask, &c.	<i>peçámos.</i>
<i>péças</i> ,	<i>peçáis.</i>
<i>péça</i> ,	<i>peção.</i>

In like manner is conjugated the verb *medir*, to measure: *eu méço*, *tu médes*, &c.

Of the irregular Verb vestir, to dress.

Indicative.

Present:

<i>eu vísto</i> ,	I dress, &c.	<i>vestimos.</i>
<i>vêstes</i> ,		<i>vestís.</i>
<i>vêste</i> ,		<i>vêstem.</i>

Imperative.

Imperative.

<i>veste tu,</i> drefs thou.	<i>vistámos nos,</i> let us drefs.
<i>vista elle,</i> let him drefs.	<i>vesti vos,</i> drefs you.
	<i>vistão elles,</i> let them drefs.

Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>que eu vista,</i> that I may drefs, &c.	<i>vistámos.</i>
<i>vistas,</i>	<i>vistáis.</i>
<i>vista,</i>	<i>vistão.</i>

In all other tenses and moods it keeps the letter *e*; and in like manner is conjugated the verb *despir*.

Of the irregular Verb sortir, to furnish, or stock.

Feyjo says, that the *o* of this verb is to be changed into *u*, in those tenses where the *t* is followed by *e* or *a*, and that it is to be kept, when the *t* is followed by *i*; but in the *Fábula dos plánetas* we read, *surtio effeito*, it took effect: and in *Andrade 2 part. Apologet.* we read, *não sortirão effeito*, where the verb *sortirão* is in the same tense, viz. in the preterperfect definite; therefore nothing can be determined about the irregularity of this verb.

Of the irregular Verb carpir, to weep.

This verb is defective, and is only used in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by *i*; as *carpimos*, *carpis*, we weep, you weep. Preterimperfect, *carpia*, *carpias*, &c. I did weep, &c.

Of the irregular Verb parir, to bring forth young as any female doth.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

<i>eu páiro,</i> I bring forth, &c.	<i>parimos.</i>
<i>páres,</i>	<i>paris.</i>
<i>páre,</i>	<i>parem.</i>

Imperfect.

paria, &c.

Imperative.

Imperative Mood.

páre tu, bring thou forth, &c. *pairámos.*
paíra eila, *parí.*
paíra eila, *paírão.*

Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu paíra, that I may say, &c. *pairámos.*
paíras, *pairáis.*
paíra, *paírão.*

Of the irregular Verb repetir, to repeat.

Indicative.

Present.

repito, I repeat, &c. *repetimos.*
repêtes, *repetís.*
repête, *repêtem.*

Imperfect.

repetía, *repetías*, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

repetí, *repetíste*, &c.

Imperative.

repête tu, repeat thou, &c. *repetámos*, &c.
repêta elle,

Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu repêta, that I may repeat, &c.
repêtas, &c.

Imperfect.

repetíra, or *repetísse*, that I might repeat.

Of the irregular Verbs sair, to go out, and cair, to fall.

Indicative.

Present.

sáyo, I go out, &c. *sáhimos.*
sáhes, *sáhis.*
sáhe, *sáhem.*

Preterimperfect.

sahía, *sahías*, &c.

Preter-

Preterperfect definite.

sahí, sahíste, &c.

Imperative.

	<i>sahâmos nós.</i>
<i>sáhe tu,</i>	<i>sahí vos.</i>
<i>sáya elle,</i>	<i>sâyão elles.</i>

Subjunctive.

que eu sâya, sâyas, &c.

This is the common way of writing the irregular tenses of the verb *sabir* as well as those of the verb *cabir*, viz. *eu câyo, tu câbes, &c.* I fall, &c. according to *Feyjo*.

Of the irregular Verb, ordír, to warp in a loom.

Féyjo says that this verb changes the *o* into *u*, in those persons where it would otherwise meet with the syllables *da, de, do*.

Of the irregular Verb advertír, to warn.

Advertír is irregular in the following tenses, only by changing *vir* into *ver*.

Indicative.

Present,

<i>advírto,</i>	I warn, &c.	<i>advertímos.</i>
<i>advértes,</i>		<i>advertís.</i>
<i>advírte,</i>		<i>advértem.</i>

Imperative.

<i>advérte tu,</i>	warn thou, &c.	<i>advirtâmos nós.</i>
<i>advirta elle,</i>		<i>advertí vós.</i>
		<i>advirtão elles.</i>

Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>que eu advírta,</i>	that I may warn, &c.	<i>advirtâmos.</i>
<i>advirtas,</i>		<i>advirtâis.</i>
<i>advirta,</i>		<i>advirtão.</i>

The Conjugation of the irregular Verb por, to place.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>pónho</i> , I put, &c.	<i>pómos</i> .
<i>póens</i> ,	<i>póndes</i> .
<i>poém</i> ,	<i>póem</i> .

Preterimperfect.

<i>púnha</i> , I did put.	<i>púnhamos</i> .
<i>púnhas</i> ,	<i>púnheis</i> .
<i>púnha</i> ,	<i>púnhaõ</i> .

Preterperfect definite.

<i>púz</i> , I put, &c.	<i>puzémos</i> .
<i>puzéste</i> ,	<i>puzéstes</i> .
<i>póz</i> ,	<i>puzérão</i> .

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *ter*, and the participle *pósto*.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *posto*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Future.

<i>porêi</i> , I shall or will put, &c.	<i>porémos</i> .
<i>porás</i> ,	<i>poréis</i> .
<i>porá</i> ,	<i>porão</i> .

Imperative.

<i>póem</i> , put thou, &c.	<i>ponhámos nos</i> .
<i>pónha</i> elle,	<i>pónde vos</i> .
	<i>ponhão elles</i> .

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu pónha, that I may put, &c.
pónhas, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

que eu puzêra or *puzêsse*, that I might put, &c.
puzêras or *puzêsses*, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

eu poria, I should put, &c.
porias, &c.

Preterperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Second Preterpluperfect.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Future.

quándo eu puser, when I shall put, &c.
puseres, &c.

Second Future.

It is composed of the participle *pósto*, and the future subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *ter*.

Infinitive.

Present.

pôr, to put.

Gerund.

póndo, putting.

Participle passive.

pósto, put.

After the same manner are conjugated the verbs derived from *por*; as *compôr*, to compose; *dispôr*, to dispose; *propôr*, to propose, &c.

Some verbs are irregular only in the participle passive; as *aberto*, from *abrir*; *escrito*, from *escrever*, &c.

Of Verbs Neuter.

Verbs neuter are those which make a complete sense of themselves, and do not govern any case after

ter

ter them, like the verbs active ; as *dormir*, to sleep ; *andar*, to go ; *tremér*, to tremble, &c. But you must take notice that we meet with some verbs neuter which may govern an accusative ; as *dormir hum sono profundo*, to sleep soundly ; *eu fui andando meu caminho, e não disse huma palavra*, I went my way, and said not a word. We may also say, that the verbs neuter are those which, in their compound tenses, are seldom or never conjugated with the verb *sér*, to be ; as, I sleep, I tremble, I speak, &c. We may indeed say, *eu tenho dormido*, I have slept ; *eu tenho tremido*, I have trembled ; but not, I am slept, &c. I said *seldom*, because sometimes the verbs neuter may be conjugated with the verb *sér* ; as, *ser bem fallado*, to have a good name.

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, to avoid mistakes in the participle, as may be seen in the Syntax of Participles.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

The name of Reciprocal Verbs is given to such as return the action upon the agent, and are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, se, &c.*

Example.

Indicative. Present.

eu me arrependo, I repent, &c.
tu te arrependes,
elle se arrepende, &c.

Imperfect.

eu me arrependia, I did repent, &c.

and so of the rest.

Yet we are to take notice that the pronouns conjunctive *me, te, &c.* may be placed either before or after the verb, in the indicative, and consequently we may say, *eu me lembro*, or *eu lembro me*, I re-

member ; *me lembréi*, or *lembréi-me*, I remembered, &c. But in the imperative they ought to be placed after the verb, as in the following

Example.

<i>lembra-te tu</i> , remember thou, &c.	<i>lembrémo-nos nós.</i>
<i>lembre-se elle</i> ,	<i>lembrái-vos vós.</i>
	<i>lembrem-se elles.</i>

In which example you must observe also, that the first person plural, which in the other verbs is like the first person plural of the present subjunctive, has the last consonant, *s*, cut off ; and so from *lembrémos* we cut off the *s* to make *lembrémo-nos* ; and from *arrepandámos* we make *arrependámo-nos*, &c. In regard to the infinitive, we may say, *he necessário arrepender-se dos peccados*, it is necessary to repent sins ; *he necessário lembrar-se*, it is necessary to remember ; and not *se arrepender*, or *se lembrar*. In like manner we may say *lembrando-me*, remembering, and not *me lembrando*. Yet you must take notice that the present infinitive may be preceded by the particle *pará*, (which forms the Portuguese supine) and then the pronoun conjunctive may be placed either before or after it ; and so we say, *pará lembrar-se*, or *pará-se lembrar*, to remember, or in order to remember.

As for the subjunctive mood, you must put the pronoun conjunctive before the present ; but you must carefully observe, that the pronouns conjunctive must be placed before it when preceded by the particles *se*, if, *que*, that ; and so you may say, *que eu me lembrásse*, *se eu me lembrásse*, that I might remember, &c. but not *que eu lembrásse-me*, &c. But when the first preterimperfect is not preceded by any particle, then you must place the pronoun conjunctive after it ; as, *arrependerá-me eu disso*, I wish I repented it.

In the second preterimperfect we may place the pronouns conjunctive either before or after it, therefore

fore you may say *arrependeria me se*, &c, or *eu me arrependeria se*, &c. I should repent if, &c.

In the future you must always place the pronouns conjunctive before it ; and so we may say, *quando eu me lembrar*, when I shall remember ; but not *quando eu lembrar-me*.

Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals.

Example.

eu me amo, I love myself.
tu te amas, thou lovest thyself.
elle se ama, he loves himself.
nos nos amamos, we love ourselves, &c.

The Conjugation of the reciprocal Verb *ir-se*, to go away.

Indicative.

Present.

eu me vou, I go away.
tu te vas, &c. thou goest away, &c.

Preterimperfect.

eu me hia, I did go away.
tu te hias, &c. thou didst go away, &c.

Preterperfect definite.

eu me fui, I went away.
tu te foste, &c. thou wentest away, &c.

Preterperfect.

eu me tenho ido, I am gone away, or I have gone away.
tu te tens ido, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

eu me tinha ido, I was gone away, or I had gone away.
tu te tinhas ido, &c. thou hast gone away, &c.

Future.

eu me irei, &c. I shall or will go away.
tu te iras, &c. thou shalt go away.

Imperative.

vai-te, go thou away.
va-se, let him go away.
vamo-nos, let us go away.
ide-vos, go away, get away, or get you gone.
vão-se, let them go away.

Subjunctive.

Present.

que eu me vá, that I may go away.
que tu te vás, &c. that thou mayest go away, &c.

First Preterimperfect.

eu me fôra, or me fôsse, I went away.
te fôras, or te fôsses, &c. thou wentest away, &c.

Second Preterimperfect.

eu me iria, I would, &c. go away.
tu te irias, thou wouldst, &c.

Preterperfect.

que eu me tenha ido, that I have gone away, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

que eu me tivêra, or me tivêsse ido, that I had gone away,

Second Preterpluperfect.

eu me teria ido, I should have gone away, &c.

Future.

quando eu me for, when I shall go away, &c.

Second Future.

quando eu me tiver ido, when I shall have gone away, &c.

Infinitive.

Present.

ir-se, to go away.

Preterperfect.

ter-se ido, to have gone away.

Participles.

Present.

que se va, that is gone away.

Preterit.

Preterit.

ído, gone away.

Future.

que ha de ir-se, that is to go away.

Gerunds.

índo-se, going away.

téndo se ído, having gone away.

Supine.

para ir-se, to go, or in order to go away.

You must observe, that in the compound tenses the pronouns *me, te, &c.* are placed before the auxiliary verb.

2dly. This verb is also said of vessels to signify their being leaky; as *vai se a cuba*, the tub leaks. It is also used before the gerunds; as, *o inverno vai-se acabando*, the winter is drawing towards an end; *elles vão-se preparando*, they are preparing themselves: in which examples and in the like, the verb is to be rendered into English by the verb *to be* itself, and without addition of the adverb *away*; and sometimes it is placed before the present infinitive; as, *ir-se deitar*, to go to bed.

Of the reciprocal Verb vir-se, to come away.

This verb is to be conjugated like the verb *vir*; but you must place the pronouns conjunctive, *me, te, &c.* according to the observations we have made above.

Of the reciprocal Verb avir-se, to agree.

This is a compound verb, which is to be conjugated by putting the particle *a* before the verb *vir* in all its tenses and moods; but you must always

make use of the observations already made about the pronouns conjunctive; and the same care must be had with the reciprocal verb *haver-se*, to behave; in the conjugation of which, you have nothing to do but to add the pronouns conjunctive to the verb *haver*.

Impersonal Verbs.

There are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves; as,

<i>succede,</i>	it happens.
<i>basta,</i>	it is enough, or it suffices.
<i>chove,</i>	it rains.
<i>troveja,</i>	it thunders.

The second are derived from verbs active, followed by the particle *se*, which renders them impersonal; as, *ama-se*, they love; *diz-se*, they say; *nota-se*, it is noted. They are also called passive impersonals.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, *nos*, *vos*, *lhes*; as, *dão-me*, *dão-te*, *dão-lhe*, &c.

The impersonal verbs of themselves are,

<i>convém,</i>	it is convenient.
<i>succede,</i>	it happens, or it falls out.
<i>está-me bem,</i>	it becomes me.
<i>basta,</i>	it is enough.
<i>há-se,</i>	it is necessary.
<i>chovísca,</i>	it milles.
<i>chove,</i> or <i>cáhe pédra,</i>	it hails.
<i>gêa,</i>	it freezes.
<i>nêva,</i>	it snows.
<i>fuzila,</i> or <i>relampaguêa,</i>	it lightens.
<i>importa,</i>	it matters, it concerns.
<i>parece,</i>	it seems.

and

and the like, which are conjugated with the third persons singular of each tense ; as,

Indicative.

Present.

chóve, it rains.

Imperfect.

chovia, it did rain.

Preterperfect definite.

chovéo, it rained.

Preterperfect.

tem chovído, it has rained.

Preterpluperfect.

tinha chovído, it had rained.

Future.

choverá, it shall or will rain.

Imperative.

chóva, let it rain.

Optative and Subjunctive.

Present.

que chóva, that it may rain.

Imperfect.

que chovára, or chovésse, that it might rain.

Second Imperfect.

chovería, it should rain.

Future.

quando chovér, when it shall rain.

Second Future.

quando tiver chovído, when it shall have rained.

Infinitive.

chovér, to rain.

The particle *se*, which composes the second sort of impersonal verbs, may be placed either before or after them ; as, *diz-se*, they say ; *sábe-se*, it is known ; *sabía-se*, it was known ; *logo se sôbe*, it was immediately known ; *se diz*, it is said, &c. but sometimes they make no use of the particle *se*, and only put the verb in the third person plural ; as, *dizem*, instead of *se diz*, they say.

In like manner all the verbs active may become impersonal.

In regard to these verbs, take notice, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular ; if the noun be in the plural, you put the verb in the plural.

Example.

Lôuva-se o capitão, they praise the captain.

Louvão-se os capitães, they praise the captains.

Ve-se um homem, they see a man.

Vem-se homens, they see men.

When *lhe* is used after the word *se*, then *lhe* is to be rendered into English by *his* or *her* : as *lôuva-se-lhe o valor*, they praise his or her courage.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, *me*, *te*, *lhe*, &c. with the third person singular.

Example.

Indicative.

Present.

desagrada-me,
desagrada-te,
desagrada-lhe,
desagrada-nos,
desagrada-vos,
desagrada-lhes,

I am displeased, or it displeases me,
thou art displeased.
he or she is displeased.
we are displeased.
you are displeased.
they are displeased,

Imperfect.

desagradava-me, I was displeased.

Preter-

Preterperfect definite.

desagradou-me. I was displeased.

Future.

desagradar-me-ha, I shall be displeased.

Optative.

que me desagrade, that I may be displeased.

Imperfect.

que me desagradara or me desagradasse, that I were displeased.

Second Imperfect.

desagradar-me-hia, I should be displeased.

Conjugate after the same manner,

succede-me, it happens to me.

doe-me, it grieves or it pains me.

parece-me, it seems to me.

he-me-preciso, it behoves me.

agrada-me, it pleases me.

lembro-me, I remember.

Many of those impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural ; as,

doe me a perna, my leg pains me.

dõem me os olhos, I have sore eyes.

o vóssô vestido parece-me novo, your coat appears new to me.

os vossos sapatos me parecem muito compridos, your shoes seem to me too long.

Of the Verb ser, to be.

The verb *ser* is also used as an impersonal, as it appears in the following examples : *he tempo de levantar se,* it is time to get up ; *era tempo de hir,* it was time to go, &c. and particularly when it is conjugated with the adjectives *preciso* or *necessário* ; as, *he preciso or necessário fazer isto,* this must be done ; *era preciso or necessário escrever,* it was necessary to write ; *eu iria, se fosse preciso,* I would go, if it should be necessary ;

cessary ; *he preciso que eu vá*, I must go ; *he preciso que eu lêya*, I must read ; *he preciso que elle coma*, he must eat ; *seria preciso que eu fôsse*, I should go. You see by the last examples, that when the verb *ser* and the adjective are before the conjunctive mood, with the participle *que*, the conjunctive is rendered in English by the infinitive ; but if the verb *ser* is followed by the relative or particle *que*, it must then be rendered in English in the following manner ; as *eu he que tenho feito aquillo*, 'tis I who have done that ; *tu he que tens*, &c. 'tis thou who hast, &c. *elle he que tem*, &c. 'tis he who, &c. *nos he que temos*, &c. 'tis we who have, &c. *vos he que tendes*, &c. 'tis you who have, &c. *elles he que tem*, &c. 'tis they have, &c. *a ley he que o manda*, 'tis the law that prescribes it ; *ella he que o cre*, 'tis she who believes it ; *elles he que o fizerão* ? is it they have done it ? *eu he que o fiz*, 'twas I who did it ; *então he que eu tômo as minhas medidas*, 'tis then I take my measures ; *então he que eu vi*, 'twas then I saw, or only then I saw. You may observe that *que* is not relative in the last examples, and that it is left out in English.

Of the Verb havér, when it is impersonal.

It is to be so conjugated,

Indicative.

Present.

ha, or *não ha*, there is, or there is not, or there are, or there are not.

Imperfect.

havia, there was, or there were.

Preterperfect definite.

houve, there was, or there were.

Preter-

Preterperfect.

tem havido, there has been *or* there have been.

Preterpluperfect.

tinha havido, there had been.

Future.

haverá, there shall be.

Imperative.

hája, let there be.

Optative and Subjunctive.

que hája, that there may be.

Imperfect.

que houvéra or houvésse, that there were.

Second Imperfect.

haveria, there would be.

Preterperfect.

que tenha havido, if there had been.

Preterpluperfect.

se tivésse havido, if there had been.

Future.

quando houver, when there will *or* shall be.

Second Future.

quando tiver havido, when there shall have been.

Infinitive.

haver, there to be.

Pret.

ter havido, there to have been.

Gerunds.

havendo, there being.

tendo havido, in there having been.

Those who learn Portuguese are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions, *there is not*;

is

is there ? and though there is nothing so easy ; however, I have explained them at large in the following conjugation.

Conjugation of the Verb impersonal there is, ha, when it marks the place, through all its tenses.

There is of it,
There is not of it,
Is there of it ?
Is there not of it ?

There was of it,
There was not of it,
Was there of it ?
Was there not of it ?

There was of it,
There was not of it,
Was there of it ?
Was there not of it ?

There shall be of it,
There shall not be of it,
Shall there be of it ?
Shall there not be of it ?

That there may be of it,
That there may not be of it,
That there were of it,
That there were not of it,

There would be of it,
There would not be of it,
Would there not be of it ?

If there had been of it,
If there had not been of it,
Had there been of it ?
Had there not been of it ?

There would have been of it,
There would not have been
of it,

Would there have been of it,
Would there not have been
of it ?

When there will be of it,
When there will not be of it,

ha lá disso.

não ha lá disso.

ha lá disso ?

não ha lá disso ?

havia lá disso.

não havia lá disso.

havia lá disso ?

não havia lá disso ?

houve lá disso.

não houve lá disso.

houve lá disso ?

não houve lá disso ?

haverá lá disso.

não haverá lá disso.

haverá lá disso ?

não haverá lá disso ?

que haja lá disso.

não haja lá disso. [disso:

que houvera or houveresse lá

não houvera or houveresse lá [disso:

haveria lá disso.

não haveria lá disso.

não haveria lá disso ?

se tivésse havido lá disso.

se não tivésse havido lá disso:

teria havido lá disso ?

não teria havido lá disso ?

teria havido lá disso.

não teria havido lá disso.

teria havido lá disso ?

não teria havido lá disso ?

quando houver lá disso.

quando não houver lá disso.

When

When there will have been of it,	<i>quando tiver havido lá dísso.</i>
When there will not have been of it,	<i>quando não tiver havido lá dísso.</i>
Will there have been of it?	<i>terá havido lá dísso?</i>
Will there not have been of it?	<i>não terá havido lá dísso?</i>
For there having been too much of it,	<i>por ter havido lá demasiadamente dísso.</i>
In there having been too little of it.	<i>tênho havido lá muito pouco dísso.</i>

Most ways of speaking beginning with *some*, and the verb *to be*, are expressed in Portuguese by the impersonal *ha*; as, some friends are false, *ha amigos falsos*; some Christians are unworthy of that name, *ha Christiãos que não são dignos de tal nome*.

Observe, that *ha* comes before a substantive even of the plural number.

The impersonal *ha* is besides used to denote a quantity of time, space, and number; as, *ha dez annos que morréo*, he has been dead these ten years; or, he died ten years ago; *ha trinta milhöens d'almas em França*, there are thirty millions of souls in France; *de Paris a Londres ha 120 legoas*, Paris is 120 leagues from London.

The question of space is asked thus, *quanto ha de Paris a Londres?* how far is Paris from London?

Of the impersonal Verb ha-se, it is necessary, or must.

This verb answers to the Italian *bisogna*, and to the French *il faut*, and always requires after it the particle *de*, and the infinitive. It denotes the necessity of doing something, and is Englished by *must*, and sometimes by the verb *to be*, through all its tenses, with some of these words, *necessary, requisite, needful*: and as it denotes the necessity of doing something in general, without specifying who *must*, therefore the subject coming before *must* may be either *I* or *we*, *he*, or *she*, or *any body*, according to the sense of the speech; as,

Ha se

Ha-se de fazer aquillo, one, or we, or you, or he, or somebody must do that.

Ha-se de hir, I or you, or we, or somebody must go.

Sometimes the verb coming after this impersonal, is Englished by the passive voice ; as, *ha-se de fazer isto*, this must be done.

It is very often joined with *mistér* ; as, *ha-se de mistér dinheiro para demandas*, one must have money to go to law ; *ha-se de mistér hum bom amigo para fazer fortuna no mundo*, to push one's fortune in the world, one must have a good friend.

As for the conjugation of this verb, you must make use of the verb *to be* with *necessary*, as I have already said.

Example.

Present, *ha-se*, it is necessary. Imperfect, *havia-se*, it was necessary ; and so through all the tenses and moods.

You must take notice, that sometimes the infinitive that follows the particle *de* is placed between this impersonal and its particle *se* ; as, *ha de achár-se*, it will be found, and sometimes the infinitive precedes the impersonal, and this follows the particle *se* ; as, *achár-se ha*, it will be found ; and in this case you must not join the particle *de* to it. Observe, that the infinitive may be also placed between the imperfect tense of this impersonal verb and its particle *se* ; as, *havia de achár-se*, it was to be found ; but when the infinitive precedes both the impersonal and its particle *se*, then you must put the particle *se* before the impersonal, and make use of the imperfect *hía*, and not *havía* ; so you may say, *achár-se hía*, and not *achár-se-havía*.

Of the defective Verbs carpír, to weep, and soér, to be wont.

The verb *carpír* is used only in those tenses and persons where the *p* is followed by an *i*; as, *carpí-mos, carpís*, we weep, you weep. Präterimp. *carpía, carpías*, &c. I did weep, &c.

The verb *soér* is only used in the third persons of the present indicative of the preterimperfect of the same mood, and in the gerund: as, *élle soe*, he is wont; *élles soem*, they are wont. Imperf. *élle soía*, he was wont; *élles soião*, they were wont. Gerund, *soendo*, being wont.

CHAP. V.

Of the Participles.

THE participle is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as, *ténho amado*, I have loved; *tínha amado*, I had loved.

Amado is a participle, and all the verbs in *ar* form the participle in *ado*; as, *amado, cantado*, &c.

Amado is likewise a noun adjective. Example. *Hómem amado, molhér amada; livros amados, letras amadas.*

Some participles are frequently abridged; as, *envolto*, or *envolvído*, *corrupto* or *corrompido*, *enxuto* or *exugado*; and several others, which the use of authors will point out to you.

The regular verbs ending in *er* or in *ir* form the participle in *ido*; as, *vendido, recebido, luzido, nutrido*, &c.

There are three sorts of participles ; namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The active participles are composed of the verb *ter* ; as, *ténho amado*, *tinha amado*, &c.

The passive participles are preceded by the verb *ser*, to be ; as, *fôu amado*, *fêndo louvado*, &c.

The passive participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin ; and you must observe, that *having* and *being* are often left out in Portuguese.

EXAMPLE.

Feito isto, having done this.

Dito isto, having said so.

Acabada a cea, after he or they have supped.

The auxiliary and participle are not always immediately joined together in compound tenses ; as, *Nos temos, com a graça de Déos, vencido os nossos inimigos*, we have, by the grace of God, overcome our enemies.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Adverbs.

THE adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb.

The adverb has the same effect with the verb as the adjective with the substantive : it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts ; as, adverbs of time, place, quantity, &c,

Adverbs of time ; as, at present, *presentemente* ; now, *agóra* : yesterday, *ontem* ; to day, *hoje* ; never, *nunca* ;

nunca; always, *sempre*; in the mean time; *entretanto*.

Adverbs of place; as, where, *onde*; here, *aqui*; from whence, *dónde*; there, *ali*; from hence, *daquí*; above, *em cima*; below, *em baixo*; far, *lônge*; near, *perto*.

Adverbs of quantity; as, how much, *quanto*; how many, *quântos*; or *quântas*; so much, *tanto*; much, *muito*; little, *pouco*.

A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing *o* into *amente*; *santo*, *santamente*, holily; *rico*, *ricamente*, richly; *douto*, *doutamente*, learnedly.

From adjectives in *e* or *l* we likewise form adverbs, by adding *mente* to them; as,

Constante, *constantemente*, constantly.

Diligente, *diligentemente*, diligently.

Prudente, *prudentemente*, prudently.

Fiel, *fielmente*, faithfully.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Portuguese language, I have here collected a large number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *mente*.

A Collection of Adverbs.

<i>Abundantemente</i> , abundantly	<i>Adéos</i> , farewell.
<i>Com razão</i> , justamente, justly	<i>Admiravelmente</i> ,
<i>Abolutamente</i> , absolutely.	<i>Maravilhosamente</i> ,
<i>Acachapernas</i> , or a caval- leiro, a-straddle.	<i>As mil maravilhas</i> , } admirably.
<i>Agóra</i> , or <i>por héra</i> , now at this time.	<i>Astutamente</i> , cunningly.
<i>Faparája</i> , now, immediately	<i>Atreçoadamente</i> , treacher- ously.
<i>Com condição</i> , upon condition	<i>De maravilha</i> , very seldom.
<i>De parte</i> , aside.	<i>A miúdo</i> , often.
<i>De travéz</i> , askew, asquint ; as, <i>olhár de travéz</i> , to look askew, or asquint.	<i>Assim</i> , so.
<i>Atualmente</i> , actually.	<i>Tão</i> , so.
<i>De propósito</i> , purposely.	<i>Apréssa</i> , in haste.
	<i>Facilmente</i> , easily.
	<i>A'o avéssô</i> , or <i>as avéssas</i> , the wrong side outward.

*De improvízo, or improvisa-
mente, at unawares.*

Antigamente, anciently.

Quási, pretty near, almost.

Então, then.

Desde então, since that time.

Desde quando? since when?

*De quando áca? from what
time? how long?*

*De quando em quando, now
and then, ever and anon.*

*Quando bem, or ainda quando,
albeit, although it should
be.*

Quando muito, at the most.

Quando menos, at least.

Cá, here, or hither.

Lá, there.

Ali, there, in that place.

*Ahi, { there, expresses the
place where stands the
person spoken to; as,
ahi onde estás, there
where you are.*

Acolá, there.

Tráz, or detrás, behind.

Pará trás, backward.

Isto he, to wit.

Em vez, instead.

Támbem, also.

Tanto que, } as soon as.

Lógo que, }

De pensádo, wilfully.

Acáso, by chance.

Fixamente, stedfastly.

Finalmente, finally.

Livreménte, freely.

Muito, much.

Depréssa, quickly.

Aquí, here.

*Até aquí, as far as here, or
till now, or hitherto.*

*D'aquí em diánte, hencefor-
ward, or hereafter.*

Bem, well.

A'manhã, to-morrow.

*A'manhã pela manhã, to-
morrow morning.*

*Depóis d'a'manhã, after to-
morrow.*

Ultimamente, lastly.

Cómo, as.

Cómo? how?

Cédo, soon.

Tárde, late.

Primeiro que, before that.

*Primeiro quetúdo, before all,
or in the first place.*

Fóra, abroad, out.

Já, already.

De sálto, at one jump.

*De quando em quando, from
time to time.*

Antes, before.

Depóis, afterwards.

Juntamente, together.

Enteiramente, entirely.

A'oredór, or em torno, about.

De bálde, in vain.

Loucaménte, madly.

Muito, very.

Atrevidamente, boldly.

Felicemente, happily.

Vergonhosamente, shamefully

Nunca, never.

Nunca mais, never since.

Lógo, immediately.

*Ainda, yet; as, ainda não
vêo, he is not come yet.*

*Ainda, even; as seria ver-
gênha ainda o fallár nisso,
it were a shame even to
speak of it.*

Nem se quer, even.

Vilménte, basely.

Mal, ill.

Máis, more.

Ménos, less.

Até, until or even.

Sim, yes.

Não,

<i>Não</i> , no, not.	<i>Quando</i> , when.
<i>O'nde</i> , where.	<i>Nada</i> , nothing.
<i>De côr</i> , by heart.	<i>Verdadeiramente</i> , truly.
<i>A's vêzes</i> , sometimes, from time to time.	<i>Dentro</i> , within.
	<i>Devagar</i> , softly.

CHAP. VII.

Of the Prepositions.

Prepositions are a part of speech indeclinable, most commonly set before a noun, a pronoun, or verb.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection :

Genitive.

- Antes do dia*, before day-break.
Diante de Deus, before God.
Dentro da igreja, within the church.
De trás do palácio, behind the palace.
Debáxo da mesa, under the table.
Em cima da mesa, upon the table.
Alem, besides.
Alem dos mares, on that side of the seas.
Alem disso, besides that, moreover.
Alem de que, idem.
Aquem, or *dáquem dos mares*, on this side of the seas.
Ao redor, or *em contorno da cidade*, round about the city.
Perto de Londres, near London.
Acêrca daquéllo negócio, concerning that affair.
Fôra da casa, out of the house.
Fôra de perigo, out of danger.
Fôra de si, out of one's wits.

This preposition governs also a nominative : as, fôra seu irmão, except his brother, or, his brother excepted.

- De frônte de minha casa*, over-against my house.
De frônte da igreja, facing the church.
Depois de cea, after supper.

Dative.

- Quanto aquéllo*, with respect to that.
Pegado á murálha, close to the wall.

Désde o bico do pé até á cabeça, from top to toe.

Accusative.

Peránte o juiz, before the judge.

E'ntre, between, among, or amongst.

E'ntre os homens, among men.

Sobre a mesa, upon the table.

Conforme, or *segundo a ley*, according to the law.

Por amor de Deos, for God's sake.

Pelo mundo, through the world.

Pela rua, through the streets.

Pelas terras, through the lands.

Por grande que seja, let it be never so great.

Contra elles, against them.

Tráz o templo, behind the temple.

Duránte, during ; as, *duránte o inverno*, during the winter.

We shall be more particular about prepositions when we examine their construction.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.

A Conjunction is an indeclinable part of speech, which serves to join the members and parts of speech together, in shewing the dependency of relation and coherency between the words and sentences.

Some conjunctions are copulative, which join, and, as it were, couple two terms together ; as, *e*, and : *Portuguêses e Inglêses*, Portuguese and English.

Some are disjunctive, which shew separation or division ; as, *nem*, nor, neither ; *ou*, either, or. Example ; *nem este, nem aquêlle*, neither this, nor that ; *ou este, ou aquêlle*, either this or that ; *nem mais, nem menos*, neither more nor less ; *quer o faça, quer não, tudo para mim he o mesmo*, it is all one to me whether he does it, or no ; *quer seja verdade, quer não*, whether it be true, or no ; *nem se quer hum*, never a one.

The

The adverbative denote restriction, or contrariety ; as, *mas*, or *pórem*, but ; *comtúdo*, yet, however ; *mas ántes*, or *pello contrário*, nay.

The conjunctions conditional suppose a condition, and serve to restrain and limit what has just been said ; as, *se*, if ; *com condiçám que*, *com isto que*, *dádo caso que*, provided that, or upon condition that, or in case that, &c.

The concessive, which shew the assent we give to a thing ; as, *embóra*, or *seja embóra*, well and good ; *está feito*, done, agreed.

The causal shew the reason of something ; as, *porque*, for, or because, or why.

The concluding denote a consequence drawn from what is before ; as, *lógó* or *por consequência*, therefore, then, or consequently.

The transitive, which serve to pass from one sentence to another ; as, *álem disso*, moreover, or besides that ; *sobre tudo*, or *em summa*, after all, upon the whole, in the main ; *a propósito*, now I think on't, or now we are speaking of that.

There are others of a different sort ; as, *se quer*, or *áo ménos*, at least ; *aindaque*, although ; *de sorte que*, so that ; *ántes quero pedir que furtar*, I'll rather ask than steal ; *ántes morreréi que dizer volo*, I'll rather die than tell you ; *já que*, since, &c.

To the above-mentioned parts of speech grammarians have added *Interjections*, which are particles serving to denote some passion or emotion of the mind ; but there is another sort, which may be called demonstrative ; as, *aquí* and *lá* ; Ex. *éste homem aquí*, this man ; *aquella molhér lá*, that woman, &c. and some others continuative, because they denote continuation in the speech ; as, *com effeito*, in effect ; *álem disso*, besides ; *óra vejámos*, now let us see ; *finalmente fúmonos embóra*, and so, sir, we went away. To which we may add those invented to imitate the sounds of dumb creatures, and the noise which is occasioned by the clashing of bodies against one another ; as, *záz*, *tráz*, thwack-thwack, &c.

Interjective Particles.

Of Joy.

*Ha, ha, ha ! Ha, ha, ha !**Oh que gosto ! Oh joy !*

Of Grief.

*Ay ! Alas ! ah !**Ay de mim ! Woe is me ! lack !**Méu Déos ! My God !*

Of Pain.

*Ay ! Ay !**Oh ! Oh !*

To encourage.

<i>Animo !</i>	} Come, come on !
<i>Ora vámos !</i>	

To call.

O, olá, Ho, hey, hip !

Of admiration or surprise.

*O, O lá, ah ! Lack-a-day.**Apré ! Heyday !*

Of aversion.

<i>Irra !</i>	} Away, away with, fye !
<i>Náda !</i>	
<i>Fora !</i>	

For making people go out of the way, or stand away.
Guardem-se, or arrêdem se ! Have a care, clear the
 way, or stand away !

For shouting.

Viva ! Huzza !

Of silence.

Caláivos ! Hush ! Peace !

Of cursing and threatening.

Ai, guái ! Woe !

For derision.

Ah ! Ah ! oh ! oh ! oh !

Of wishing.

*O provêra a Déos ! Would to God !**Oxalá !*

Oxalá! or *hah!* O that!
O se! Would!

The interjection *O* serves for different emotions of the mind, as admiration, grief, wish, &c. and sometimes is used ironically, but differently uttered, according to the emotion which it expresses.

Some Abbreviations used in the Portuguese Language.

An ^{to}	<i>António</i>	Anthony
Seb ^{am}	<i>Sebastião</i>	Sebastian
B ^{mo} P ^e	<i>Beatíssimo Pádre</i>	The most blessed Father
Cap ^m	<i>Capitão</i>	Captain
Comp ^a	<i>Companhia</i>	Company
Corr ^o	<i>Carréo</i>	Post
D.	<i>Dom</i>	Don
D ^r , D ^{or}	<i>Doutér</i>	Doctor
D ^s	<i>Déos</i>	God
D ^o , D ^a	<i>Ditto, ditta</i>	Said
Ex ^{mo} , Ex ^{ma}	<i>Excellentíssimo, ma</i>	Most excellent
V. E.	<i>Vossa excellência</i>	Your Excellence
V. S.	<i>Vossa senhoria</i>	Your Lordship
V. A.	<i>Vossa altêsa</i>	Your Highness
V. M. or V ^{mce}	<i>Vossa mercê</i>	You
V. P.	<i>Vossa paternidade</i>	Your Paternity
Vmag ^{de}	<i>Vossa magestade</i>	Your Majesty
S.	<i>Santo</i>	Saint
Fran ^{co}	<i>Francisco</i>	Francis
G ^{de}	<i>Guárde</i>	Save
J. H. S.	<i>Jesus</i>	Jesus
M ^s a ^s	<i>Muitos annos</i>	Many Years
M ^c	<i>Mestre</i>	Master
S ^{or} , S ^{ra}	<i>Senhór, óra</i>	Sir, Lady
R ^{mo}	<i>Reverendíssimo</i>	Most Reverend
P ^a	<i>Pará</i>	For
Q'	<i>Que</i>	That
Q ^{de}	<i>Quándo</i>	When
Q ^m	<i>Quem</i>	Who
Q ^{to}	<i>Quánto</i>	How much
Supp ^{te}	<i>Supplicante</i>	Petitioner
Gen ^{al}	<i>General</i>	General
Tent ^e	<i>Tenente</i>	Lieutenant
V. G.	<i>Vérbi grátia</i>	For Example

And many others, that must be learned by use.

A NEW
P O R T U G U E S E
G R A M M A R.

P A R T II.

C H A P I.

Of the Division of Syntax.

SYNTAX is a Greek word, by the Latins called *construction*; and it signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first, of Order or Arrangement; the second, of Concordance; the third, of Government. The Syntax of Order or Arrangement, is the fit disposition of words in a sentence. The Syntax of Concordance, is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective, or the nominative with the verb. The Syntax of Government, is when one part of speech governs another.

For

For the sake of those who, perhaps, have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Portuguese construction.

I. *Of the Order of Words.*

1. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is generally ranged in the first place; it may be either a noun or pronoun, as, *Francisco escreve*, Francis writes; *eu fállo*, I speak.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction; as, *Pédro e Paulo lem*, Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb; as, *os estudantes morigerados e diligétes estudão*, the obedient and diligent scholars do study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article always takes the first place.

5. Sometimes an infinitive is put for a noun, and stands for a nominative; as *o dormir faz bem* sleeping does one good: and sometimes a verb with its case; as, *he ácto de humanidade ter compaixão dos afflictos*, to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood; as, *amo*, where you understand *eu*; and so of the other persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verb, whose accidents and circumstances it explains; as, *Pédro ama por extrêmo a glória*, Peter is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it; they may be one, or many, according to the nature of the action; as, *eu amo a Pédro*, I love Peter.

Fáço

Faço presente de hum livro a Paulo, I make a present of a book to Paul.

9. The preposition is always put before the case it governs; as, *perto de casa*, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent; as, *Pédro o qual estúda*, Peter who studies.

II. Of Concordance.

1. The adjectives agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case; as, *homem virtuoso*, a virtuous man; *bella molher*, a handsome woman; *sumptuosos palácios*, &c. sumptuous palaces, &c.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective belonging to them must be put in the plural; as, *tanto el réy como a rainha montados a cavallo parecem bem*, both the king and the queen look well when they ride.

3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, or to be of different genders, the adjective common to both, agrees in number and gender with the last; as, *elle tinha os olhos e a boca aberta*, or *elle tinha a boca e os olhos abertos*, his eyes and mouth were opened. *As lagoas e rios estavam congelados*, the ponds and rivers were frozen.

4. But when there is one or many words between the last noun and the adjective, that adjective (common to all) agrees with the noun masculine, though the last noun be feminine; and if the nouns are in the singular, then the adjective common shall be put in the plural number and masculine gender; as, *o rio e a lagoa estavam congelados*; the pond and river were frozen. *O trabalho, a industria, e a fortuna unidos*; pains, industry, and fortune joined together.

5. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and person.

6. The relative *qual* with the article agrees entirely with the antecedent; but without the article
and

and denoting an absolute quality, it agrees with what follows; as, *aquella coração o qual*, &c. that heart which, &c. *Considerando quâes serião as condiçôens*, &c. considering which would be the conditions, &c.

7. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, *a que senbóra pertence vme?* *élle respondeo*, *pertênço á rainha*: To what lady do you belong, sir? and he answered, I belong to the queen.

III. Of the Dependence of the Parts of Speech on one another.

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive, expressed or understood, by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb active, or on a preposition.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition by which it is governed; as, *párto de Rôma*, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts: the dative is common, as it were, to all nouns and verbs; the vocative only points out the person to whom you speak.

I now come to the Construction of the several parts of speech.

C H A P. II.

Of the Syntax of Articles.

BEFORE we come to the syntax of the articles, remember that *o, a, os, as,* are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns, but not when joined to the verbs.

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice that every time they render *o, a,* by *illum, illam, illud;* or by *eum, eam, id;* and *os, as,* by *illos, illas, illa;* or by *eos, eas, ea;* they are relative pronouns.

1. The article is used before the names of the species or things which can be spoken of; therefore nouns of substances, arts, sciences, plays, metals, virtues, and vices, having no article before them in English, require the article in Portuguese; as,

O ouro e a prata não podem fazer feliz ao homem, gold and silver cannot make the happiness of man.

A virtude não he compatível com o vicio, virtue cannot agree with vice.

A philosophia he huma sciencia muito nobre, philosophy is a very noble science.

Joguemos as cartas, let us play at cards.

2. The article is not placed before a substantive which is followed by the adjective of number that stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name; as, *Joseph Primeiro,* Joseph the First.

3. When a book or some part of it, as chapter, page, &c. is quoted, the adjective of number may come either before or after the substantive; but if it comes after, the two words are construed without article; as, *livro primeiro, capítulo segundo,* &c. book i. chapter ii. If the adjective of number comes

comes before the substantive, it takes the article ; as, *o primeiro livro*, the first book.

4. *O* placed before *que* signifies *what* or *which* ; as, *fáça o que quizer*, let him do what he likes ; *o que eu fiz*, which I did.

5. The article is never made use of before proper names of men, women, gods, goddesses, saints.

6. The article is not used in Portuguese before the pronouns possessive relative ; as, *de quem he esta casa ? he minha, he tua*, &c. whose house is this ? it is mine, it is thine, &c.

7. When a mount's, mountain's or hill's name, is preceded by the word *monte*, it takes neither article or preposition ; as, *o Monte Atlante*, Mount Atlas ; *os Montes Pireneos*, the Pirenean Mountains ; but after the word *serra*, a ridge of hills, it takes the article ; as, *a Serra da Estrella*, Mount Strella ; *Serra do Potófi*, Mount Potofi ; however, they say, also, *Serra Lióa*.

8. The noun of the measure, weight, and the number of the things that have been bought, requires the articles ; as, *o trigo vende-se tanto o alquiere*, wheat is sold so much a peck, three quarts and one pint.

A manteiga vende-se tanto o arratél, butter cost so much a pound.

Os ovos vendem-se tanto a dúzia, eggs are sold so much a dozen.

9. No article is used with proper names of persons and planets, except *a terra*, the earth ; *o sol*, the sun ; *a lua*, the moon.

10. When proper names are used in a determinate sense, that is, when they are applied to particular objects, then they take the article ; *o Deus dos Christãos*, the God of Christians ; *o Archimedes de Inglaterra*, the Archimedes of England. The proper names of renowned poets and painters keep also the article ; as, *o Camóens*, *o Pópe*, *o Tázzo*, *o Ticiáno*, &c.

11. The

11. The indefinite article *de* is used before nouns following one of this, *sorte*, *spécie*, *género*, and any other noun of which they express the *kind*, *character*, *quality*, and *nature*: which sort of nouns are usually Englished by an adjective, or even by the substantive itself placed adjectively, and making together, as it were, but a word compound; as, *Dor de cabeça*, the head ach; *húma sorte de fruto*, a sort of fruit; *fallar de tólo*, a foolish speech.

Sometimes the English adjective may be made by an adjective too in Portuguese, as in the last example *húm fallar tólo*, a foolish speech; but sometimes too the Portuguese expresses the English adjective by a substantive of the same signification with *de* before the other noun, though they have an adjective of the same nature as the English adjective; as, *o diábo de minha molhér*, my devilish wife; and sometimes the adjective is used by them substantively, or the substantive is understood; as, *o velháco de meu filho*, my rascally son; *a velháca de sua mãy*, his or her rascally mother. Finally they also make use of the definite article; as, *o diábo do homem*, or *da molhér*, the devilish man or woman; *a póbre da molhér*, the poor woman, &c.

12. Nouns are used without article in the following cases:

1st. At the title of a performance, and in the middle of sentences, where they characterise in a particular manner the person or thing spoken of, in which case the English use especially the particle *a*; as.

Discúrso sobre as obrigações da religião natural, a discourse concerning the obligations of natural religion.

Primeira parte, the first part.

O conde de Clermont, príncipe do Sangue, morreu, &c. the count of Clermont, a prince of the blood, died, &c.

O S. António, não de noventa peças, the St. Anthony; a ninety gun ship.

2dly. In sentences of exclamation; as,

As más bellas flores são as que menos durão; qualquer chuva as desfalece, o vento as murcha, o sol as queima, e acaba de secar; sem fallar numa infinidade de insectos que as perseguem e deitão a perder; natural e verdadeira imagem da belléza das senhóras! the hand-somest flowers last but a very short time; the least rain tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them, and completes the drying of them; without mentioning an infinite number of insects that spoil and hurt them: a natural and true image of the ladies beauty!

3dly. When they meet with a noun of number in an indefinite sense; as, *mil soldados de cavállo contra cem infantes*, a thousand horse against an hundred foot.

Tenho lido dous poétas, I have read two poets, that is, any pair out of all that ever existed.

But before a noun of number, in a definite sense, it would take the article; as,

Tenho lido os dous poétas, I have read both poets; because this plainly indicates a definite pair, of whom some mention has been made already.

Os cem infantes que combaterão contra os mil de cavállo, que, &c. the hundred foot that fought with the thousand horse, that, &c.

4thly. After the verb *ser*, when it signifies to become, and after *ser tomado por*, to be accounted; *passar por*, to pass for; as, *élle será doutor com o tempo*, he will become a doctor in time; *élle passa por marinheiro*, he passes for a sailor.

When the adjective is used substantively, then it must have the neuter Portuguese article *o* before it; as,

O verde offende menos a vista que o vermelho, green hurts the eye less than red.

There are also some adverbs preceded by the neutral article *o*; as the following, *o melhor que eu puder*, the best I will be able; *o menos que for possível*, the less it will be possible.

Articles are repeated in Portuguese before as many nouns (requiring the article) as there are in the sentence; as,

O ouro, a prata, a saúde, as honras, e os deleites não podem fazer feliz ao homem que não tem ciência nem virtude, gold, silver, health, honours, and pleasures, cannot make a man happy without wisdom and virtue.

The article *o* is put before the word *senhor*, sir, or my lord; as,

O senhor duque, my lord duke; *o senhor presidente*, my lord the president; *os senhores*, the gentlemen; *dos senhores*, of the gentlemen.

You must observe the same rule for the feminine article *a*, which is to be prefixed to *senhora*, my lady, or madam; as, *a senhora duquesa*, or *condessa de*, &c. my lady duchess, or countess of, &c.

The article is never used in Portuguese as it is in English, before *mais* more, or *menos* less, in the following sentences, *quanto mais vivemos, tanto mais aprendemos*, the longer we live, the more we learn; *quanto mais hum hydrópico bebe, mais sede tem*, the more an hydropick drinks, the more thirsty he is; *quanto mais hum homem he pobre, quanto menos cuidados tem*, the poorer people are, the less care they have, &c.

Sometimes the English particle *to*, before infinitives, is rendered in Portuguese by the article *o*; as, *he fácil o dizer, o ver*, &c. it is easy to say, to see, &c.

In a word, the natural associators with articles are those common appellatives, which denote the several genera and species of beings, or those words which, though indefinite, are yet capable, through the article, of becoming definite. Therefore Apollonias makes

makes it part of the pronoun's definition, to refuse coalescence with the article; and it would be absurd to say *o eu*, the I; or *o tu*, the thou; because nothing can make those pronouns more definite than they are.

N. B. When the adjective *hum*, *huma*, is used as an article in Portuguese, it respects our primary perception, and denotes individuals as unknown; but the articles *o*, *a*, respect our secondary perception, and denote individuals as known. To explain by an example: I see an object pass by which I never saw till then; what do I say? *Ali vái hum pobre com huma barba comprida*, there goes a beggar with a long beard. The man departs and returns a week after; What do I say then? *Ali vái o pobre da barba comprida*, there goes the beggar with the long beard.

CHAP. III.

Of the Syntax of Nouns; and first, of the Substantives.

WHEN two or more substantives come together without a comma between them, they all govern each the next in the genitive, the first governing the second, the second the third in the same case, and so on; (that is, the first is always followed by the preposition *de*, or by the article before the next noun) but that genitive can never come in Portuguese before the noun that governs it, as in English:

A philosophia de Newton, Newton's philosophy.

As guardas do príncipe, the prince's guards.

A porta da casa, the house-gate.

Eis aquí a casa do companheiro do irmão de minha molher, here is my wife's brother's partner's house.

When two substantives singular are the nominative of a verb, this must be put in the plural; as, *mêu irmão e mêu pái estão no campo*, my brother and my father are in the country.

If the nominative is a collective name, the verb is always put in the singular; as, *tôda a cidade assistio*, all the city was present.

Of the Syntax of Adjectives.

Of adjectives, some are put before the noun, and some after; and others may be put indifferently, either before or after.

The pronouns adjective possessive, *mêu, teu, seu, &c.* and adjectives of number, come before the substantive as in English. Ex. *Mêu pái*, my father; *a sua casa*, his house; *dúas peças*, two people; *o primeiro homem*, the first man.

But when the adjective of number stands for a surname, or meets with a proper or Christian name, it comes after the substantive, without the article; as, *João V.* John the fifth.

These following Adjectives come after the Substantive.

1st. Verbal adjectives and participles; as, *hum homem divertido*, a comical or merry man; *huma molher estimada*, a woman esteemed.

2dly. Adjectives of names of nations; as, *hum mathematico Inglês*, an English mathematician; *hum alfaiate Francês*, a French taylor; *música Italiana*, Italian musick.

3dly. Adjectives of colour; as, *hum vestido negro*, a black suit of cloaths; *hum capôte vermêlo*, a red cloak, &c.

4thly.

4thly. Adjectives of figure; as, *húma mēsa redonda*, a round table; *hum câmpo triangular*, a triangular field, &c.

5thly. Adjectives expressing some physical or natural quality; such are *quēte*, hot; *frío*, cold; *húmido*, wet; *corcovádo*, hunch-backed, &c.

Most other adjectives are placed before or after the substantive; as, *santo*, holy; *verdadeiro*, true, &c.

If the substantive has three or more adjectives belonging to it, they must absolutely be put after it with the enclitic *e* before the last, which must likewise be observed, even when there be but two adjectives; for the Portuguese don't say, *húma desagradável enfadonha obra*, &c. but *húma obra desagradável e enfadonha*, &c. a disagreeable, tedious work.

Of adjectives, some always require after them either a noun or a verb, which they govern; as, *digno de louvôr*, praise-worthy; *digno de ser amado*, worthy to be loved; *capáz de ensinár*, capable to teach; and these have always the particle *de* after them.

Some will be used absolutely without being ever attended by any noun or verb; as, *prudente*, wise; *incurável*, incurable, &c.

Others may be construed both with and without a noun, which they govern; as, *ella he húma molhêr insensível*, she is a woman without any sensibility; *ella he insensível ao amor*, she is insensible and a stranger to the passion of love.

The following adjectives, which require the preposition *de* before the next infinitive, govern the genitive case. Observe, that some of them require in English the preposition *at* or *with* before the next noun.

Digno, worthy: as, *elle he digno de louvôr*, he is worthy of praise. This adjective is sometimes followed by *que*; as, *digna que seu nóme fosse*, &c. her name deserved to be, &c.

Indigno, unworthy ; as, *indigno da estimação que faço d'elle*, unworthy of the esteem which I have for him.

Capáz, capable ; *incapáz*, incapable ; as, *capáz, ou incapáz de servir a própria pátria*, capable or incapable to serve one's country.

Notádo, charged ; as, *notádo de avaréza*, charged with avarice.

Contênte, glad ; as, *estôu contênte do succêso que elle teve*, I am glad or overjoyed at his success.

Cançado, tired ; as, *cançado de estudar*, tired of studying.

Dezejóso, greedy ; as, *dezejóso de glória*, greedy of glory, &c. as likewise adjectives signifying fullness, emptiness, plenty, want, desire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting.

All adjectives signifying inclination, advantage and disadvantage, profit or disprofit, pleasure or displeasure, due, submission, resistance, likeness, govern the dative case ; as, *insensível ás affrontas*, insensible of affronts ; *ser inclinado á alguma cousa*, to be inclined to something ; *nocivo a saúde*, hurtful to health.

These adjectives signifying dimensions, as, *alto*, high, tall ; *largo*, wide, broad ; and *comprido*, long, come after the words of the measure of magnitude, both in English and Portuguese ; but they are preceded by *de* in Portuguese ; as, *des pes de largo*, ten feet broad ; *seis pes de comprido*, six feet long, &c. they also turn the adjective of the dimension into its substantive, with the word of the measure before : but the word of the dimension is always preceded by *de* ; as *seis pes de altura*, six feet high ; *dez pes de largura*, ten feet broad.

The adjectives signifying experience, knowledge, or science, require *em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, after them ; as *versádo nos livros*, versed in books ; *experto na medicina*, expert in medicine.

The cardinal nouns require the genitive case after them ; as, *hum dos dous*, one of the two.

The ordinal nouns, as well as the collective and proportional, likewise require the genitive after them; as, *o primeiro dos réys*, the first of the kings, *hum duzia de ovos*, a dozen of eggs, &c.

Of the Syntax of the Comparatives and Superlatives.

The comparative is not made of the positive in Portuguese, as in Latin and English, but by adding *máis* more, or *ménos* less, which govern *que*, signifying *than*; as, *o todo he mayor que a parte*, the whole is greater than the part; *o seu amante he máis bello, máis moço, e máis rico que ella*, her lover is handsomer, younger, and richer than she is; *eu acho-o agora ménos bello do que quando o compréi*, I now find it less handsome than when I brought it.

The simple comparatives *máis*, and *ménos*, meeting with a noun of number, are attended by *de*; as, *ainda que elle tivésse máis de cem homens*, though he had above an hundred men; *elle tem máis de vinte annos*, he is above twenty.

When the comparison is made by *so as*, *as much as*, they must be rendered by *cómo*.

Example.

O meu livro he tão bello cómo o vósso, my book is as handsome as yours; *hum príncipe não he tão poderoso cómo hum réy*, a prince is not so powerful as a king.

They put sometimes *muito* and *pouco* before the simple comparatives *máis* and *ménos*; as, *elle hé muito máis grande*, he is taller by much; *elle hé pouco máis grande*, he is taller by little, &c.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Syntax of Pronouns.

WE have sufficiently explained the pronouns in the first part; and to avoid any further repetition, I shall only observe, that,
 1st. The English make use of the verb *to be*, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they*; it is *I*; it is *he*, &c. In Portuguese the verb *to be*, on this occasion, is not impersonal; and they express, it is *I*; by *sou eu*; it is *thou*, *es tu*; it is *he*, *he elle*; it is *we*, *somos nos*; it is *ye*, *sois vós*; it is *she*, *he ella*; it is *they*, masc. *são elles*; it is *they*, fem. *são ellas*; and in like manner through all the tenses; as, it was *I*, *era eu*; it was *we*, *eramos nos*, &c.

2^{dly}. The Portuguese seldom make use of the second person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends, or speaking to God, or a father and mother to their children, or to servants; thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by *vm^{ce} tem razão*, instead of *têndes razão*; *cómo está vm^{ce}?* how do you do? In the plural they say *vm^{ce}*.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *vm^{ce} V. S. V. E.* &c. it does not agree in gender with *vm^{ce} V. S. &c.* but with the person we speak to or we speak of, therefore they speak to a lady or woman thus; *vm^{ce} he muito bella*, you are very beautiful; and to a man they say, *vm^{ce} he muito bom*, you are very good.

3^{dly}. *Nos* is generally used by the king, a governor, or a bishop, in their writings, and then it signifies in English *we*; as, *nos mandamos*, or *mandamos*, we command; but *nos* before or after a verb in Portuguese

tuguese signifies *us* in English ; as, *elle nos disse*, he told us ; *dai nos tempo*, give us time.

4thly. *Vós* is also applied to a single person, but only speaking to inferiors, or between familiar friends, to avoid the word thou, *tu*, which would be too gross and unmannerly.

5thly. The pronouns conjunctive are joined to verbs, and stand for the dative and accusative cases : as, *deu-me*, he gave me ; *ama-me*, love me ; but the pronouns personal are used instead of them when they are preceded by a preposition, and not immediately followed by a verb ; *elle fallou contra mim*, he spoke against me.

6thly. When *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are joined to the present infinitive mood, they change the last *r* of it into *lo*, *la*, &c. thus ; *pará ama-lo*, to love him ; *pará vê-la*, or, *vê-las*, to see her, or them, &c. and when they are joined to the preterperfect indicative of the verb *fazer*, and some others that have that tense ending in *iz*, they change the last *z* of them into *lo*, *la*, &c. as, *fi-lo*, I did it ; *elle fé-lo* he did, or made it, &c. but when they are joined to the future indicative of any verb with the auxiliary verb *haver*, then they change the terminations *rei*, *rás*, &c. of the futures into *lo*, *la*, &c. as *fá-lo-hei*, I'll do it ; *ama-lo-hei*, I'll love him, &c.

Remarks on the Pronouns.

1st. *Him*, or *it*, which follow the verb in English, must be expressed in Portuguese, as in the following examples:

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it must be expressed in Portuguese by *o* before or after the verb. Exam. I call him or it, *eu o chamo*; or *eu chamo-o*.

When *him* or *it* in English follow the verb in the first person of the singular number, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision of the last consonant
of

of the verb. Exam. Thou callest him *or it*, *tu o chãmas*, or *tu chãma lo*.

When *him* or *it* is joined with the third person singular of a verb, it may be expressed by *o* before or after the verb. Ex. He calls him *or it*, *êlle o chãma*, or *êlle chãma-o*.

When *him* or *it* is with a verb in the first person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision as in the second case. Ex. We call him *or it*, *nos o chamãmos*, or *nos chamãmo-lo*.

When *him* or *it* is after a verb in the second person plural, it is expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *lo* after it, making an elision, &c. Ex. You call him *or it*, *vos o chamãis*, or *vos chamãi-lo*.

When *him* or *it* follows the verb in the third person plural, it may be expressed in Portuguese either by *o* before the verb, or *no* after it. Examp. They call him *or it*, *êlles o chãmão*, or *êlles chãmão-no*.

2dly. *Her* or *it* after a verb in English is expressed in Portuguese by *a*, according to the rules just now proposed.

3dly. *Them* after a verb is expressed in Portuguese by *os* for the masculine, and by *as* for the feminine, according to the gender and the rules proposed.

4thly. The words *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, must always be put after the gerunds, but not before the infinitives. Examp. Seeing him, we must not say, *o vendo*, but *vêndo-o*, because *vêndo* is a gerund. To see him, instead of saying *parã ver-o*, you must say *parã o ver*, is in the infinitive.

5thly. The words *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, must always be put after the verbs. Examp. To see him, you must say, *parã ve-lo*, or *parã o ver*, and not *parã lo ver*. The same words must follow also the adverb *êis*; and so you must say, *ei-lo aquí*, here he is; *ei-lo ali*, there he is; *ei-los aquí*, here they are; *ei la ali*, there
the

she is; *ei-las ali*, there they are. They follow likewise the persons of the verbs; as, *eu fi-lo*; *tu fizéste-lo*; *elle fe-lo*; *nos fizem-lo*, &c. I made it, &c.

Note, that I have been speaking of the words *o, a, os, as, lo, la, los, las*, and not of the articles *o, a, os, as*; because when those words precede, and sometimes when they follow the verbs, they are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

CHAP. V.

Of the Syntax of Verbs.

THE verbs through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they must agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed when we say, *eu amo, tu cantas*; understood when we say, *canto, digo*, &c.

The Portuguese, as well as English, use the second person plural, though they address themselves but to a single person.

Example.

Meu amigo, vós não tendes razão, my friend, you are in the wrong.

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say, *vmce tem razão*, sir, you are in the right.

The verb active governs the accusative; as, *amo a virtude*, I love virtue.

The

The verb passive requires an ablative after it ; as *os doutos são envejados pelos ignorantes*, the learned are envied by the ignorant.

You must observe, that there is in Portuguese another way of making the passive, by adding the relative *se* to the third person singular or plural ; as *ama-se a Deus*, God is loved.

When there are two nominatives singular before a verb, it must be put in the plural number.

When a noun is collective, the verb requires the singular, not the plural ; as, *a gente está olhando*, the people are looking.

Syntax of the auxiliary Verbs.

The verb *ter* is made use of to conjugate all the compound tenses of verbs ; as, *ténho amado, tinha amado*, I have loved, I had loved.

Ter signifies also to possess, to obtain ; as *ténho dinheiro*, I have money ; *tem muita capacidade*, he has a great deal of capacity.

Haver, in account books and trade, expresses credit or discharge.

Haver is also taken impersonally in Portuguese, and it signifies in English *there be* ; as *há muito ouro no México*, there is a great quantity of gold in Mexico.

Haver-se, made reciprocal, is the same as *to behave, to act* ; as *houve-se o governador com tal prudência, que*, &c. the governor behaved with such wisdom, that, &c.

We have already observed the difference betwixt *ser* and *estar*.

The verb *estar* is also used to conjugate the other verbs, chiefly expressing action ; as *estou lendo, estou escrevendo*, I am reading, I am writing.

Estar, with the preposition *em*, in, or with *no, na, nos, nas*, signifies *to be present in a place* ; as, *estou no campo*, I am in the country.

Estar,

Estar, with the preposition *para*, denotes the inclination of doing what the following verb expresses, but without a full determination ; as, *estou para ir-me em Londres*, I have a mind to go and live in London.

Estar, with the preposition *por*, and the infinitive of the verb following, means, that the thing expressed by the verb is not yet done ; as *isto está por escrever*, this is not yet written ; *isto está por alimpár*, this is not yet cleaned ; *estar por alguém* signifies to agree with one, or to be of his opinion.

N. B. See in the Third Part the different significations of the verbs *estar* and *haver*.

When *ser* signifies the possessive of one thing, it governs the genitive ; as, *a rua he d' el-rey*, the street belongs to the king ; *esta casa he de meu pay*, this house belongs to my father.

Em ser is taken for a thing to be whole or entire, without any alteration or mutilation ; as, *as fazendas estão em ser*, the goods are not sold.

Of the Syntax of Verbs active, passive, &c.

When two verbs come together, with or without any nominative case, then the latter must be in the infinitive mood ; as, *quer v^{me} aprender a fallar Ingléz ?* will you learn to speak English ?

All verbs active govern the accusative ; but if they are followed by a proper name of God, man, or woman, or any noun expressing their qualities or title, then it governs the dative case ; as, *conheço a seu pay*, I know his father ; *Acharamo a João no caminho*, they found John in the road.

All verbs of gesture, moving, going, resting, or doing, as also all the verbs that have the word that goes before, and the word that comes after, both belonging to one thing, require the nominative after them ; as, *Pedro vai errado*, Peter goes on wrong ;
o pobre

o póbre dorme descansádo, the poor sleep without care. Also the verb of the infinitive mood has the same case, when verbs of wishing and the like come after them ; as, *todos dezeitão ser ricos*, every body wishes to be rich ; *antes quisera ser douto que parecêlo*, I had rather be learned than be accounted so.

After verbs the Portuguese express *yes* and *no* by *que sim* and *que não*, Example, *creyo que sim*, I believe yes ; *creyo que não*, I believe not ; *digo que sim*, I say yes ; *cuido que não*, I think not ; *apôsto que sim*, I lay yes ; *queréis apostár que não ?* have you a mind to lay not ?

Verbs signifying grief, compassion, want, remembrance, forgetting, &c. will have the genitive ; as, *pêsame muito da morte de seu irmão*, I am very sorry for the death of your brother ; *elle morre de fome*, he perishes by hunger ; *lêmbre-se do que me disse*, remember what you said to me ; *compadeçi-me das suas desgraças*, I pitied him for his misfortunes ; *esqueci-me de tudo isto*, all this I forgot.

The reciprocals of jeering, boasting, and distrusting, govern also the genitive ; as, *jaçár-se, gloriár-se, picár-se, envergonhár-se*, &c.

All the verbs active govern the dative only when the substantive represents a person ; as, *eu conheço a vmsa*, &c. I know you, &c.

The following verbs belong to this rule of the dative :

Jogár, to play ; as, *jogár ás cartas*, to play at cards ; *jogár aos centos*, to play at picquet ; *jogár ao xadrez*, to play at chess, &c.

Obedecér, desobedecér, agradár, comprazér ; as, *eu obedeco a Deos e el réy*, I obey God and the king ; *comprazéo em tudo aos soldádes*, in all he pleased the soldiers.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an army, company, &c. requires the accusative, but when other things, the dative ; as *elle mandáva a cavallaria*, he commanded the horse ; *o governador man-*
dáu

dou a todos os moradores que se retirássem para suas casas, the governor ordered all the inhabitants to retire into their houses.

Ir, to go ; as, *vou a Paris*, I go to Paris.

Affistir, *ajudar*, *socorrer*, to help ; as, *assistir ao officio divino*, to assist at divine service.

Saudar, to salute, or greet ; as, *elle saudá a todos*, he salutes every body.

Fallar, to speak ; *satisfazer*, to satisfy ; *servir*, to serve ; *favorecer*, to favour ; *ameaçar*, to threaten.

The verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying, pardoning, will have the person in the dative case.

The impersonals *acontecer*, *succeder*, *importar*, *pertencer*, and the like to these, will have often two datives, of person ; as, *a mim me succedeo*, it happened to me ; *a elle lhe convém*, it suits him, or it is convenient for him ; *a elle não lhe importa*, it does not concern him, &c.

All the active verbs require an accusative ; and the Latin verbs which govern the accusative of the things, and the dative of the person, govern generally the same in Portuguese ; as, *escrevei o que digo a vósso irmão*, write to your brother what I do say.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying, will have an accusative of the doer or sufferer, and sometimes verbs neuter will have an accusative of the thing ; as, *gozar saúde*, to enjoy health ; *pêço este favôr*, I ask this favour ; *elle toca muito bem flauta*, he plays very well on the flute ; *curar huma doença*, to cure a sickness.

Verbs passive, and the greatest part of the reciprocals, require the ablative, with *de*, *do*, *da*, *dos*, *das*, *por*, or *pello*, *pella*, *pellos*, *pellas* ; as, *fuí chamado por el réy*, I was called by the king ; *retirei me da cidade*, I retired from the city ; *elle foi amado do povo*, he was loved by the people. But you must except *acostar se*, which requires a dative preceded by *a* ; *encostar se*, which sometimes will have a dative,

tive, and sometimes an ablative preceded by *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, or *nas* ; *metér-se*, which requires an ablative ; *sentár-se*, *introduzír-se*, &c. which must have the ablative with the preposition *em*, *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*.

The verbs joined with a noun which they govern, must have the infinitive with *de* ; as, *ténho vontade de rír*, I am near laughing.

The price of any thing bought or sold, or bartered, will have the accusative with *por*.

The verb *por-se*, when it signifies *to begin*, must have the infinitive, with the particle *a* ; as, *por-se a chorár*, to begin to cry.

Verbs of plenty, filling, emptying, loading, unloading, will have the ablative ; as, *ésta terra abunda de trigo* ; this country abounds with corn ; *élle está carregádo de misérias*, he is loaded with calamities.

Verbs denoting custom, help, beginning, exhortation, invitation, require the infinitive with the particle *a* ; as, *ajudár a semear*, to help sowing ; *convidou me a ceár*, he invited me to supper.

Verbs that signify distance, receiving, or taking away, will have the ablative ; as, *a Madeíra dista de Marrócos 320 milhas*, Madera lies 320 miles from Morocco.

Note, that the verbs signifying receiving, or taking away, generally require the ablative of the person ; but they sometimes require an accusative : particularly the verb *recebér*, when it signifies *to welcome*, or *to entertain* ; as, *élle recebe todos com muito agrádo*, he gives his company a hearty reception, he makes them very welcome.

Verbs denoting obligation, govern the following infinitive with the preposition *a* ; as, *eu o obrigarei a fazer isto*, I will oblige him to do it.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. will have the ablative with *com* ; as *pelejou mais de húma hora com seu irmão*, he quarrelled more than one hour with his brother.

After

After the verb substantive *ser*, to be, *pará* is made use of as well as *a*: the first is employed to denote the use or destination of any thing; as, *está penna he pará escrever*, this pen is to write with. But the particle *a* is used to denote only the action; as, *elle foi o primeiro a fugir*, he was the first to run away.

The verbs of motion to a place always govern the dative; as, *vou a comédia*, I go to the play. Though the verb *voltar*, to return, may also have an accusative, with the preposition *pará*. But the verbs of motion from a place govern the ablative with *de*, *do*, *da*, *dos*, *das*; as, *venho do campo*, I come from the country. If the motion is through a place, then the verbs govern the accusative, with *por*; as, *passarei por Londres*, I will come by the way of London.

Of the Use and Construction of the Tenses.

Though we have spoken at large upon the tenses in the First Part, you must, however, take notice,

1. That they make use of the infinitive and the auxiliary verb *haver*, together with the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, instead of the future indicative; as, *ouvir-lo hei*, I will hear him; and then the *r* of the infinitive is changed into *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*; and sometimes they make use of the infinitive mood and the auxiliary verb *haver*, with the pronouns conjunctive *me*, *te*, *se*, &c. instead of the same future; as, *dar-lhe hei*, I will give him; *agastar se-ha*, he will be angry.

2. That when we find the particle *if*, which in Portuguese is expressed by *se*, before the imperfect indicative, we must generally use the imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese; example, *se eu tivésse*, if I had; *se eu pudésse*, if I could. But sometimes they use the imperfect indicative; as, *disse-lhe que se queria*, &c.; he told him that if he was willing, &c.

3. That the first imperfect subjunctive in Portuguese is also used in a sense that denotes the present, especially in sentences of wishing ; as, *quizéra que Domingo fizesse bom tempo*, I wish it would be fine weather on Sunday. But if the same tense is preceded by *ainda que*, although, then it must be rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive, or by the imperfect indicative ; as, *eu não a quizéra; ainda que tivesse milhoéns de seu*, though she was worth several millions, I would not have her ; *ainda que elle consentisse nisso, não se podia fazer*, although he would consent to it, that could not be done. Lastly, when the first imperfect subjunctive is preceded by *se*, it is sometimes rendered into English by the second imperfect subjunctive ; as, *se elle viesse*, if he should come.

The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive where the Portuguese make use of the second ; as, I had been in the wrong, *não teria tido razão* ; and though they may say *não tivera tido razão*, they may not say *não tivesse tido razão*, to express the English of, *I should have been in the wrong*, or *I had been in the wrong*.

Note, that to express in Portuguese, *though that should be*, we must say, *quando isso fôsse*, and not *seria*.

The Portuguese use the future tense subjunctive after the conjunction *if*, when they speak of a future action ; but the English, the present indicative : example, to-morrow, if I have time, *amanhã se tiver tempo*, and not *se tenho* ; if he comes, we shall see him, *nos o veremos, se elle vier*.

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense as the first : example, the king wills and commands, *el rei quer e ordena* ; I see and I know, *eu vejo e conheço*.

Sometimes the present is made use of, instead of the preter definite in narrations, as, *no mesmo tempo que hia andando, o encontra, o despe, e o ata a huma árvore,*

árvore, as he was going, he meets him, strips him, and ties him to a tree.

When the Portuguese use the infinitive with a third person in the plural, they add *em* to it, and it is generally preceded by *por*, for, and *para*, in order to, that, or to the end that ; as *élles forão enforcados por furtarem*, they were hanged for robbing ; *para serem enformados*, that, to the end that they may be informed ; *para podérem dizer*, that they may be able to say.

Observe, that when the Portuguese put *por* before the first future subjunctive, they speak of a time past ; as, *por fallardes*, because you have spoken. But when they put *para* before it, then they speak of a time to come ; as *para fallármós*, that, or to the end that we may speak, in order to speak.

Of Moods.

All the tenses of the indicative mood may be employed without any conjunction before them ; but they admit also of some. Besides the conjunction *que*, those that may be made use of are *se*, *cómo*, and *quando* ; with some distinction in respect to *se*, because this conjunction is seldom used before the future tense, and then it is governed by a verb signifying ignorance, doubt, or interrogation ; as, *não sei se háo de vir*, I do not know if they shall come ; *estou em dúvida se os inimigos passarão o rio*, I doubt if the enemies will pass the river ; *não pergunto se partirá*, I do not ask if he will set out.

The optative or subjunctive in Portuguese has always some sign annexed ; as, *oxalá, provêra a Deos, ô se !* would to God, I pray God, God grant ! &c. ; *que, para, que, &c.* that, &c.

The particle *que* is not expressed in the present of this mood ; but it is understood in sentences of wishing or praying ; as, *Dêos o faça bom*, let God amend him.

When *que* is between two verbs, the last is not always put in the subjunctive, because, though some say *crêyo que vénha*, I believe he comes; I think it is better to say *crêyo que vem*; but when there is a negation, the verb following *que* must be put in the subjunctive; as, *naõ crêyo que vénha*, I do not believe he will come, *naõ crêyo que vénha tão cedo*, I do not believe he will come so soon.

When the verbs *crer*, to believe, *sabér*, to know, are used interrogatively, and followed by the particle *que*, the next verb is put in the indicative, when the person that asked the question makes no doubt of the thing which is the object in question; as, if knowing that peace is made, I want to know if the people whom I converse with know it too, I will express myself thus, *sabéis vos que está feita a paz?* do you know that peace is made? But if I have it only by a report, and doubt of it, and want to be informed of it, I must ask the question thus, *sabéis vos que a paz esteja feita?* and by no means *sabéis vos que está feita a paz?*

You must observe also, that the present subjunctive of *sabér* is elegantly used when it is attended by a negative, and the particle *que* in this phrase, *naõ que eu saiba*, not that I know of.

All the verbs used impersonally with the particle *que* require the subjunctive; as, *he preciso que elle vénha*, he must come; *convém que isto se faça*, it is convenient that this be done. You must only except such sentences as express any positive assurance, or certainty; as, *he certo que vem*, it is certain that he comes; *sí que está em casa*, I know he is at home.

From these observations it follows, that all the verbs not expressing a positive assurance, or believing, but only denoting *ignorance*, *doubt*, *fear*, *astonishment*, *admiration*, *wishing*, *praying*, *pretension*, or *desire*, govern the subjunctive mood after *que*; as, *duvido que pôssa*, I doubt it is in his power; *têmo que morra*, I am afraid he will die; *admiro me que*

que conjinta, nisso, I wonder he agrees to it, &c.; to all which they add *oxalá*, an Arabic word, signifying *God grant*, which is used in Portuguese before all the tenses of the optative or conjunctive, as well as *práza a Déos*, may it please God; or, *prouvera a Déos*, might it please God.

When *que* is relative, and there is a verb in the imperative or in the indicative, with a negative or interrogation before it, it governs likewise the subjunctive; as *naõ ha cõsa que mais me inquiète*, there is nothing that disturbs me more; *ha cõsa no mundo que me possa dar tanto gôsto?* is there any thing in the world that may give me more pleasure? *allegá-lhe tantas razões que o possam persuadir*, give him so many reasons that he may be persuaded.

The present subjunctive is sometimes rendered into English by the second preterimperfect subjunctive, when it is followed by a verb in the future tense; as, *ainda que eu trabálhe, nunca hei de cançar*, though I should work, I never would be tired.

The Portuguese use specially the same present subjunctive for the future; as in these sentences, and others like:

Naõ duvido que venha, I do not doubt but he will come.

Duvido que o faça, I doubt that, or whether he will do it.

Therefore avoid carefully those faults which foreigners are so apt to make, in considering rather the tense which they want to turn into Portuguese, than the mood which the genius of the language requires.

The present indicative is also used for the future, as well as in English: example, *jantais hoje em casa?* do you dine at home to-day?

Of the Particles governing the Optative or Subjunctive.

The conjunction *que*, that, generally requires the subjunctive after it ; but *antes que*, *primeiro que*, before that, always requires it.

Take notice, that *que* makes all the words to which it is joined become conjunctives, as, *para que*, to the end that ; *bem que*, *ainda que*, &c. *Pósto que*, although ; *até que*, till ; *quando*, *cómo quérque*, which commonly govern the subjunctive. But *com que* *assim* governs the indicative ; as, *com que*, or *com que assim virá amanhã*, so he will come to-morrow.

In Portuguese you must take care how you express *though*, or *although* ; if it is by *ainda que*, you may put either the subjunctive or indicative after it : example ; *ainda que seja homem honrado*, though he is an honest man ; *ainda que elle faz aquillo*, though he does that. But if you render *although* or *though* by *não obstante*, then you must use the infinitive : example, though he is an honest man ; *não obstante ser elle homem honrado* ; though he does this, *não obstante fazer elle isto*.

The impersonal verbs generally govern the subjunctive with *que* ; but with this distinction, when the impersonal is in the present tense or future, of the indicative mood, then it requires the present subjunctive mood ; but when the impersonal, or any other verb taken impersonally, is in any of the preterites indicative, then it governs the imperfect, perfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, according to the meaning of speech ; as, *importa muito que el réy veja todo*, it is of great moment that the king may see all ; *foi conveniente que o principe fosse com elle*, it was convenient that the prince should go with him.

The present subjunctive is likewise construed, when the particle *por* is separated from *que*, by an adjective ; as, *por grande*, *por admirável*, *por dóta que seja*, though he be great, admirable, learned.

An imperative often requires the future of the subjunctive; as, *succeda o que succeder*, or *seja o que for*, happen what shall happen, at all events.

The imperfect subjunctive is repeated in this phrase, and others like, *succedesse, o que succedesse*, let happen what would.

The future of the subjunctive mood follow generally these, *logo que, quando, se, como, &c.*; as, *logo que chegar iremos a passear*, as soon as he comes, we will go and take a walk; *quando vier, estaremos prontos*, when he comes we will be ready.

Observe, that *quando* and *logo que* may also be construed with the indicative mood; as, *quando el rey ve tudo, não o enganao*, when the king sees every thing, he is not deceived; *logo que chegou, falei com elle*, as soon as he came, I spoke with him.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

In Portuguese there is not a general sign before the infinitive, as in English the particle *to*; but there are several particles used before the infinitive, denoting the same as *to* does in English, and they are governed by the preceding verbs or nouns. These particles are the following: *á, para, de, com, em, por, até, depois de*; and the article *o*, when the infinitive serves as a nominative to another verb; as, *o dizer e o fazer são duas cousas*, saying and doing are two different things.

A coming between two verbs, notes the second as the object of the first; as, *a tardança das nossas esperanças nos ensina a mortificar os nossos desejos*, the delay of our hopes teaches us to mortify our desires; *elle começa a discorrer*, he begins to reason.

Para notes the intention or usefulness; as, *a adversidade serve para experimentar a paciência*, adversity serves to try one's patience. *Para* after an adjective denotes its object; as, *está pronto para obedecer*, he is ready to obey.

De is put between two verbs, if the first governs the genitive or ablative; and when the substantive or adjective governs either of these two cases, *de* must go before the following verbs, or infinitive; as, *vênho de ver a meu páy*, I have just seen my father; *he tempo de hir-se*, it is time to go away; *el réy foi servido de mandár*, the king has been pleased to order.

The infinitive is on several occasions governed by prepositions or conjunctions; as, *sem dizer palavra*, without speaking a word: where you may observe it is expressed in English by the participle present; as *nunca se cansa de jogar*, he is never weary of playing; *diverte se em caçar*, he delights in hunting; *elle está doente por trabalhár demasiadamente*, by working too much he is sick; *pérde o seu tempo em passeár*, he loses his time in walking; *hei-de ir-me sem me despedir?* shall I go away without taking my leave?

The infinitive is also used passively; as, *não ha que dizer, que ver, &c.*; there is nothing to be said, seen, &c.

The gerund of any verb active may be conjugated with the verb *estár*, to be, after the same manner as in English; as, *estou escrevêdo*, I am writing; *elle estava dormindo*, he was asleep, &c.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Syntax of Participles and Gerunds.

THE participle in the Portuguese language generally ends in *do*, or *to*; as, *amado, visto, dito, &c.*

The active participles that follow the verb *ter*, to have, must end in *o*; as,

Tenho visto el réy, I have seen the king.

Tênhe

Tenho visto a rainha, I have seen the queen.

Eú tinha amado os livros, I had loved books.

Eú tinha levado as cartas, I had carried the letters.

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking; as, in *Camoens*, Canto 1, Stanza xxix.

E porque como vistes, tem passados,

Na viagem tão ásperos perigos,

Tantos climas, e céos experimentados, &c.

And Canto 2, Stan. LXXVI.

São offerecimentos verdadeiros,

E palavras sincéras, não dobradas,

As que o réy manda a os nobres cavaleiros,

Que tanto mar e terras tem passadas.

If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always to terminate in *o*: example,

El réy tem jantado, the king has dined; *a rainha tem ceado*, the queen has supped; *os vossos amigos tem rido*, your friends have laughed; *minhas irmãs tem dormido*, my sisters have slept.

When the active participle happens to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in *o*; as *o juéz lhe tinha feito cortar a cabeça*, the judge has caused his head to be cut off.

The passive participles which are joined with the tenses of the verb *ser*, to be, agree with the substantive that precedes the verb *ser*; *o capitão foi louvado*, the captain was praised; *a virtude he estimada*, virtue is esteemed; *os preguiçosos são censurados*, the lazy are blamed; *as vossas joyas foram vendidas*, your jewels were sold.

The Portuguese generally suppress the gerunds *having* and *being* before the participles; as, *dito isto*, having said so; *acabado o sermão*, the sermon being ended. This manner of speaking is called by grammarians *ablatives absolute*.

The participle of the present tense in Portuguese has singular and plural, but one termination serves for both genders; as *um homem temente á Déos*, a man

man fearing God ; *húma mólher teménte a Déos*, a woman fearing God ; *hómens teméntes a Déos*, people fearing God.

There are in Portuguese a great many participles which are used substantively ; as, *ignoránte*, *amánte*, *ouvinte*, *estudánte*, &c. ; an ignorant, a lover, an auditor or hearer, a scholar, &c.

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before ; as, *estándo el réy na comédia*, the king being at the play.

CHAP. VII.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

A Preposition is a part of speech which is put fore nouns, and sometimes before verbs, to explain some particular circumstance.

Prepositions may be divided into separable and inseparable. An inseparable preposition is never found but in compound words, and signifies nothing of itself. A separable preposition is generally separated from other words, and signifies something of itself.

The inseparable prepositions are,

Ab and *abs* ; as *abrogár*, to abrogate ; *abstér-se*, to abstain.

Arce, or *archi* ; as, *arcebíspo*, an archbishop ; *archidúque*, an archduke.

Ad ; as, *adventicio*, adventitious.

Am ; as, *ambíguo*, ambiguous ; *ampáro*, protection, shelter.

Circum ; as *circumstância*, circumstance.

Co, as, *cohabitár*, to live together, to cohabit.

Des, serves to express the contrary of the word it is joined to ; as, *desacérto*, mistake ; *desfazér*, to undo ;

do; *desenganár*, to undeceive; are the contrary of *acerto*, *fazér*, and *enganár*.

Dis; as, *dispór*, to dispose; *distinguir*, to distinguish; *distribuir*, to distribute.

Ex; as, *extrahir*, to extract.

In, has commonly a negative or privative sense, denoting the contrary of the meaning of the word it precedes; as, *incapáz*, unable; *infeliz*, unhappy; *inacção*, inaction, &c.; but sometimes it is affirmative, as in Latin.

Observe, that *in* before *r* is changed into *ir*; as, *irregular*, irregular; *irracional*, irrational: before *l*, into *il*; as *illegítimo*, illegitimate; before *m*, *in* is changed into *im*; as *immaterial*, immaterial.

Ob; as, *obviár*; to obviate.

Pos; as, *pospór*, to postpone, or to postpone.

Pre; as, *precedér*, to go before; *predecessór*, an ancestor.

Pro; as, *propór*, to propose; *prometér*, to promise.

Re, is a borrowed particle from the Latins, which generally denotes iteration, or backward action; as, *reedificár*, to rebuild; *repercutir*, to reperate, or strike back.

So; as, *socorrér*, to help, to succour.

Ser; as, *sorrír*, to smile.

Sos; as, *sostér*, to support.

Sóto; as, *sotopór*, to put or lay under.

Sub, or *sob*; as, *subaltérno*, subaltern; *subscrevér*, to subscribe; *sobpéna*, *sobcolór*, &c.

The Arabic article *al*, which is common to all genders and both numbers, is found in the beginning of almost all the words that remain in the Portuguese language from the Arabic, and it is the surest way to distinguish them. But the Portuguese-articles are added to the Arabic nouns, without taking off their article, *al*, as *a almofada*, the cushion; o *Alcarão*, the Coran, &c.

The

The Greek preposition *anti* enters into the composition of a great many Portuguese words, which cannot be set down here. It is enough to observe, that it signifies generally opposite; as in *Antipódas*, Antipodes; *antipápa*, antipope; and sometimes it signifies before; as in *antilóquio*, a preface, a speaking first; but in this last sense it is derived from the Latin preposition *ante*.

Of separable Prepositions.

It is absolutely impossible ever to attain to the knowledge of any language whatever, without thoroughly understanding the divers relations denoted by the prepositions, and the several cases of nouns which they govern; both which relations and cases being arbitrary, vary and differ much in all languages. This only instance will evince it: the English say, *to think of a thing*; the French, *to think to a thing*; the Germans and Dutch, *to think on, or upon a thing*; the Spaniards and Portuguese, *to think in a thing*, &c. Now it will avail an Englishman but little to know that *of* is expressed in Portuguese by *de*, if he does not know which relations *em* and *de* denote in that language; since the Portuguese say, *to think in a thing*, and not *of a thing*; therefore we will treat here of each of them, and of their construction separately.

1st. *A*, or rather *áo, ás, aos*, (at, in, on, &c.) denote the place whither one is going; as,

Eu vou a Londres, I go to London.

Voltar a Portugal, to return; or go back to Portugal.

A, in this sense, is a preposition, but in the next observations, it is a particle.

2dly. *A* denotes time; as, *chegar a tempo*, to arrive in time; *a todo o tempo*, at all times.

3dly. *A* denotes the way of being, or of doing of people; as also their posture, gesture, or action; as

Estar

Estar a sua vontade, to be at one's ease.

A direita, on the right hand ; *a esquerda*, on the left hand.

Viver á sua vontade, to live to one's mind, as one likes.

Andar á pé ou a cavallo, to go on foot, or a horseback.

Montar á cavallo, to ride a horseback.

Correr á redêa solta, to ride full speed.

Trajar á Francêsa, to dress after the French way.

Viver á Inglêza, to live after the English fashion.

Andar á grandes passos, to walk at a great rate.

Andar á passos lentos, to walk very slowly.

4thly. *A* denotes the price of things ; as, *a oito xelins*, at eight shillings. It denotes also the weight : but as the nouns signifying weight are generally used in the plural number, hence it is that they add *s* to *a*, when it is placed before nouns of the feminine gender, and *os* when it precedes nouns of the masculine gender : so they say, *as onças*, by the ounce ; *aos arratéis*, by the pound, &c. *A* denotes also the measure ; as, *med'r a palmos*, to span or measure by the hand extended.

When *a* is preceded by *daqui*, and followed by a noun of time, it denotes the space of time after which something is to be done : as, *el rey partirá daqui a tres dias*, the king will set out three days hence.

5thly. *A* denotes the tools used in working, as likewise the games one plays at ; as, *abrir ao buril*, to grave ; wherein you see they add *o* to *a* ; *trabalhar á candelá*, to do any thing by candle-light ; *a gúlha*, with the needle.

Andar a vela, to sail, or to be under sail.

Jogar á péla, to play at tennis.

Jogar ás cartas, to play at cards ; wherein you see they add *s* to *a* when the noun is of the feminine gender, and placed in the plural number.

Jogar

Jogar aos céntos, to play at piquet ; wherein you see they add *os* to *a* when it precedes nouns signifying games, when they are of the masculine gender and put in the plural number.

6thly. *A* signifies sometimes *as*. Examp. *Está isto a seu gosto ?* is this as you like it ? And sometimes it signifies *after* ; as, *a seu modo*, after his or her way. It signifies also *in* ; as, *ao princípio*, in the beginning ; but then they add *o* to it.

7thly. *A* is also put before the infinitives, preceded by another verb ; as, *ensinar a cantar*, to teach to sing. It is also placed between two equal numbers, to denote order ; as, *dous a dous*, two by two ; *quatro a quatro*, four by four : and sometimes it is preceded by a participle or adjective, and followed by an infinitive mood.

8thly. *A* is a particle of composition, serving to many nouns, verbs, and adverbs, of which it often increases the meaning ; as, *adineirado*, very rich, that has a great deal of money ; but it generally expresses in verbs the action of the nouns they are composed of ; as, *ajoelhar*, to kneel down, which is formed from *a* and *joelho*, knee ; *abrandar*, to appease ; *alargar*, to enlarge ; from *brando*, soft ; *largo*, wide, &c.

9thly. *A*, when it is preceded by the verb *ser*, and followed by the pronouns personal, signifies *in the stead of* ; as, *se eu fosse a vos, faria aquilo*, if I was you (in your place) I would do that.

10thly. When *a* is placed before *casa*, and the sense implies *going to*, it is Englished by *to*, but the word *casa* is left out ; as, *elle foi á casa do governador*, he went to the governor's. You must observe, that *a* in this sense is a preposition.

11. *Ao pe* signifies *near* ; as, *põe hum ao pé do outro*, place, put, or set them near one another. Sometimes *mêsmo* comes before *ao pe*, to express still more the nearness of a thing, and *mêsmo ao pe*
is

is Englished by *hard by, just by, &c.*; as, *a sua casa esta mésmo ao pé da minha*, his house is just by mine.

12th. When the noun *respeito* is preceded by *a*, it is used in the same sense as *em comparação*, but requires one of these particles, *do, da, dos, das*, after it, and signifies *in comparison of, in regard to, in respect of*; as, *isto he nada a respeito do que posso dizer*, this is nothing to other things that I can say.

13th. When *a* comes before a verb neuter, it marks a dative; and after a verb active, an accusative case.

A before the verb *propósito* is used in familiar discourses; as, *a propósito, esquecíme de dizer vos o outro dia*; now I think on't, I forgot to tell you t'other day.

14th. *Aó revéz*, or *as avéssas*, are also used as prepositions, attended by, *de, do, da, &c.*; and it signifies *quite the reverse, or, contrary*; as *elle faz tudo ao revéz*, or *as avéssas do que houvera de ser, ou do que lhe dizem*, he does every thing quite the reverse of right, or contrary to what he is bid.

15th. *A* before *tróco* signifies *provided that*. It is also used before the word *tiro*, as, *a tiro de peça*, within cannon shot.

16th. *Cára a cara, corpo a corpo*, signify face to face, body to body. *Tomar huma coisa á boa ou á má parte*, signifies to take a thing well or ill.

Such are the chief relations denoted by the particle *a*. The others must be learned in construing and reading good Portuguese books.

1st. *De*, or rather *do, da, dos, das*, (*of, from, &c.*) denote, first, the place one comes from; as, *sahir de Londres*, to go out of London; *vir de França, dos Indias, &c.*; to come from France, from the Indies, &c.

2d. *De* between two nouns denotes the quality of the person expressed by the first noun; as, *hum homem de honra*, a man of honour: or the matter which the thing of the first noun is made of; as,

Huma

Húma estátua de mármore, a statue of marble.

Húma ponte de madeira ou de pedra, a wood or stone bridge.

Note, that two nouns so joined with *de* are commonly Englished by two nouns likewise, but without a preposition, or rather by a compound word, whose first noun (whether substantive or adjective) expresses the matter and quality, manner, form, and use of the other ; as a stone-bridge, *húma ponte de pedra* ; a dancing-master, *hum mestre de dança*.

3d. *De, do, da, dos, das*, are used in Portuguese after the participles of the preterite, with *ser* ; as, *ser, amado, ou bem visto do povo, dos sábios, &c.* ; to be beloved by the people, by the learned, &c.

Note, that *do* serves for the masculine, *da* for the feminine, and *de* for both.

4th. *De* sometimes signifies *by* ; as, *de noite*, by night ; *de dia*, by day.

5th. *De* before *em*, and many nouns of time denotes the regular interval of the time after which something begins again ; as, *eu vou vê-lo de dois em dois dias*, I go to see him every other day ; and before nouns of place and adverbs repeated with *em* or *para* between, *de* denotes the passing from one place or condition to another ; as, *corrêr de rua em rua*, to run from street to street ; *de mal para peor*, worse and worse.

6th. *De* after some verbs, signifies *after* or *in* ; as, *elle portou-se d'esta sorte*, he behaved in or after this manner.

7th. *De* is used before an infinitive, and is then governed by some preceding noun or verb ; as, *capaz de ensinar*, capable to teach ; *digno de ser amado*, worthy to be loved, &c. ; *procurar de fazer*, to endeavour to do ; *authoridade de pregár*, the power or authority of preaching, &c.

8th. *De* is sometimes Englished by *on* ; as, *por-se de joelhos*, to kneel down on one's knees.

9. *De*

9. *De* between two nouns denotes the use which a thing is designed for ; as, *azeite de candêa*, lamp-oil ; *arma de fogo*, a fire-arm ; *moínho de vento*, a wind-mill.

Note, that this relation is expressed in English by two nouns, making a compound word : the first of which signifies the manner, form, and use, denoted by the Portuguese preposition ; as, *cadeira de braços*, an arm-chair, or elbow-chair ; *vêla de cera*, a wax-candle, &c.

10. *De* denotes sometimes the quality of things ; as, *méyas de tres flos*, stockings with three threads. Sometimes it denotes also the price ; as, *pânno de dezoito xélin*s, eighteen shillings cloth.

11. *De* is sometimes Englished by *upon* ; as, *vivér ou sustentár se de peixe*, to live upon fish. Sometimes it is Englished by *with* ; as, *morrér de frio*, to starve with cold.

12. *De* sometimes signifies *for* or *out of* ; as, *saltár de alegria*, to leap for joy ; *de modesto*, out of modesty.

13. *De* signifies sometimes *at* ; as, *zombár de alguém*, laugh at one.

14. *De* is sometimes left out in English ; as, *gozár de huma coisa*, to enjoy a thing.

15. *De* followed by two nouns of number and the preposition *até* between them, is Englished by *between* ; as, *hum homem de quarénta até cincoenta annos*, a man between forty and fifty.

16. *De*, preceded by the preposition *diante*, is left out in English ; as, *diante de mim*, before me ; *diante de Déos*, before God.

17. *De* when it is placed before *casa*, and the sense implies *coming from*, is Englished by *from* ; but the word *casa* sometimes is left out in English, and sometimes not ; as, *vénho de casa* (meaning my house) I come from home, from my house ; but when they say, *vénho da casa de Senhora C*, we must

render it in English thus, *I am returning from Mrs. C's.*

Finally, *de* is used before several words ; as, *de brúcos*, lying all along on the ground ; *de madrugada*, soon in the morning ; *de véras*, in earnest, seriously ; *de verão*, in summer ; *homem de palavra*, a man as good as his word ; *de costas*, backwards, or on one's back ; *andar de pe*, to be sickly without being bed-ridden : and many others which must be learnt by use.

Antes.

III. *Antes*, before, shews a relation of time, of which it denotes priority ; and is always opposite to *depois*, after ; as, *antes da criação do mundo*, before the creation of the world.

Primeiro is also a preposition ; as, *elle chegou primeiro que eu*, he arrived before me.

Diante.

IV. *Diante*, before, shews a relation of place, and it is always opposite to *detráz*, behind. It signifies also sometimes *em*, or *na presença* ; as, *ha árvores diante de sua casa*, there are trees before his house ; *põe aquillo diante do fogo*, set or put that before the fire ; *pregar diante del rei*, to preach before the king.

Diante is also sometimes an adverb, and may be used instead of *adiante* ; as, *ir diante* or *adiante*, to go before : but in the following phrase you must say, *não vádes tanto adiante*, and not *diante*, don't go so far ; *por diante* is to be Englished by *on* in the following phrase, *íde por diante*, go on.

Depois.

V. *Depois*, after, denotes posteriority of time, and it is used in opposition to *antes* ; as, *depois do dilúvio*, after the deluge : *depois do meio dia*, after noon.

Depois also is used with an infinitive ; as, *feito aquillo*, or *tendo feito aquillo*, or *depois de fazer aquillo*, after

after having done that ; and it is also made a conjunction with *que*, governing the indicative ; as, *depois que teve feito aquillo*, after he had done that.

Detraz.

VI. *Detráz*, behind, denotes posteriority both of place and order, and it is said in opposition to *diante* ; as, *a sua casa está detráz de vossa*, his house is behind yours ; *elle vinha detráz de mim* ; he walked after me.

Em.

VII. *Em*, or *no*, *na*, *nos*, *nas*, (in, into, within, &c.) denote a relation both of time and place. The many various significations in which these prepositions are used, must be accurately observed, and much regard had to them in the practice.

No and *na* are sometimes rendered into English by *a* ; as, *dúas vézes no dia*, *na semana*, &c. twice a day, a week, &c.

No, *na*, &c. are always used before nouns denoting the place wherein something is kept ; as, *está no gabinete*, it is in the closet ; *na papelera*, in the bureau ; *nas gavetas*, in the drawers ; *na rua*, in the street, &c. but sometimes they are Englished by *upon* ; as, *cahir no chão*, to fall upon the ground.

Em, *no*, *na*, &c. signifies commonly *in* ; as, *em Londres*, in London ; *está na graça del réy*, he is in favour with the king ; but in some cases it has a very particular meaning ; as, *estár em corpo*, which signifies literally *to be in body* ; but the true sense of it is *to be without a cloak* ; so that the body is more exposed to view without an upper garment. *Estár em pernas*, literally, *to be in legs*, signifies *to be bare-legged* ; that is, the legs exposed without stockings. *Estár em camisa* is said of one that has only the shirt on his back.

When this preposition *em* is before an infinitive in Portuguese, then it is an English gerund ; as, *consiste em fallar bem*, it consists in speaking well ;

but when it is found before a gerund, it signifies *as soon as*; as, *em acabando iréi*, as soon as I have done, I will go.

Nos nossos tempos is Englished by *now a-days*.

Em is used in sentences that imply a general sense; as, *Elle está em miserável estado*, he is in a wretched condition; and not *no miserável*: but if the sentences imply a particular sense, you must make use of *no*, *nas*, &c. as, *no miserável estado em que elle está*, in the wretched condition wherein he is; and not *em miserável*. You must observe in this last example and the like, that you ought to make use of *em* before *que*, and not of *no*, *na*, &c. which are to be placed only before *qual*; therefore you must not say, *no miserável estado no que elle está*; but you may say, *no miserável estado no qual elle está*.

Note, that *em* construed with pronouns without an article, makes a sort of adverb, rendered into English by a preposition and a noun; thus in this sentence, *nos irémos em coche*, we shall go in a coach, *em coche* is an adverb of manner, which shews how we shall go: but *no coche* denotes something besides; as if a company were considering how they shall ride to a place, somebody would say, *vos iréis na cadeirinha*, e *nós no coche*, you shall go in the chair, and we in the coach; *no coche* would be said in opposition to *na cadeirinha*, and both respectively to some specified chair and coach; or else they should say, *vos iréis em cadeirinha*, e *nos em coche*. But in this other sentence, *eu deixei o meu chapéo no coche*, I left my hat in the coach, it would be improper to say *em coche*, because some particular coach is meant, to wit, that which has drove me here or there, or which has been spoken of.

We say *de verão*, *no verão* or *em o verão*; *de inverno*, *no inverno*, &c. in summer, in winter, &c.

Em is also rendered into English by *at*; as, *em todo o tempo*, at all times.

Em

Em is used, and never *no*, *na*, &c. before proper names of cities and authors ; as, *élle está em Lóndres*, he is in London ; *nós lêmos em Cícero*, we read in Tully. But they say *no Pórtó*, in Oporto.

Em, and *no*, *na*, &c. are construed with the names of kingdoms ; as, *em* or *na*, *Inglaterra*, in England : but *no*, *na*, is most commonly construed with names of provinces ; as, *no Aléntêjo*, *na Beíra*, &c. in Alentejo, in Beira, &c.

Em is sometimes rendered into English by *into* : as, *Narciso foi transformado em flor*, Narcissus was metamorphosed into a flower : and sometimes by *to* ; as *de rua em rua*, from street to street.

No, *na*, are sometimes rendered into English by *against* ; as, *dar có a cabeça na parede*, to dash one's head against the wall.

No, *na*, &c. are also rendered into English by *in*, and sometimes by *into* ; as, *ter hum menino nos braços*, to hold a child in one's arms ; *entregar alguma coisa nas mãos, de alguém*, to deliver a thing into somebody's hands.

Em is used before the word *travéz*, as in this phrase, *por-se de mar em travéz com alguém*, to fall out together.

Em before a noun of time, denotes the space of time that slides away in doing something ; as, *el rey foi a Hanovér, em tres dias*, the king went to Hanover in three days ; that is, he was no longer than three days in going.

Em is sometimes used after the verb *hir*, to go ; as, *vai em quatro mêses que eu aqui cheguei*, it is now going on four months since I came hither.

Em before *quânto*, and sometimes without it, is rendered into English by *while* or *whilst* ; as, *em quânto vos fazêis aquillo, eu farei isto*, while you do that, I shall do this : but if they are followed by a noun of time with an interrogation, then they must be rendered into English by *in how much*, or *many* ; as, *em quânto tempo ?* in how much time ? You must

observe, that *em quanto a mim, a ti, a elle, &c.* are rendered into English by *for what concerns me, thee, him, &c.*

You must observe that *no* serves for the masculine, *na* for the feminine, and *em* for both.

Em signifies *as* ; as, *em sinal da sua amizade*, as a token of his friendship ; *em prêmio*, as a reward.

The prepositions *em, no, na, &c.* and *dentro*, have very often the same signification, therefore they may sometimes be used one instead of the other ; as *está na gaveta*, or *dentro da gaveta*, it is in the drawer ; *está na cidade*, or *dentro da cidade*, he is in town.

Em before the words *favor, utilidade, consideração, razão*, and the like, signifies *in behalf of, for the sake of, on account of, &c.* as, *em razão das bellas acções que elle tem feito*, in consideration of the great things he has performed.

Observe, that they very often make an elision of the last vowels, *o, a*, of the preposition *no, na*, when there is a vowel in the beginning of the next word ; *n'agóá*, instead of *na agoa* ; they also cut off the *e* of the preposition *em*, and change the *m* into *n*, as you may see in *Camoens, Canto 2. Stanza xxxii. n'algúni pórtó*, instead of *em algum porto*, wherein you must observe that *n'* is to be Englished by *to, or into*.

Com.

VII. This preposition signifies *with*, and it denotes conjunction, union, mixing, assembling, keeping company ; as, *casar húma donzella com hum homem honrado*, to marry a maid with an honest man ; *ir com alguém*, to go with one ; *com a ajuda de Déos*, by God's help, &c.

Observe that most of the adverbs formed of the adjectives are turned in Portuguese by the preposition *com* and the substantive ; as, *atrevidamente*, boldly, *com atrevimento*, with boldness ; *elegantemente*,

mênte, elegantly ; *com elegância*, with elegance ; *cortezmênte*, politely, *com cortezia*, with politeness, &c.

You must observe, that the last consonant *m* is very often cut off, even before the noun of number *hum*, one ; and so they say *cum*, instead of *com hum*, as you may see in *Camoens*, Cant. 2. Stanza xxxvii.

Note, that *with me*, *with thee*, *with himself*, &c. are rendered into Portuguese by *commigo*, *contigo*, or *convosco*, *consigo*, *convosco*, *consigo*.

When *com* is preceded by *pará*, it signifies *towards*, and sometimes *over*, in English ; as, *sejamos piedosos pará com os pobres*, let us be merciful towards the poor. *Ter grande poder pará com alguém*, to have a great influence over some body's mind.

Com before the word *capa* is used metaphorically, and then it signifies *under colour*, or *pretext*.

Para.

VIII. *Pará* is rendered into English by *for* ; but it signifies also *to*, when it is found before the infinitive, and denotes the intention, or purpose in doing something ; as, *este livro he pará meu irmão*, this book is for my brother ; *esta penna he pará escrever*, this pen is to write ; *Déus nos fez pará amá-lo*, God made us for to love him ; *o comér he necessário pará conservár a vida*, eating is necessary for preserving life.

Pará que is rendered into English by *for what* ; as, *pará que he isto?* for what is this ? and sometimes by *that*, or *in order that* ; as, *pará que vénha vêr-me*, that he may come and see me. But *porque* signifies *why*, *for what*, *upon what account*, as, *pôrque não vindes?* why don't you come ? but when it is not followed by an interrogation, it signifies *because*.

Pará serves likewise before the verbs, to denote what one is able to do in consequence of his present disposition ; as, *élle he bastantemênte forte pará andár a cavállo*, he is strong enough to ride ; *elle tem ba-*

hánte cabedal para sustentár se, he has means enough to maintain himself; *a occasião he muito favorável para nos não servír-mos d'ella*, the occasion is too favourable to let it slip.

Para expresses also the capacity or incapacity of doing any thing; as, *élle he hómem para isto*, he is the proper man wanted for this; *he hómem para pouco*, he is good for little; *he hómem para náda*, he is good for nothing.

This preposition is also used to denote the end or motive of doing any thing; as, *trabalho para o bem público*, I work for the public good; *hum hospital para os pobres*, an hospital for the poor.

Para is a preposition of time; as *isto me basta para todo o anno*; this is sufficient to me for all the year; *estão unidos para sempre*, they are united for ever; *para dois meses era muito pouco*, for two months it was too little.

Para is sometimes preceded by the adverb *lá*, and followed by a noun of time, and then it is Englished by *against* or *towards*; as, *lá para o fim da semana*, against the end of the week, or towards the end of the week.

Para is sometimes Englished by *considering*, or *with respect to*; as, *este menino está muito adiantado para a idade que tem*, or *para o pouco tempo que aprénde*, this child is very forward for his age, or considering the little time he has learned; *para Inglês fállo demasiadamente*, he talks too much considering that he is an Englishman.

Para signifies sometimes *just* or *ready to*; as, *élle está para partir*, he is just going away, he is ready to go.

Para is also used before the word *grças*; as, *élle não he para grças*, he takes no jest; *élle não está para grças*, he is out of humour, or he is in an ill humour.

Para onde? signifies *whither?* *to what place?*

Para

Pará que ? or *pará que fim ?* signifies *to what end* or *purpose ?* *Pará cima* signifies *upward*.

Pará húma e outra parte, signifies *to both sides, places, or parts*.

Pará is also Englished by *towards*, and is said of places ; as, *pará o oriente*, *towards, or to the east*.

Pará onde quer que, signifies *whether, or to what place thou wilt, any whither*.

Pará outra parte, signifies *towards another place*.

Pará comigo, *towards me*.

Pará o diante, signifies *for the time to come*.

De mim, pará mim, signifies *for what concerns me*.

Pará is used by *Camoens*. Cant. 2. Stanza xxiv. before the preposition *detráz*, and signifies *backwards*.

Pará between two nouns of number is Englished by *or*, and sometimes by *and* ; as, *hum homem de quarénta pará cincoenta annos*, a man between forty and fifty ; *dista quátra pará cinco legóas*, it is about four or five leagues distant.

Por.

IX. *Por, pello, pella, pellos, or pellas*, signify *for* ; as *por amor de vos*, *for your sake* ; *por seis semanas*, *for six weeks* ; *palavra por palavra*, *word for word*.

Polo and *pola* instead of *pello* and *pella*, are out of use.

Por sometimes denotes that the thing is not yet done ; as, *esta obra está por acabár*, *this work is not yet finished*.

Par, by, for, over, or through ; as, *alcancei-o por empénho*, *I obtained it by protection* ; *eu vou por dinheiro*, *I am going for money* ; *passéo pellos campos*, *I walk through the fields* ; *por todo o reino*, *all over the kingdom*.

When *por* is before an infinitive, and followed by a negative, in the latter part of the sentence, it is Englished by *although* or *though* ; as, *por ser devóta, or por devóta que seja, não de'xa de ser molhér*, *though*
the

she is a religious woman, yet she is a woman ; *por ser pobre*, or *por pobre que seja*, *não deixa de ser soberba*, though she has no fortune, she is nevertheless, or for all that, proud. Wherein you see, that the negative with the verb *deixar*, are rendered into English by the verb *to be*, and the particles *nevertheless*, *yet*, &c. You must observe that they sometimes put the words *nem por isso* before the verb *deixar*, but the sense is the same, and you may as well say, *por ser pobre*, *nem por isso deixa*, &c.

Por followed by an adjective and the particle *que* with a verb in the subjunctive mood, is rendered into English by *never so* ; as, *por grande que elle seja*, let him be never so great ; *por pouco que seja*, never so little.

Por, before *menos*, signifies *far less than*, or *under* ; as *uma não o terá por menos de vinte libras*, you shall not have it under twenty pounds.

Por before *quanto*, with an interrogation, signifies *for how much*, *at what rate* ? But if there is no interrogation, as in the following and the like sentences, then it is to be Englished by *for never so much* ; as, *não o faria por quanto me dessem*, I would not do it for never so much.

Por before *cima* signifies *upwards*, and before *báxo* is Englished by *downwards* ; as, *o remédio obra por cima e por báxo*, the medicine operates, or works, upwards and downwards.

Por before *pouco*, *muito*, *bem*, &c. and followed by *que*, makes a sort of conjunction governing the subjunctive, and is Englished by *if*, followed by *ever* or *never so little*, *much*, *well*, &c. as, *por pouco que erréis*, if you do amiss never so little ; *por bem que eu faça*, if I do never so well, &c.

Por before *mim* signifies sometimes *as for*, or *for all* ; as, *por mim estou pronto*, as for me, or, for my part I am ready ; *por mim podéis dormir se quizerdes*, you may sleep for all me.

Por

Por, pello, pella, &c. denote the efficient cause of a thing, as also the motive and means, or ways of doing; in all which significations they are Englished by *by, through, out of, at, &c. as,*

A Ásia foi conquistiada por Alexandre, Asia was conquered by Alexander.

Vos falláis nísso so por envêja, it is out of envy only you speak of it.

Elle entrôu pella pórtá, mas sabio pella janella, he got in at the door, but he got out at the window, &c.

Por denotes place, after the verbs *ir* and *passár*; as, *por ónde iréis vos?* which way shall you go?

Eu passarei por França, I'll go through France; *por ónde passôu elle?* which way did he go?

Por construed with nouns without an article, denotes most times *distribution of people, time, and place*; and it is Englished by *a, or every*, before the noun; as,

Elle déu tanto por cabeça, he gave so much a head.

Tanto por soldádo, por áнно, por mes, por semana, &c. so much a soldier, a year, a month, a week; *a razão de vinte por cento,* at the rate of twenty per cent.

Elle pede tanto por légua, he asks so much a league, or every league.

Por, between two nouns without an article, or between two infinitives without a preposition, denotes the choice which one makes between two things, alike in their nature, but different in their circumstances; as,

Cása por cása, ántes quero ésta que aquella, since I must have one of these two houses, I like this better than that; *morrer por morrer, melhor, he morrer combatendo que fugindo,* when a man must die, it is better to die in fighting than in running away.

Pello méyo is rendered into English by *through*; as, *pello méyo dos campos,* through the fields.

Por méyo is rendered into English by *by*; as, *elle alcançou o seu intento por méyo de astúcias,* he has compassed his ends by devices.

Por

Por tårno signifies *in one's turn*.

Por before the infinitives is used instead of *pará* by the best Portuguese writers; and *pårque* instead of *pará que*; as you may see particularly in *Camoens*, Canto 2: Stanza VII. and VIII. and in the following example, *por não*, or *pará não repetir o que ja temos dito*, not to repeat what we have already said.

Por is sometimes Englished by *for*, upon the account of, *for sake*, &c. as, *elle fará isto por amor de vos*, he will do this upon your account, or for your sake; *deixárao-o por morto*, he was left for dead; *eu tenho-o por meu amigo*, I take him to be my friend; *todos os homens de bem são*, or *estão por elle*, all honest people are for him, or are on his side; *por quem me tomáis vos?* who do you take me for?

We have already observed, that *pårque* without an interrogation signifies *because*; but it has the same signification in the following sentence, and the like; *pårque elle he mentiróso segue-se que também eu o seja?* because he is a liar, does it follow therefore that I am one?

Por isto, or *por-esta razão*, signifies *therefore*.

O pårque signifies the reason, the cause, or the subject; as, *sabe-se o pårque?* is it known upon what account?

Por modo de dizer signifies *as one may say*, if I, or we, may say, &c.

Por diante signifies *before*; and *por detrás* signifies *behind*.

Por ventura signifies *perhaps*.

Pello passado signifies *formerly*, *in time past*, *heretofore*.

Por nenhum caso, by no means.

Por mar e por terra, by sea and land.

Hum por hum signifies *one by one*.

Por is sometimes Englished by *in*; as, *elles são vinte*, *por todos*, they are twenty in all.

When the verb *passar* is followed by *dor*, then the word *álto* signifies *to forget*; as, *passou lbe aquillo por álto*,

álto, he forgot that; but speaking of goods it signifies to *smuggle*.

Por joined with the verb *ir* signifies to *fetch*, and *seek after*; as, *vai por vinho*, go fetch some wine; *vai pélo médico*, go see for the physician.

Por is commonly used before the substantives; as, *por exemplo*, for example; *por commodidade*, for convenience; *por costume*, for custom sake; and many others, that may be learned by use.

You must observe, that *pello* serves for the masculine, *pella* for the feminine, and *por* for both.

Contra.

X. *Contra*, (against, contrary to), denotes opposition; as *que diz v^{me} contra isto?* what do you say against this? It signifies also *over against*, *opposite to*.

Pro e contra signifies in English *pro* and *con*.

Desde.

XI. *Desde*, denotes both time and place, and enumeration of things, and is commonly followed in the sentence by the preposition *até* (*to*); then *desde* denotes the term *from whence*, and *até* that of *thither*; as,

Desde o princípio até o fim, from the beginning to the end.

Elle foi a pé desde Windsor até Londres, he walked from Windsor to London.

Eú ténho visto todos desde o primeiro até o último, I have seen them-all from first to last; *forão todos mortos desde o primeiro até o último*, they were all slain to a man.

Desde a criação do m^{ndo}, from or since the creation.

Desde o berço, ou infância, from the cradle, from a child.

Desde

Désde ja, even now ; as, *désde ja prevêo*, I even now foresee.

Désde agora, from this time forward.

Désde então, from that time ever since.

Desde que, as soon as, when.

Désde quando ? how long since, or ago ?

Rio navegável desde o seu nascimento ; a river navigable at its very rise.

Até.

XII. *Até* signifies till, even, to, &c. as you may see in the following examples.

Até onde ? how far ?

Até Róma, as far as Rome.

Até quando ? till when, or how long ?

Até que eu viva, as long as I live.

He hum homem de tanta bondade, que até os seus inimigos são obrigados a estimá-lo, he is so good a man that even his enemies have a value for him.

Até os mais vis homens tomávão a liberdade de, &c. the very worst of men took such a liberty as to &c.

Até que, until, till.

Até as orelhas, up to the ears.

Elle vendéo até a camisa, he has sold the very shirt off his back.

Até agora, or *até aqui*, till now, or hitherto.

Até aqui, (speaking of a place) to this place, hither, so far.

Até lá, to that place, so far.

Até tanto que isto se faça, till it be done.

Até então, till then, till that time.

Até is also used before an infinitive ; as, *gritar até enrouquecer*, to bawl one's self hoarse.

Rir até arreventar pellas ilhargas, to split one's sides with laughing.

Dar de comer a alguém até arreventar, to fill, or cram one with victuals till he bursts.

Ate

Até á primeira, till our next meeting, till we meet again.

Por cima.

XIII. *Por cima* (above, over), denotes superiority of place ; as,

Morar por cima da álguem, to live or lodge above somebody.

A bállea lhe passou por cima da cabeça, the ball went over his head.

Por cima de tudo, upon the whole.

Pará cima.

XV. *Pará cima* (above) denotes superiority of age, and is sometimes put at the end of the sentence ; as,

E'lles alistaráo todos que tinham de dez ánnos pará cima, they enlisted every body above ten.

A cima.

XV. *A cima*, (above) denotes rank, and some moral subjects ; as,

A cima d'elle, above him, or superior to him.

Estar a cima de tudo, to be above the world.

Huma molhér que está a cima de tudo, nem se lhe dá do que o mundo diz d'ella, a woman who is above the public's censure, who don't care what people say of her.

Em cima.

XVI. *Em cima* (upon) ; as *em cima de méza*, upon the table.

Em cima de tudo isto, or only *em cima*, signifies *and besides all that*, over and above all that.

De cima.

XVII. *De cima*, when it is an adverb, signifies *from above* ; but when a preposition, it is Englished by *from*, *off*, or *from off* ; as,

Tirai

Tirái aquillo de cima da mēsa, take that from off the table.

Elle nunca tirou os seus ólhos de cima délha, he never turned his eyes from her.

Cahir de cima das árvores, to fall off the trees.

Debáxo.

XVIII. The preposition *debáxo*, (*under, below, or from under*) denotes the time and place; I say the time of a denomination of a reign, or government; as, *debáxo do império de Augústto*, under the empire of Augustus.

Debáxo, as a preposition of place, marks out inferiority of position; as,

Tôdo o que ha debáxo dos céos, all there is under heaven.

Ter hūma almofada debáxo dos joéllhos, to have a cushion under the knees.

Estár debáxo da chave, to be under lock and key.

Debáxo is sometimes rendered into English by *upon*; as, *affirmar hūma cūsa debáxo de juramēto*, to swear a thing, to declare upon oath.

Abáxo.

XIX. This preposition is rendered into English by *under, inferior, or next*; as, *assentou se abáxo délles*, he sat inferior, or under them; as, *assentou-se logo de mim*, he sat next, inferior to me, or he was next man to me: *abáxo del rei elle he o primeiro*, he is the next man to the king.

This preposition is sometimes put at the end of the next phrases, *de télhas abáxo*, here below, in this lower world, *de cabeça abáxo*, headlong.

Fóra.

XX. *Fóra*, (*out, without, except, but,*) denotes exclusion, and exception. It requires generally a genitive before a noun of time, or place; but it governs also the nominative; as,

Fóra

Fôra do réyno, out of the kingdom.

Fôra da cidade, out of town.

Fôra de tempo, out of season.

Procurái-o fora de casa, look for him without doors.

Elles sabirão todos, fôra d'ous ou tres, they all went out except, or but two or three.

Elle lhe perméte tudo, fôra o ir ás assembleas, he indulges her in every thing, but in going to assemblies.

Elle tem todos os poderes, fôra o de concluir, he has full powers, except of concluding.

Fôra is sometimes preceded by *tão*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *so far*; as, *élle está tão fôra de socorrer os seus alliados, que se declara contra elles*, he is so far from assisting his allies, that he declares himself against them.

Fôra is sometimes rendered into English by *besides*; as, *fôra daquellas que*, &c. besides those that, &c. and sometimes by *beyond*; as, *fôra de medida*, beyond measure.

Fôra de horas signifies *beyond the hour*, or *very late*.

Pôr alguém fôra da porta, or *mandar alguém pella porta fôra*, to turn one out of doors.

De frônte, or *frônte*.

This preposition governs the genitive, and signifies *over-against*. It is followed by *de*, *do*, *da*, &c. as,

De frônte da sua casa está hum outeiro, over against his house is a hill.

Eú estava de frônte d'elle, I was over against him.

Sem.

Sem signifies *without*; as,

Sem dinheiro, without money.

Sem duvida, without doubt.

Sem fim, without end.

Sem dar a entender, or *sem fazer conhecer*, without giving to understand.

N

Sem

Sem máis, nem ménos, without any reason or provocation.

Estar sem amo, to be out of place.

Sem que algum acto precedente possa derogar o presente, any former act to the contrary of the present notwithstanding.

Sem governs also the infinitive, which is rendered into English with the participle; as, *fallar sem saber*, to speak without knowing.

It is also a conjunction with *que*, governing the subjunctive; as,

Enfada-se sem que lhe digaõ nada, he is angry without any body saying any thing to him.

Não era eu ja bastantamente infeliz, sem que procurásseis de acrecentar a minha infelicidade? was I not miserable enough before, but you must still labour to make me more so?

Lembro-me sem que mo digáis, I remember without your telling.

Elle virá sem que mandem por elle, he will come without sending for.

Conforme, or *segundo*.

XXIII. *Conforme* or *segundo* (according to, conformable to), govern the nominative, and never the dative as in English; as,

Elle sói tratado conforme o seu merecimento, he was treated according to his deserts.

Conforme o meu parecer, in my judgment, in my opinion.

In common conversation *conforme* is used adverbially, and Englished as follows:

Isso he conforme, or only *conforme*, it is as it happens; may be yes; may be not; that is according.

Conforme a occasião o pedir, according as there shall be need.

Sobre.

XXIV. *Sobre* signifies upon; as, *sobre a mesa*, upon the table; *sobre o rio*, upon the river.

Sobre

Sobre tudo, or *sobre todas as cousas*, over all, above all, above all things, above any thing, especially; as, *sobre tudo tendo cuidado na saúde*, but howsoever the matter be, mind your health.

Pôr alguém sobre si, or *dar lhe o primeiro lugar*, to place one above himself.

Ir sobre huma cidade, to besiege a town.

Ir sobre alguém, to fall, or to rush upon one.

Ir sobre seguro, to go upon sure grounds.

Sobre a noite, about or towards the evening.

Sobre o verde, somewhat green.

Sobre a minha palavra, upon my word.

Sobre palavra, upon parole.

Mandar carta sobre carta, to send letter upon letter.

Elle recebeu a carta sobre jantar, he had just dined when he received the letter.

Elle dorme sobre jantar, he sleeps presently after dinner.

Sobre isto, or *sobre estas cousas*, is sometimes Englished by *more than that*, or *besides that*; as,

Elle roubou-o, e sobre isto matou-o, he robbed him, and more than that, he killed him.

Sobre que, is rendered into English by *though* or *alibough*; as,

Este negocio sobre que he difficiloso, não he impossivel, altho' this is a hard affair, yet it is not impossible.

Sobre is Englished sometimes by *besides*; as,

Sobre as misérias da guerra, elle teve a desgraça, &c. besides the miseries of the war, he had the misfortune of, &c.

Estár sobre si, or *andar sobre si*, signifies to stand upon one's guard.

Eu vos escreverei sobre esta matéria, I will write to you about this matter.

Acêrca.

XXV. *Acêrca* signifies *about*; as, *acêrca disto lhe disse*, about this I told him; *acêrca de lá ir lhe respondi*, about going there I answered him.

Perto, junto, ao pé, pegado.

XXVI. *Perto* (near by, about) denotes proximity of place and time, and governs the genitive case; as *aquillo está muito perto do lume*, that is too near the fire; *perto das oito horas*, about eight o'clock.

Perto do rio, near the river.

Estamos perto do Natal, we are near Christmas.

Ao pé requires also the genitive case; as,

Assentáivos ao pé de mim, sit down by me, or near me; *ao pé do rio*, near the river, &c.

Note, that *junto* (near or by) and *pegado* (hard by) require the dative case; as,

Junto a cidade, near the town.

Pegado ao palácio, hard by the palace.

Longe.

Longe, far, a great way off, governs the genitive, and the particle, *de*, or *do*, *da*, &c. as,

Longe de casa, far from home.

Longe daqui, far from hence.

De longo, or ao longo.

This preposition requires the genitive case; as,

Ao longo da praia, along the shore.

Ao longo da costa, do prado, &c. along the coast, the meadow, &c.

Of further Particles.

Ainda, ainda que, póstoque or quando bem, ainda assim or com tudo.

Ainda signifies yet; as, *élle ainda não véyo*, he is not come yet. It signifies also even; as, *seria vergónha ainda o fallar nisso*, it were a shame even to speak of it; *nem ainda por cem libras*, no not for a hundred pounds.

Ainda que signifies, though, or although; as, *ainda que vos sois mais vélho do que élle*, though you be older than he; *ainda que assim fósse*, though it were so.

Ainda

Ainda que, is very often followed by *com tudo*, yet for all that; as, *ainda que elle não tivésse necessidade disso com tudo*, &c. though he had no need of it, yet, &c.

Ainda assim, or *com tudo*; is sometimes Englished by *nevertheless*, or *for all that*; as, *ainda assim sempre elle foi louvável*, he was praise-worthy for all that.

Ja desde, ja que and *ja por que*.

Ja desde is rendered into English by *even from*; as, *ja desde o principio*, even from the beginning.

Ja que, signifies *since*; as,

Ja que isso assim he, since it is so.

The particle *que* sometimes is not placed immediately after *ja*; as, *ja ha dous annos que morréo*, he died two years since or ago.

Ja ha muito tempo que sahistes de casa, it is a long time since you went from home.

Ja por que, is repeated in the same sentence, and then the first is rendered into English by *first, because*; and the second by *secondly, because*; as, *ja por que era cego, ja por que era coxo*, first because he was blind, and secondly because he was lame.

Depois que.

Depois que is rendered into English by *after*; as, *Depois que eu tinha entrado*, after I was gone in.

Com que.

Com que is only a note either of introduction, or connexion; as,

Com que havia um homem enfermo, &c. now a certain man was sick; sometimes they add to it the particle *assim*, and then it is to be rendered into English by *and so*.

Ou.

Ou signifies *or, or either*; as, *ou bom, ou máo*, either good or bad; *mais ou menos*, more or less; *ou elle queira, ou não*, whether he will, or no.

Quer.

Quer, when a particle, must be repeated, and the first is rendered into English by *either* or *whether*, and the second by *or*; as, *quer elle queira quer não*, whether he will or no; *quer vos ó tenhâis feito, quer não*, whether you have done that, or no.

Se quer, or ao ménos.

Se quer or *ao ménos*, &c. signifies *at least*, however; as, *se vos não querêis ser por elle não sejâis se quer contra elle*, if you don't chuse to be for him, at least don't oppose him; *dâi-lhe se quer com que sustentâr-se*, give him at least a subsistence; *o nôsso primeiro fim he de livrârnos de tôdos os mâles, ao ménos dos mayôres*, our chief end is to be freed from all, however the greatest evils.

Nem se quer hum, is rendered into English by *never a one, so much, or in the following manner*; as, *fôrão tôdos môrtos, e nem se quer hum escapou*, they were all slain to a man.

Quândo muito.

Quândo muito, (at most, at farthest, at long run), is generally used before the nouns of time and price; as, *elle estará aquí dêntro em hum mêz quândo muito*, he will be here in a month at farthest; *dez libras quândo muito*, ten pounds at most.

Tânta.

Tânto, so much, is sometimes followed by *cómo*, and then it is rendered into English by *as well as, as much as, &c.*

A'mo te tânto cómo a mim mêsmo, I love thee as well as myself.

Elle teme tânto cómo qualquér de vos, que lhe resulte algum dâno, he is afraid of a harm as much as any of you.

Cuidei que a estimásse tanto como a si mesmo, I thought he made as high account of her, as of himself.

E'les vem tanto de dia como de noite, they can see as well by day as by night.

E'u tive tanto como vos, I had as much as you.

Outro tanto is rendered into English by *the double, twice as much, or as much; as*,

E'u alcancei outro tanto mais por isso, I had as much more for it; *eu posso fazer outro tanto*, I can do as much.

Tanto followed by *assim*, is a particle merely expletive; as,

Tanto assim que lhe posso eu fazer? how can I help it; *váite, tanto assim não ha nada pará ti*, go away, here is nothing for you.

Tanto assim followed by *que* without an interrogation, is sometimes rendered by *so that, in so much that; as*, *tanto assim que elle não quer ouvir mais fallar nisso*, so that he will hear no more of it.

Tanto mais is followed by *que*, and Englished by *and the more so as, as*,

E'u estou prompto pará ir com v^mce hum dia destes á comédia, se v^mce quizer. Tanto mais que se deve representár huma nôva, I am at your service to wait on you some day or other to the play, if you'll give me leave; and the more so, as a new one is to be acted.

Tanto que, or logo que, is rendered into English by *as soon as; as*, *tanto que eu o vi*, as soon as I saw him.

Tanto melhor is rendered into English by *so much the better*.

Tanto is sometimes preceded by *com*, and followed by *que*, and is Englished by *so, provided that; as com tanto que o faciis*, provided that you do it; *com tanto que me não faça mal*, so he do me no hurt.

Tanto quanto is Englished by *as much as; as*,

Tanto quanto posso, as much as I can.

Tão.

Tão, so, is generally followed by *como; as*,

Este não he tão bom como o outro, this is not so good as the other; *eu sei isso tão bem como vos*, I know it as well as you.

Tão is sometimes followed by *que*, and Englished by *so, such, to that degree*; as,

Elle he tão prudente que não tem igual, he is so wise that he has not his match; *não sou tão louco que o creya*, I am not so simple, or I am not such a fool as to believe it; *faz tão grande vento que*, &c. the wind is so high that, &c. or the wind blows to that degree, &c.

Como.

Cómo, is Englished by *as, like, how, &c.* as you may see in the following expressions.

Cómo? how?

Dizêime cómo lhe hei de fallar? tell me how I may speak to him.

Comó assim? how so?

Cómo! what!

Cómo quer que, whereas.

Cómo quer que seja, howsoever, in what manner, or fashion soever.

Sêja cómo for, be it as it will.

Como isto assim he, since it is so.

Cómo, as it were, or almost.

Cómo se, as if, or even as if; as, *cómo se elles tivessem ja vencido*, as if they had already overcome.

Cómo também, as well as.

Rico cómo elle he, as rich as he is.

Cómo sôis meu amigo, quero, &c. as (or because) you are my friend, I'll, &c.

Dizêime o cómo, tell me how.

E'u sei cómo fazer para que elle venha, I know the way I shall take to make him come.

Cómo elle lá não estéja, eu iréi, provided he is not there, I will come.

Assim.

Affim.

Affim, so, thus, is rendered into English as you may see in the following expressions,

Pois he affim de veras ? de veras que affim he, is it even so? it is even so.

Affim seja, or *seja affim*, so be it, or be it so.

Affim he, it is so.

Pará affim dizer, as it were.

Affim sou eu louco, *que*, &c. I am not so foolish as to, &c.

Affim Deos me salve, as I hope to be saved.

Tanto affim, so that.

Affim he que vos, &c. is this your way, &c.

Affim como affim, after all, nevertheless, or for all that; *as, em vão dilatais a vossa jornada*, *affim como affim he preciso que vades*, it is in vain for you to put off your journey, you must go thither nevertheless, or for all that, you must go after all.

Affim como, as well as, or as soon as.

Basta affim por agora, thus much for this time.

Affim na paz, *como na guerra*, both in time of peace and war.

Affim affim, so so, indifferent.

Affim queira elle como póde, he can if he will.

Affim is sometimes preceded by *e*; as, *e affim quer isto dizer ?* how now? what do you mean by this? And sometimes *affim* is followed by *como*; as, *affim como o sol eclipsa os outras planetas*, *da mesma sorte*, &c. as the sun eclipses the other planets, so, &c.

Se.

Se, if; as *se elle vier*, if he comes; *se me amásseis*, should you love me; *se elle fesse homem de honra*, were he but an honest man; *se soubessem quem eu sou*, todos dirão, &c. were it told who I am, every one would say, &c. *se he verdade que*, &c. if so be that, &c.

The

The reciprocal verbs, as well as those that are used impersonally, may have two *se*'s joined together; as, *se se fór*, if he goes away; *se se fallà nisso*, if they speak of it.

Se is sometimes rendered into English by *whether*; and when it is repeated, the second is Englished by *or*; as,

Quisêra sabêr se a culpa he nôssa, se vóssa, I would know whether it is your fault, or ours.

Aliás.

Aliás, is sometimes rendered into English by *else*; as, *entrâi, porque aliás fecharêi a porta*, come in, or else I'll shut the door; *porque aliás serião os vóssos filhos immundos*, else were your children unclean. And sometimes it is rendered into English by *otherwise*, in other things, or respects.

Embora.

Embora is sometimes rendered into English by *prosperously*, *auspiciously*; but sometimes it is a particle merely expletive, and answers to the Italian *pure*; as, *dizêi muito embora o que quizerdes*, say what you please: the Italian says, *dite pur quel che vi piace*.

Muito embora, seja assim, well, let it be so.

Embora is sometimes Englished by *away*; as, *váite embora*, go away.

Senão.

Senão signifies *if not*, *did not*, *were it not that*, but *that*; as,

Senão tivêsse me do de meu pay, but that I fear my father.

Se elle não tivêsse vergonha de confêssar, but that he was ashamed to confess.

Note, that the following expressions, in which they make use of this particle, may be Englished by *but*, *for*, and some other variations.

Sé não fôsse por elle, but for him, or had it not been for him, or had he not been.

Senão

Senão fôsse por vos, had you not been, or had it not been for you, without you, without your help, hindrance, &c.

Senão fôsse por mim, elle morreria de fome, were it not for me, he would starve.

Senão is sometimes Englished by *but*; as, *nem elles tem outro intento, senão*, &c. nor do they aim at any thing else but, &c.

Ninguém disse assim senão Cicero, nobody said so but Cicero.

Senão may be also expressed in Portuguese by *mais que* in the following sentence, and the like.

Elle não faz senão jogar, or *elle não faz mais que jogar*, he does nothing but play.

Não, não porque.

Não, not, or *no*, when followed by *porque*, is Englished by *not that, not but that*; as, *não porque lhe faltasse engenho*, not but that he had wit; *não porque não fosse justo, mas porque*, &c. not but that it was right, but because, &c. *não porque a cousa seja impossível, mas porque*, &c. not that the thing is possible, but because, &c.

Tambem, or outrofi.

Tambem, or *outrofi*, signifies *also, too, likewise*; as, *vos assim ó quereis e eu também*, you'll have it so, and I too.

Para que, porque.

See the prepositions *para* and *por*.

Pois.

This particle is very much used by the Portuguese, and it is rendered into English several ways, as you may see in the following examples:

Pois ide, e vinde logo, go then and come back presently.

Pois não sou eu capaz de fazello? what, am I not capable to do it?

Pois,

Pois, or pois então que quer dizer isto ? Well, and what of all this.

Pois, or pois então que hei de fazer ? What shall I do then ?

Pois eu digo que elle está dentro, why, he is here within, I say.

Pois porque me vigiáis ! Why then do you watch me ?

Elle tem cabeça ; pois também hum alfinete a tem, he has got a head, and so has a pin.

Pois before *não*, and preceded by an interrogation; denotes a strong assertion, and is Englished by *without doubt, yes, surely, to be sure, &c.* as, *virá elle ? pois não !* will he come ? yes to be sure.

Antes, or mais depressa.

These particles are sometimes rendered into English by *rather* or *sooner* ; as, *antes* or *mais depressa quizerá morrer*, I would rather die ; *antes quizerá viver só que na vossa companhia*, I would sooner live alone than be in your company. Sometimes *antes* is Englished by *before* ; as, *l'de vos antes que elle venha*, go away before he comes ; *antes que eu morra*, before I die.

Mas antes, pelo contrário, mas pelo contrário.

These particles are rendered into English by *on the contrary, on the other hand, nay* ; as, *mas antes, mas pelo contrário, or pelo contrário isto he muito diferente*, nay it is quite another thing, *mas antes, pelo contrário, &c. elle he avarênto*, nay, or on the contrary, he is a covetous man.

Pará melhor dizer.

This phrase is rendered into English by *nay* ; as, *elle tem ja bastante, ou pará melhor dizer, mais do necessário*, he has already enough, nay too much ; *A isto he que nos chamámos direito das gentes, ou pará melhor dizer, da razão*, this is what we call the law of nations,

nations, which may be called more properly the law of reason.

Que.

We have already observed that *que* is a particle which most conjunctions are composed of; as, *ainda que*, although; *de sorte que*, so that, &c.

The particle *que* sometimes is the sign of the third persons of the imperative, as *let* in *English*; as, *que falle*, let him speak; *que rião*, let them laugh.

Que is used between two verbs, to determine and specify the sense of the first, as *eu vos asseguro que assim he*, I assure you that it is so; *duvido que assim seja*, I doubt whether it is so or no.

Que is used also after *hora* in the beginning of a sentence, and followed by a verb in the subjunctive, to denote by exclamation one's surprize, aversion, and reluctance of something; in which case there is a verb grammatically understood before *que*; as, *hora que se esquecesse elle de si mesmo!* I wonder, or is it possible for him to have forgot himself!

The exclamation, or admiration, is sometimes expressed without any verb; as, *que gosto*; *e no mesmo tempo, que pena!* how much pleasure and trouble at once!

Que is sometimes repeated; as,

Que bellos livros que tendes; what fine books you have got! *que bella que he a virtude!* how beautiful is virtue!

Que is sometimes followed by *de*; as, *que de loucos ha no mundo!* how many fools there are in the world!

Que is used after nouns denoting time, and is sometimes Englished by *when* or *since*, &c. and sometimes left out; as

O dia que elle partio, the day when he sat out.

Quanto tempo ha que estais em Londres? how long have you lived in London? How long is it since you lived in London?

Ha dez annos que faz a mesma cousa, he has done the same thing these ten years.

Há dez annos que morréo, he died ten years ago.

Que is sometimes rendered into English by *because*, as you may see in Camoens, canto 2. stanza xvi. *que levemente hum ánimo*, and sometimes by *that, to the end that, in order to*; as you may see *ibid.* stanza xvii. *que cómo víssem, que no rio*, &c.

Que before *se* in the beginning of a sentence, is a redundancy not expressed in English; as *que se vos dizéis que*, if you say that, &c.

Que is used after the conjunction *a pénas* (scarce or hardly), and is Englished by *but*; as, *a pénas acabou de fallar que logo morréo*; he had hardly done speaking but he expired.

Que sometimes is preceded by *desorte, de maneira, de geito*, and then it is Englished by *so that, in such a manner, inso much that*; as *eu o farei de sorte que fiqueis contente*, I will do it so that, or in that manner that, you shall be contented.

De véras.

De véras signifies *in earnest*; but sometimes it is Englished by *no sure*; *de véras! não o posso crer*, no sure!

Hora.

Hóra, or *óra*, is an interjection that serves to encourage, as we have seen above; but when it is repeated, it is Englished by *sometimes, one while, another while*; as, *ora está bem, óra está mal*, sometimes he is well, sometimes ill, *élle óra está de hum parecer, e ora de outro*, he is now of one opinion, and next moment of another. *Por óra*, signifies *now, for the present*.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Portuguese Orthography ; and first of Capitals and Stops.

I. **T**HE proper names, as well as the surnames, always begin with a capital.

II. The names of nations, kingdoms, and provinces, also begin with a capital ; as, *Francéz*, French ; *Ingléz*, English, &c.

III. All names of dignities, degrees, and honours, require a capital ; as *Réy*, *Bispo*, &c. King, Bishop, &c.

IV. At the beginning of a period, as well as of a verse, the first letter is always a capital.

V. The names of arts and sciences, as well as those of kindred, begin with a capital.

Of Stops.

The use of stops, or points, is to distinguish words and sentences.

The Portuguese have six stops, or pauses, viz.

1. The *ponto final*, the same as our period or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to shew that the sentence is completely finished.

2. The *dous pontos*, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period ; that is, when the sense is complete, but the sentence not ended.

3. The *ponto e vírgula*, our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pause which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence.

4. The *ponto e interrogação*, the point of interrogation thus (?).

5. *Ponto e admiração*, the point of admiration thus (!).

6. The *vírgula*, the same with our comma (,) and is the shortest pause or resting, in speech, being used chiefly to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.

The

The conjunction *e*, the relative *qual*, and the disjunctions *ou* and *nem*, require a comma before them.

The Portuguese make use also of a parenthesis, thus (); but they do not make use of the diæresis, called by the printers *créma* (·); they make use also of the *ângulo*, thus Δ , called by the printers *caret*.

The apostrophe, or, as they call it, *viracento*, likewise takes place in this as in other languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy pronunciation of words, by cutting off an antecedent vowel; as, *d'ármas*, *d'élvás*, and not *dármas*, *délvas*, &c. But this is somewhat excusable in cases wherein, by use, they seem to be one word; as *nêsta*, *nêste*, *dêsta*, *dêste*, *nalgum*, *daquêlle*, *nêllo*, *nêlla*, *daquí*, *dali*, *atequí*, *ategêra*; and not *em êlle*, *de elle*, &c.

Of the Accents.

The accent, which is the very soul of articulated words, is a sound of the voice by which we pronounce some syllables shorter, others longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accents the Portuguese ought to make use of, according to *Madureira*, in his *Portuguese Orthography*.

The Portuguese indeed are acquainted with three accents, but they ought to make use of two only, namely, the acute, which descends from the right to the left ('), and the circumflex, thus (^).

1. The acute serves to prolong the pronunciation, and is put, according to *Madureira*, on the third person singular of the future tense; as *amará*, *lerá*, &c.

2. On the penultima of the preterpluperfect tense of the indicative mood; as, *amára*, *ensinára*, &c.

3. The acute accent ought to be put also on the penultima of the third persons of the present tense of the verb *renunciár*, *pronunciár*, *duvidár*, &c. thus *renuncia*, *pronuncia*, *dúvida*, &c. that they may be

be distinguished from the nouns *renúncia*, *pronúncia*, *dúvida*, &c. The same accent is also put on *está*, *nó*, to distinguish them from *esta*, this, and *no*, in the.

The vowel *o* has two sounds, according to the two accents that may be put on it; one open, when it is marked with the acute accent, and is pronounced like *o* in *store*; the other close, when it is marked with the circumflex accent, and then is pronounced like *u* in *stumble*.

There are many nouns, both substantive and adjective, which are accented in the singular with the circumflex, and in the plural with the acute; and the adjectives that have two terminations, particularly those ending in *oso*, *osa*, must be accented (in the singular) with the circumflex in the masculine, and with the acute in the feminine; as,

Fogo, fire; plural, *fógos*.

Fôrno, oven; plural, *fórnos*.

ólho, eye; plural, *ólbos*.

ovo, egg; plural, *óvos*.

ósso, bone; plural, *óssos*.

Pôço, well; plural, *péços*.

Pórco, hog; plural, *pórcos*.

Rôgo, prayer; plural, *rêgos*. And so *fôjo*, *tôrno*, *formôso*, *sequiôso*, *suppôsto*, *pôvo*, *tôrio*, *tôrta*, *copiôso*, *copiôsa*, &c.

The following keep the circumflex accent in both numbers: *bôlo*, *bôlos*; *bêjo*, *bêjos*; *bôto*, *bôtos*; *côco*, *côcos*; *chôro*, *chôros*; *côto*, *côtos*; *fôrro*, *fôrros*; *gôrdo*, *gôrdos*; *gôsto*, *gôstos*; *gôzo*, *gôzos*; *lôbo*, *lôbos*; *môço*, *môços*; *nôjo*, *nôjos*; *pôtro*, *pôtros*; *tôlo*, *tôlos*; *ferrôlho*, *ferrôlbos*; *rapôso*, *rapôsos*; *arrôz*, *arrôzes*; *algôz*, *algôzes*, &c.

On the contrary, the following keep the acute accent in both numbers: *côpo*, *côpos*; *môdo*, *môdos*; *nôssô*, *nôssos*; *vôssô*, *vôssos*, &c.

When the accent circumflex is put on the *ê*, then the *e* is pronounced like the French masculine *e*; but when *e* is accented with the acute accent, then

the *e* is to be pronounced like the *e* open in French, and it is exceeding sonorous and long. See the pronunciation of the vowel *e*.

Nouns ending in *az*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, must have the acute accent on the vowel before the *z*; as, *rapáz*, a boy; *nóz*, a walnut; *alcaçúz*, liquorish: but you must except *arroz*, rice; *algóz*, a hang-man.

Nouns ending in *ez* generally have the circumflex accent; as *mêz*, a month; *marquêz*, a marquis; &c. except the surnames; as, *Alvarêz*, *Antunêz*, *Lopêz*, *Henriquêz*, *Gonçalvêz*, *Rodriguêz*, *Perêz*, *Nunêz*, *Tellêz*, &c.

Some Observations upon the Portuguese Orthography.

Both the Portuguese orthographers and best authors vary so much in their rules and ways of writing, that it is a hard matter, and quite out of any grammarian's way, to clear up this part of the Portuguese grammar: since it requires no less authority than that of the Royal Portuguese Academy. However, not to omit such a material part of the Grammar, I shall present the learners with the following observations.

I. When the Latin words from which the Portuguese are derived, begin with a *b*, the Portuguese likewise must begin with it; therefore you must write and pronounce the *b*, in the following words, *bom*, *bondade*, *bem*, *bênto*, &c. because they are derived from *bonus*, *bonitas*, &c. But you must except *bainha*, *bexiga*, *bairro*, which begin with a *b*, though they are derived from *vagina*, *vesica*, *vicus*.

II. Likewise if the Latin words begin with a *v*, the Portuguese words derived from them must also begin with it; as *vída*, *vivér*, *varrér*, *ver*, *vínho*, &c. from *vita*, *vivere*, *verrere*, *videre*, *vinum*, &c.

Though *b* ought to be pronounced only by closing the lips, and *v* by touching the superior teeth with the inferior lips; yet, by a certain affinity between these

these two letters, in speaking there is a great confusion in the pronunciation of them in the province of *Entre Dóuro e Minho*: and this confusion has not been peculiar to the Portuguese language, because *Nebrixa* says, in his *Castilian Orthography*, that in his time some Spaniards could hardly make any distinction between these two letters.

III. The *p* found in some words originally Latin, is changed in Portuguese into a *b*; as, *cábra*, *cabéllo*, *cabéça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c.

IV. The Portuguese generally make use of the *y* in the following words: *ay*, *rêy*, *frêy*, *léy*, *máy*, *páy*, *máyo*, *mêyo*, and some others.

Bluteau says, that we must make use of the *y* in words having a Greek origin; as, *syllaba*, *Chrysopeia*, *pyramide*, *polygono*, *hydrographia*, *hydrópico*, *phýsica*, *hypérbole*, *hypócrita*, *Apócrypho*, &c.

V. The *ph* are used by the Portuguese in some words taken from the Greek; as, *philosophía*, *philologia*, *Philadelphía*, *epitáphio*, &c.

VI. The *r* in Portuguese has two pronunciations, one soft, expressed by a single *r*, as in *arádo*, a plough; and after the consonants *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *p*, *t*; and another hard, in which two *rr* are used; as in *bárro*, *cárro*, &c. But you must observe,

1. That in the beginning of a word two *rr* must never be used, because then the *r* is always pronounced hard in Portuguese; as in the words *rêmo*, *ríco*, *róda*, &c.

2. When the consonants *l*, *n*, *s*, are before the *r*, either in a single word, or a compound one, this letter must never be doubled, because then its sound is always strong; as in *abalroár*, *enriquecér*, *bónra*, *desfregrado*, *Hénrique*, *Israelíta*, &c.

3. The *r* after a *b*, is also pronounced hard in compounds with the prepositions *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, and yet is not doubled; as in *abrogár*, *obrepção*, *subrepção*.

VII. The *s* is never doubled in the beginning of words, nor after the consonants; therefore you

must write *sarár*, *sabér*, *falsamente*, *fálsa*, *mânso*, &c.

The *s* is pronounced like *z* between two vowels, in words derived from the Latin, as well as in those that end in *ôsa*, and *ôso*; as *mûsa*, *cáso*, *rîso*, *amorôso*, *cuidadôso*, *cása*, &c. You must also observe, that *cofer* signifies *to sew*, but *cozér* signifies *to boil or bake*.

VIII. *Th* are generally used in words derived from the Greek; as, *amphitheatro*, *albeísta*, *theólogo*, *lethárogo*, *método*, &c.

Th is also used in the Portuguese preposition *até*; though some write it thus, *até*.

IX. When *pt* is found in Latin words, it must be kept in the Portuguese derived from them; as, *áp-to*, *inépto*, *ótimo*, &c. from *aptus*, *ineptus*, *optimus*, &c. You must make the same observation about *ct*.

X. *Ch* is sounded like *k*, in words derived from the Greek; as, *orchânjo*, *archiduque*, *Chrysostómo*, *chrysol*, *chrisólogo*, *Christovão*, *monarchia*, &c. These words must be written with *ch*, in order to preserve to the eye the etymology of words.

Note, that *ch* in words that are not derived from the Greek is pronounced like *ch* in the English words *church*, *chin*, *much*, &c. but as some confound the *ch* with the *x*, and begin with *x* those words that should begin with *ch*, I thought it necessary to make a collection of them.

WORDS BEGINNING WITH

CHA.		
	Chamalóte	Chançonêta
	Chamar	Chanquêta
Chá	Chamariz	Chantagem
Chãa	Chambão	Chantrado
Chãca	Chamejár	Chântre
Chacina	Chamíça	Chão
Cháço.	Chaminé	Chápa
Chácota	Chamuscár	Chapádo
Chafariz	Chança	Chapeádo
Chága	Chancela	Chapelêta
Chalúpa	Chancelaria	Chapéo
Cháma	Chancelér	

Chapim

Chapim
Chapinhár,
Chapúz
Charaméla
Charameleíro
Chárco
Charnéca
Charneíra,
Charóla
Chárpa
Chárro
Charrúa
Chásco
Chafôna
Chatim
Cháto
Chavão
Chavascál
Cháve
Chaválha
Chavêta
Chavínha.

CHE.

Chibárro
Chíbo
Chícharos
Chichárro
Chichélos
Chicória
Chicóte
Chífra
Chifrár
Chífre
Chilindrão
Chilrár
Chimbéo
Chineár
Chincheíro
Chinchôrro
Chinéla
Chiqueíro
Chísfa
Chispár
Chísfe
Chîta.

CHO.

Chôfraão
Chófre
Chóldabolda
Chóque
Chorár
Chorrílho
Chôrro
Chovór
Chóupa
Choupána
Chóupo, *or* Chôpo
Chouríço
Choutár.

CHU.

Chûça
Chupamél
Chupár
Chuchurriár
Chûço
Chûfa
Chumáço
Chumbár
Chûmbo
Churrião
Churûme
Chúfma
Chúva
Chuveíro

CHY.

Chêa, *or* Chéya
Chéfe
Chegár
Cheriár, *and its de-*
rivatives
Cherîvia
Chérne.
CHI.
Chiár

Chóça
Chóca
Chocalhár
Chocálho
Chocár
Chocarrear
Chocarrice
Chôco *and* Chócos
Chy'pre.
Chocoláte

The following words begin with *ce* and not *se*.

Cêa
Ceádo
Ceár
CEB.
Cebôla
Cebolál
Cebolínho.
CED.
Cedavím

Cedéla
Cedénho
Cedér
Cedílho
Cêdo
Cédro
Cédula.
CÉG.
Céga

Cegár
Cégo
Cegónha
Cegûde
Cegueíra.
CEI.
Ceífa
Ceifão
Ceirão

Ceirinha

Ceirínha	Centésimo	Cerrár
Ceivár.	Centéyo	Cerralheiro
	Cénto	Cerrálho
CEL.	Centóculo	Cerrárfe
Celáda	Centopéa	Cérro
Celebração	Centrá	Cérta
Celebrár	Céntro	Cérto
Célebre	Céntuplo	Certãa
Celésto	Centúria	Certéza
Celestiál	Centurião	Certída
Celestrina	Céo	Certificár
Celeúsma		Cérva
Célga	CEP.	Cervál
Célha	Cépa	Cervêja
Célho	Cepílho	Cervíllhas
Celibádo	Cépo	Cervíz
Celibáto	Céptro.	Cerúda
Celícola		Ceruléo
Celidónia	CER.	Cérvo
Célla	Céra	Cerzír.
Celleiro	Ceraferário	
Celleireiro	Cérbero	CES.
Céltas.	Cérca	Cesár
	Cercádo	Cesaréa
CEM.	Cercár	Césma
Cem	Cercadór	Cesmaría
Cemitério.	Cercadúra	Cesmeíro
	Cérce	Cesão
CEN.	Cerceádo	Cessação
Cenáculo	Cerceár	Cessár
Céno	Cercíllo	Césta
Cenóbio	Cérco	Cesínha
Cenobítico	Cerdófo	Cestínho
Cenotáphia	Cérebro	Cesteíro
Cenoura	Cereíjas	Césto
Cenráda	Cercijál	Cesúra
Cenreíra	Ceremonía	
Cénso	Ceremoniál	CEV.
Censôr	Cerieíro	Céva
Censúra	Cérne	Ceváda
Censurádo	Cernélha	Cevadál
Censurár	Ceról	Cevadeíra
Centáuro	Ceróulas	Cevadouro
Centêna	Cerqueíro	Cevár
Centeál	Cerração	

CEZ.

Cezão

Cezímbar.

N. B. *Cerrá*, signifies *to shut*, or *shut up*; but *ferrár* signifies *to saw*, to cut timber or other matter with a saw.

The following words must have *ci*, and not *fi*, in their beginning.

	CIA.	Cigáno	Cintúra
Ciárse		Cigarra	Cínza
Ciática.		Cigúde	Cinzento.
	CIB.	Cigurélha.	Cinzeiro.
		CIL.	CIO.
Cíba			
Cibálho		Ciláda	Cíô
Cibório.		Cílhas	Ciôso
	CIC.	Cilhár	Ciôsa.
		Cilícia	
Cicatríz		Cilício	CIP.
Cicero		Cilládas.	Cípo
Cicióso.			Cipréste
		CIM.	Cipriano.
	CID.		
		Címa	- CIR.
Cidadão		Cimálha	
Cidadaös		Címbalo	Cirándá
Cidáde		Ciméyra	Cirandágem
Cidadôa		Címénto	Cirandár
Cídra		Cimitárta	Círco
Cidráda		Címo.	Circulação
Cidrão			Circular
Cidreíra.		CIN.	Círculo
	CIE.	Cínca	Circuíto
		Cincár	Circumcidár
Ciência.		Cíncho	Circumcísão
	CIF.	Cínco	Circumferência
		Cincoenta	Circumspécio
Cifár		Cingidouro	Circumspécção
Cífra		Cíngir	Circumstância
Cifrár.		Cíngulo	Circumstánte
	CIG.	Cinnamômo	Cîrio
		Cínta	Cirurgia
Cigána		Cintillár	Cirurgião

Cirzír.	Citação	
	Citádo	CIU.
CIS.	Citár	Ciûme
Ciscár	Citeriór	Ciûmes.
Cisco	Cithara	
Cisma	Citharédo	CIZ.
Eismático	Citrino	Cizânia
Cisne	Cível	Cizirão.
Cisterciõse	Civil	
Cistérna	Civilidáde.	

XI. No Portuguese word begins with *ço* ; büt according to *Madureira*, there are some that begin with *ça*, and *çu* ; as *çapâte*, *çapeteiro*, *çargáço*, *çúja*, *çugidáde*, *çûmo*, *çúrra*, *çurrár*, and some others.

The *ç* is used after *p* in those Portuguese words that have in their Latin root *pt* ; as *descripção*, *accepção*, &c. from *descriptio*, *acceptio*, &c.

Of Double Letters.

It is to be generally observed, that the consonants are doubled in those Portuguese words, whose Latin roots have likewise the same double consonants ; as *acelerár*, *accénto*, *occidente*, &c. from *accélero*, *accentus*, *occidens*, &c. *affligir*, *affluência*, *affirmação*, &c. from *affligo*, *affluentia*, *affirmatio*, &c. as you will see in the following collections.

B.

B is to be doubled in *abbáde*, *abbaciál*, *abbádia*, *abbadessa*, *abbreviatúra*, *abbreviár*, and some others.

C.

C is to be doubled in the following words, and some of their derivatives.

A.	Accénto	Acceíta
Abstracção	Acçentuár	Acceitação
Acção	Accepção	Acceitadór
		Accietár

Acceitár	D.	Obstrucção
Accessão	Decocção	Occâsião
Accessível	Deducção	Occasionár
Accêssô	Desjecção	Occâso
Accessório	Desôccupação	Occidentál
Accidentál	Desoccupádo	Occidente
Accidênte	Desoccupár	Occidúo
Acceleráda	Detracção	Occisfão
Accelerádo	Dicção	Occurrér
Accelerár	Diccionario	Occultaménte
Acclamação	Direcção.	Occultádo
Acclamár	Disfracção.	Occultár
Accommodação	E.	Occúlto
Accomodádo	Eccéntrico	Occupação
Accommodár	Ecclesiástico	Occupádo
Accumuláção	Erecção	Occupár
Accumuládo	Evicção	Occurrência
Accumulár	Exacção	Occurrênte.
Accusação	Extracção.	P.
Accusádo	F.	Peccádo
Accusádo	Facção	Peccadôr
Accusár	Ficção	Peccadóra
Accusativo	Fracção	Peccánte
Adstricção	I.	Peccar
Afflicção	Impeccabilidade.	Predicção
Attracção	Impeccável	Preoccupár
B.	Inaccessível	Producção
Báccho	Indicção	Projecção
Bocca	Inducção	Profecção
Boccação	Infecção	Putrefacção.
Boccadinho	Infracção	R.
Bocçado	Inspecção	Rarefacção
Boccal.	Instrucção	Reconducção
C.	Intellecção	Refecção
Circumspécção	Interjecção	Refecção
Coacção	Interfecção	Refracção
Cocção	Introducção.	Refricção.
Collecção	M.	S.
Constricção	Manuducção.	Satisfacção.
Construcção	O.	Seccár
Contracção	Objecção	Sécco
Correcção		Sécção

Seccúra	Succéssivo	T.
Sôcco	Succéssível	Transacção
Soccôrrer	Succéssôr	Tradução
Soccórro	Succintaménte	V.
Subtracção	Succinto	
Succéder	Sûcco	Vacca
Successão	Succóso	Vaccada
Succéssô	Succubo.	Vaccum.

D.

This letter is doubled in the following words :
addição, addicionádo, addicionár, additamento, additár.

F.

F is to be doubled in

Affabilidade	Affeminádo	Affirmadaménte
Affável	Affeminárse	Affirmadôr
Affadigádo	Afferradaménte	Affirmár
Affadigár	Afferrádo	Affistulárse
Affagádo	Afferrár	Affixár.
Affagár	Afferretoádo	
Affágos	Afferretoár	AFFL.
Affamádo	Afferrolhádo	Affamárse
Affamárse	Afferrolhár	Afflicção
Affastádo	Afferventádo	Afflicto
Affastár	Afferventár	Affligir
Affazendádo	Affervorádo	Affluência
Affazérse.	Affervorár	

AFFE.

AFFI.

Affeádo	Affiádo	Affocinliár
Affeár	Affiár	Affogádo
Affeamento	Affidalgádo	Affogadôr
Affectadaménte	Affidalgárse	Affogár
Affectádo	Affigurádo	Affogamento
Affectár	Affigurár	Affogueádo
Affécto	Affilháda	Affogueár
Affectuóso	Affiladôr	Afforádo
Affeição	Affilár	Afforadór
Affeiçãoádo	Affinádo	Afforár
Affeiçãoár	Affinár	Afforamento
Affeíte	Affincádo	Afformentár
Affeitár	Affincár	Afformoseádo
		Afformoseár

Affoutádo

Affoutádo	Affumádo	E.
Affoutár	Affumár	
Affoutéza	Affundádo	Effectivamente
Affóuto.	Affundárfse	Effectivo
	Affundírfse	Effeito
AFFR.	Affuzillár.	Effetuár
Affracár		Efficazmente
Afframengádo	DI.	Efficácia
Affreguesádo	Diffamádo	Efficáz
Affreguesárfse	Diffamár	Efficiente
Affróna	Differença	Effígie.
Affrontádo	Differençar	O.
Affrontaménto	Differenças	
Affrontár	Differente	Offendér
Affrontosaménte	Differentemente	Offerecér
Affrontófo	Difficíl	Offuscár.
Affroxadaménte	Difficuldáde	S.
Affroxádo	Difficultár	
Affroxár.	Difficultosaménte	Suffocár
	Difficultófo	Suffrágio, and some others.
AFFU.	Diffusão	
Affugentádo	Diffusaménte	
Affugentár	Diffúfo	

G.

This letter is to be doubled in

Aggravánte	Aggressôr	Exaggerár
Aggravár	Exaggeração	Suggestér
Aggravádo	Exaggeradór	Suggestão
Aggrávo	Exaggerádo	Suggestído.

L.

L is to be doubled in

AB.	Acafelladúra	AL.
Aballádo	Acafellár	Allegação
Aballadór	Acallentádo	Allegádo
Aballár	Acallentár	Allegár
Abállo	Acapelládo.	Allegória
Aballifádo		Allegórico
Abilifadôr	AF.	Allegorifár
Aballifár.	Afilládo	Allelúia
AC.	Afilladór	Alliviár
Acafelladór	Afillár.	Allucinação
		Allucinár

Allucinár	BA.	Cavalleíro
Alludír	Bacelláda	Cavállo.
Allumiár	Bacêllo	CE.
Allusãõ.	Barbélla	Cebôlla
AM.	Barrélla.	Cebollál
Amentelládo	BE.	Cebollínho
Amaréllõ	Bélla	Chartcellér
Amarellecérse	Bellaménte	Chancelloria
Amerellidãõ	Béllo	Célla
Amolládo	Belléza	Celleíro.
Amollár	Belleguím	CL.
Amollecér	Béllico	Clavellína
Amollecido	Bellicôso	CO.
Amollentár	Bellígero	Codicillo
Ampôlla.	Belluino.	Cólla
AN.	BU.	Colládo
Annullação	Búlla	Collár
Annullár.	Bullário.	Colleíra
AP.	CA.	Collação
Appellação	Calhiópe	Collateral
Appellánte	Camillo	Collécção
Appellár	Cavillação	Collécta
Appellidár	Cavillosamente	Collectivo
Appellido.	Caballína	Collectôr
AQ.	Cadélla	Colléga
Aquélla	Cadellínha	Collegiáda
Aquélle	Cállo	Collegial
Aquellóutro	Camartéllõ	Collégio
Aquíllõ.	Cambadélla	Colligár
AR.	Cancélla	Colligír
Arméllas	Capélla	Colly'rio
Arrepelládo	Capellão	Cóllo
Arrepéllão	Capelláda	Collocação
Arrepellár.	Capellanía	Collocár
AT.	Capéllo	Collóquio
Atropelládo	Capillár	COM.
Atropellár.	Castélla	Compellír
AV.	Castéllõ	Composélla
Avillanádo.	Casúllõ	Constellação
	Casúlla	Corrollário
	Caválla	Covéllõ
	Cavallaría	

Courélla	Encelleirár.	GA.
DE.	EQ.	Gabélla
Délla	Equipollência	Galládo
Déllas	Equipollénte.	Galladúra
Délle		Gallár
Délles	ES.	Gallégo
Degolládo	Escabelládo	Gállia
Degollação	Escabéllo	Gallicádo
Degollár	Escudélla	Gallicár
Degolladouro.	Escudéllão	Gálico
	Estillação	Gallínha
DI.	Estilládo	Gallinháço
Distillação	Estillar	Gallinheira
Distilladór	Estillicídio	Gallinheíro
Distillár.	Estrélla	Gallinhólla
	Estrelládo.	Galliópoli
DO.		Gallióta
Donzélla	EX.	Gallíza
	Excellência	Gállo
DU.	Excellénte	Gamélla
Duéllo	Expellír.	Gazélla.
		GO.
EB.	FA.	Gólla.
Ebullição	Fálla	
	Fallácha	HE.
ELI.	Fallácia	Hellespónto
Élla	Falladór	Hendecasy'llabo
Éllas	Fallár	Hollánda
Élle	Fallecér	Hypállage.
Élles	Fallecido	
Elléboro	Fallência	JA.
Ellipse	Fallído.	Janélla
Ellíptico.		Janelleíra
	FE.	Janellínha
EM.	Ferdizélla	Jarmélla.
Emolliénte		
Emollír	FL.	I.
	Flagellánte	Illação
EN.	Flagéllo.	Illaqueár
Enalláge		Illatívo
Encapelládo	FO.	Illegítimo
Encapellár	Fólle	Illéso
Encastelládo	Follículo	Illicár
Encastellár	Fontélla.	Illiciadór
		Illicitaménte

Illicitaménte
 Ilícito
 Illocável
 Illudido
 Illudír
 Illuminação
 Illuminado
 Illuminár
 Illuminativo
 Illusão
 Illúso
 Illustração
 Illustrár
 Illústre
 Illustríssimo
 Illy'rio
 Imbélla
 Impellír
 Incapilláto
 Infallível
 Inintelligível
 Intervállo.

L.

Libéllo
 Lordéllo
 Loufella.

M.

Marcélla
 Marcellína
 Marcéllo
 Martelláda
 Martellár
 Martéllo
 Martellínho
 Malfallánte
 Mallográdo
 Mamillár
 Medúlla
 Mellifluo
 Méllo
 Metállico
 Millenário
 Milléfimo

Mirandélla
 Miscellânia
 Mólle
 Molleíra
 Molléza
 Mollíce
 Mollidão
 Mollificánte
 Mollificár
 Mollínár
 Monosy'llabo.

N.

Nélla
 Néllas
 Nélle
 Néllés
 Nigélla
 Novélla
 Nouvelleíro
 Núlla
 Nulliáde
 Núllo
 Nuzéllos.

O.

Odivéllas
 Ollaría
 Olleíro
 Ouguélla.

P.

Pálla
 Palládio
 Pallánte
 Pállas
 Palliádo
 Palliár
 Pallidéz
 Pállido
 Pállio
 Paradélla
 Paralláxe
 Parallélo
 Parallelógramo

Pélle
 Pellefínha
 Péllica
 Película
 Panélla
 Pimpinélla
 Phíllis
 Pollegáda
 Pollegár
 Polléz
 Pollução
 Pollúto
 Polyfy'llabo
 Portacóllo
 Portélla
 Possílla
 Poufáfólles
 Prunélle
 Pulmélla
 Pupílla
 Pupíllo
 Pusillanimidade
 Pusillánime.

Q.

Quartélla

R.

Rabadélla
 Rebelládo
 Rebelláo
 Rebellárse
 Rebélião
 Rélla
 Rodofólle
 Rodopéllo
 Rosélla
 Ruélla.

S.

Sélla
 Selládo
 Selládór
 Sellagão
 Sellár

Selleíro

Selleíro	Tólla	Vaffálla
Séllo	Tollíce	VE.
Sentinélla	Tóllo	
Siby'lla	Torcicólla	Velleidáde
Sigillo	Tranquillidáde	Vellicação
Sigilládo	Tranquíllo	Vellicár
Sobrepellíz	Trélla	Véllo
Sugillação	Trisy'llabo	Vellófo
Sy'llaba	Tunicélla	Velládo
Syllabático	Túllio	Verdefélla
Syllábico	V.	VI.
Syllogísar		
Syllogísino.	Vacillação	Vílla
T.	Vacillánte	Villanía
	Vacillár	Villaãménente
Tabélla	Válla	Villão
Tabellião	Valládo	Villãa
Tabellióa	Vallár	Vitélla
Titillação	Válle	Vitellíno.
Tiullár	Vaffallágem	

N. B. *Annulár* signifies to *annul*; but *annulár* is an adjective, and signifies *annular*, or in the form of a ring. *L* is doubled by some in the words *pelo*, *pela*, (for) thus *pello*, *pella*.

M.

M is to be doubled in

Accommodár	Commúm	Emmudecér
Commemoração	Commungár	Engòmmar
Comménda	Communicár	Epigrámma
Commenfurár	Communidáde	Flámma
Commentár	Commutár	Flammánte
Commerciár	Consummár	Flámmula.
Commettár	Desaccommodár	Gémma
Comminação	Descómmodo	Gómma
Commiseração	Dilémma	Grammática
Commissão	Emmadeirár	Immaculáda
Commissário	Emmadeixár	Immanénente
Commóção	Emmagrecér	Immarcessível
Cómmodo	Emmanquecér	Immateriál
Commovér	Emmassár	Immatúro
		Immediata-

Immediataménte	Immortificádo	Mámma
Immemorável	Immóvel	Mammár
Imménso	Immudável	Recommendár
Immenfurável	Immúndo	Sómma
Immobilidadé	Immunidáde	Sommár
Immoderadaménte	Immutável	Súmma
Immodéstó	Incómodo	Summário
Immódico	Incommunicável	Summidáde
Immolár	Incommutável	Symmetría, and
Immortalifár	Inflammár	some others.

N. B. *M*, and not *n*, is always made use of before *b*, *m*, *p*.

N.

N is likewise doubled in several verbs compounded with *an*, *en*, *in*, *con*, as *annelár*, *annéxa*, *annão*, *annáta*, *annél*, *A'nná*, *ánno*, *annulár*, *connéxão*, *connéxo*, *depennár*, *empennár*, *ennastrár*, *ennegrecér*, *innáto*, *innavegável*, *innocência*, *manná*, *Mariánna*, *pánnó*, *pénna*, when it signifies a pen, *tyránno*, and some others.

P.

This letter is to be doubled in words beginning with *p* compounded with the Latin prepositions *ad*, *ob*, *sub*; as *apparáto*, *apparecér*, *oppór*, *opprimír*, *suppór*, *Philippe*, *póppe*, &c.

N. B. *Páppa* signifies *pap*, or a sort of spoonmeat for children; but *pápa* signifies *the Pope*.

R.

The *r* is doubled in such words as are strongly pronounced in the middle; as *guérra*, *arrancár*, *arredár*, *arrimár*, *arruinár*, *carregár*, *cárro*, &c.

S.

The *s* is to be doubled in the Portuguese superlatives, because it is doubled in the Latin roots; it is also doubled in the following words:

Abbadéssa

Abbadêssa	Arremessár	Nóssô
Baronêssa	Affaltár	Nóffa
Condêssa	Affe'yo	E'ffa
Priorêssa	Affessor	E'ffe
Affár	Afsím	I'ffo
Affanhár	Affistír	O'ffo
Affegurár	Affombrár	Passeár
Affignár	Affoprár	Passár
Affolár	Affobiár	Remêssa
Accêssô	Affustár	Ingrêssô, and many
Aggressôr	Atravessár	others.
Appressár	Necessitár	
Amassár	Níffo	

T.

T is doubled in the following words and their derivatives :

Attemperár	Attribuír	Permittír
Atiênção	Attribúto	Promettér
Attendér	Attrição	Remettér
Attentár	Attrito	Remettír
Attenuação	Commettér	Sétta
Attenuár	Demittír	Settênta
Attónito	Enfittár	Settecêntos
Attracção	Fítta	Transmittír.
Attractivo	Intrommettér	
Attrahír	Omittír	

Of the Quantity of Syllables and their Sound.

Of Words that make their Penultima in a.

N. B. You must remember what we have said above about the accents.

All words ending in ábo, ába, áco, áca, ácho, ácha, áco, áça, ádo, áda, áfo, áfa, ágo, ága, ágem, ágre, álbo, álba, álo, ála, have the penultimas long; as diábo, mangába, macáco, macáca, caváca, mingícho, garnácha, madráco, linháca, amádo, punháda, (except relámpago, antropófago, levádo, and cágado, which are short in the penultima), abáfo, abáfa, saramágo, adága, (except flameágo or estómago, ámagô, amáracô, which are short),

P

trabálbo,

trabalho, toálba, badálo, (except *anómalo, búfalo, escándalo*, which are short), *tanchagem, vinágre*.

Words ending in *ámo, áma, ámbó, ámba, áno, ána*, have their penultimas long; as, *escâmo, courâma, castânbo, aránba, engâno, pestâna*; except *pâmpano, tûmpano, bígamo*.

Words ending in *ápo, ápa, áque, áro, ára*, have their penultimas long; as, *guardanápo, solápa, basbáque, empáro, seára*; except *cântaro, pûcaro, láparo, báfaro, lûparo, píparo, pícaro, câmera, támara, pássaro, Lázaro, bárbaro, cócaras, &c.*

Words ending in *árro, árra, áto, áta, ávo, áva, áxo, áxas*, make the penultima long; as, *bizárro, bizárra, bísáto, pataráta, escrâvo, escráva*, (except *côncava*, and *bísavo*), *carlâxo, tarráxa*.

Of Words that make their Penultima in e.

All words ending in *ébo, éba, édo, éda, éfa*, have their penultima long; as, *mancêbo, mancêba, azêdo, azêda, sanêfa*.

Words ending in *éfe* are long; as, *magaréfe*: as well as those ending in *éco, éca, êço, êça*; as *bonêco, bonêca, cabêço, cabêça*.

Words ending in *égo, éga*, are long; as, *morcêgo, facêgo, relêgo, entrêga, allêga*; except *cônego, trásego, córrego, sôfrego, pécego, fôlego, bútega, cócegas*.

Words ending in *êso, êsa, êlo, êla*, are long; as, *caranguêjo, bocêjo, igrêja, Alentêjo, envêja, martêlo, querêla*.

Words ending in *êmo, êma, êno, êna*, are long; as, *suprêmo, postêma, acêno, açucêna*; except *apózema*.

N. B. The penultima is short in the word *ingreme*.

Words ending in *êpo, êpa, êpe, êque, êro, êra*, are long; as, *decêpo, carêpa, julêpe, molêque, sevêro, sevêra, tempêro*, (when a noun): and *tempêro*, (when a verb) except *áspero, próspero*.

Words ending in *êso, êsa, êzo, êza, êto, êta, ête, êvo, êva, êve*, are long; as, *acêso, acêsa, desprêzo, gran-*

grandêza and *desprêso*, (when a verb) *entremêto*, *galê-hêta*, *ramathête*, *bosête*, *atrêvo*, *atrêva*, *atrêve*.

Of Words that make their Penultima in i.

Words ending in *ibo*, *iba*, *ibe*, *icho*, *icha*, *iche*, *ico*, *ica*, *iço*, *íça*, *ice*, *ido*, *ida*, *ifo*, *ífa*, *ife*, have the penultima long; as, *estribo*, *arriba*, *arribe*, *esguicho*, *esguicha*, *azeviche*, *panico*, (a sort of stuff) *botica*; except *mecânico*, *ecuménico*, *crítico*, *político*, *pânico*, (panick), and some others borrowed from the Greek and Latin. In *Iço*, *íça*, &c. as, *rolíço*, *preguíça*, *velhíce*, *marído*, *medida*; except *húmido*, *pálido*, *bôrrido*, and some others derived from the Latin. In *ifo*, *ífa*, &c. as *borrífo*, *alcatífa*, *patífe*.

Words ending in *igo* and *iga*, are long; as, *amigo*, *amiga*, except *pródigo*, *pródiga*.

Words ending in *ijo*, and *ija*, are long; as, *affijo*, *artemija*.

Words ending in *ilbo*, *ilba*, are long; as, *atílbo*, *beatílba*. Others ending in *ilo*, *ila*, as, *gorgomilo*, *perfila*, *desfíla*.

Words ending in *imo*, *ima*, have the penultima long; as *opímo*, *cadímo*, *esgríma*, *lastíma*, (when a verb); except *lástima* (when a noun), *ferónimo*, *péssimo*, and all the superlatives, *anonimo*, and some others.

Words ending in *inbo*, *inba*, *ino*, *ina*, *ipo*, *ipa*, *ipe*, have the penultima long; as, *constípo*, *constípa*, *Eurípo*, *acipípe*. Others in *iquo*, *iqua*, *ique*, *iro*, *ira*, *ire*; as, *iníquo*, *iníqua*, *lambíque*, *retíro*, *mentíra*, *suspire*.

Words ending in *iso*, *isa*, *izo*, *iza*, *ito*, *ita*, *ivo*, *iva*, *ixo*, *ixa*, are long in the penultima; as, *avíso*, *camísa*, *juízo*, *ajuíza*, *altívo*, *altíva*, *prolíxo*, *prolíxa*, *apíto*, *cabrito*; except *púlpito*, *vómito*, *decrépito*, *espírito*, *débito*, and some others.

Rules for such words as make their penultima in o.

Words ending in *obo*, *oba*, *obe*, *obra*, *obro*, *obre*, have their penultima long; as, *lôbo*, *lôba*, *arrôba*,

arróbe, glóbo, alcóva, óbro, óbra, cóbre, cóbro, dóbro.

Words ending in *ócho, ócha, óco, óca, óço, óça, ódo, óda, óde, óso, ósa, óse*, have the penultima long ; as, *agarrócho, garrócha, carócha, bióco*, except *alliloco*) *massaróca, minbóca, almóço, móça*, (a girl) *móça*, or *móssa*, (a notch), *almóço* (when a verb), *carróça, lódo, bôda, bóde, póde*, (the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb *póder*), *póde* (the third person singular of the preterperfect definite of the same verb), *galbófa, bófe*.

Words ending in *ófro, ófra, ófre*, are long ; as, *alcaxófra, cófre, enxófre*.

Words ending in *ógo, óga, ógue*, are long ; as, *afógo, affóga, affogue, desafógo*, when a verb, and *desafógo*, when a noun.

Words ending in *ójo, ója*, have the penultima long ; as, *despójo*, when a verb, *nôjo, despójo* when a noun.

Words ending in *ólo, óla, óle*, are long ; as, *vióla, gallinhóla, bóla, engóle, miólo, bólo, rebólo, tólo, cebóla* ; except *pérola, frívolo, benévolo, malévolo*.

Words ending in *ómo, óma, óme*, have the penultima long ; as, *mordómo, redóma, fome*, except *Thomé*.

Words ending in *ónho, ónha, óns, óna*, have the penultima long ; as, *bisónho, risónha, dóno, atafóna, dóna* ; except *altísono*, and *unísono*.

Words ending in *ópla, ópo, ópa, ópe, ópro, ópra, ópre, óque*, have the penultima long ; as, *manópla, tópo, tópa, galópe, assópro*, when a verb, *assópra, assópre, assópro*, when a noun, *botóque*.

Words ending in *óre, óra, óre*, are long in the penultima ; as, *penbóro, penbóra, penbóre, chóro* when a noun ; *chóro* when a verb ; except *bácoro, rémora, pólvora, árvore*.

Words ending in *órro, órra*, are long ; as *socórrro, mórro, cachórra* ; and some others ending in *óso, óse, ósa, ózo, óza*, as, *primoróso, primorósa, industrióso, industriósa, ciózo, cióza, descóse*.

Words

Words ending in *óto, óta, óte*, have their penultima long; as *góto, góta, bóta, devóto, fróta, capóte, garróte*.

Words ending in *óvo, óva, óve*, are long in the penultima; as *óvo, corcóva, apróve*.

Words ending in *óxo, óxa*, are long in the penultima; as, *róxo, róxa, pintarróxo*.

Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in u.

Words ending in *úbo, úba, úbro, úbra, úcho, úcha, úco, úca, úço, úça*, make the penultima long; as, *adúbo, adúba*; except *súcubo, incubo*, and some others; *incúbro, incúbra, machúcho, embúcha, cadúco, cadúca, ré-buço, émbuça*.

Words ending in *údo, úda, úde, úfo, úfa, úfe, úgo, úga, újo, úja*, have the penultima long; as, *felpúdo, felpúda, almúde, pantúfo, adúfa, adúfe, sânguesúga, caramújo, azambúja*.

Words ending in *úlbo, úlba, úlbe, úlo, úla, úle, úmo, úma, úme, únbo, únba, únbe*; as, *bagúlbo, borbúlba, entúlbe, engúlo, engúla, bulebúle*; except *vocábulo, vestíbulo, ángulo, régulo, opúsculo, trémulo, patíbulo, thiríbulo*, and some others; *consúmo, consuma, cardúme, testemúnbo, testemúnba, empúnbe*.

Words ending in *úno, úna, úne, úpo, úpa, úpe, úque, úro, úra, úre*, are long in the penultima; as, *desúno, fortúna, desúne, apúpo, apúpa, apúpe, estúque, madúro, madúra, apúre*.

Words ending in *úso, úsa, úse, úzo, úza, úze, úto, úta, úte, úxo, úxa, úxe*, have the penultima long; as, *parafúso, parafúsa, parafúse, redúzo, redúza, redúze, condúto, labúta, enxúta, labúte*; except *cômputo* when a noun; *repúxo, empúxa, empúxe*; and some others ending in *úvo, úva, úve*; as, *viúvo, viúva, envúve*.

N. B. When the penultima is immediately followed by another vowel, you must make the following observations;

A before *e* must be accented with the acute accent, and pronounced accordingly; as, *sáe*, *cáe*: but before *i* it has no accent.

A before *o* must be pronounced and accented thus, *bacalháo*; but when the relative *o* is added to the third person singular of the present indicative, then *a* has no accent; as, *áma-ô*.

E before *a* is accented thus, *baléa*; and sometimes with the acute, as *assembléa*, *idéa*, and some others; and sometimes has no accent at all, as in *gávea*, *fémea*, and some others.

E before *o* is exceeding sonorous and long, as in *chapéo*, *coruchéo*; except *páteo*, *férreo*, *plúmbeo*, *aúreo*, *argénteo*.

I before *a*, *e*, *o*, is long; as *dizía*, *fazía*, *almo-talia*; except such as are borrowed from the Latin: as *néscia*, *comédia*, *féria*, *ciência*, *prudência*, and *sá-bia* when an adjective, &c. *I* before *o* and *e*, is long; as, *desvíe*, *desvío*; except *vício* and some others.

O before *a* is accented thus, *corôa*, *tôa*, *môa*, *esmôa*.

O before *e* is long in the words *dôe*, *môe*, *rôe*, and in the verb *sôe* when it signifies *to be wont*; but when it signifies *to sound*, it is to be accented thus, *sõe*.

U before *a* is long; as *rúa*, *charrúa*; except *melliflua*, *insua*.

U before *e* and *o* is long; as, *conclúo*, *recúo*, *con-clúe*, *rectúe*; except *mellifluo*, and some others derived from the Latin.

CHAP. IX.

Etymology of the Portuguese Tongue from the Latin.

THE Portuguese retains so great an affinity to the Latin, that several words of the latter are preserved in the former, by only allowing a small alteration; as may easily be seen in the following observations.

I. The *o* of the Latin words is preserved in some Portuguese ones; nay, some Latin words are entirely preserved in the Portuguese; as, *bóspede, córda, pórtá, &c.*

II. The *u* is changed into *o*; as, *fórca, golófo, estópa, mósca, amámos, &c.* from *furca, gulofus, flupa, musca, amamus, &c.*

III. The diphthong, *au*, is frequently changed into *ou*; as, *louvável, búro, cúve, móuro, &c.* from *laudabilis, aurum, caulis, maurus, &c.*

IV. The *e* is preserved in several Portuguese words; as, *cérto, férva, érva, térra, férro, &c.* from *certus, servus, herba, terra, ferrum, &c.*

V. The *e* takes the place of *i*; as, *enférmo, fêco, &c.* from *infirmus, sicus, &c.*; and the *i* is sometimes preserved, as in *indigno, benigno, &c.* from *indignus, benignus, &c.*

VI. The *b* is also changed into *v*; as, *árvore, duvidár, devér, estáva, amáva, &c.* from *arbor, dubitare, debere, stabat, amabat, &c.*

VII. The *c* is very often changed into *g*; as, *digo, agúdo, amigo, migálba, &c.* from *dico, acutus, amicus, mica, &c.*

VIII. *Cl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chamar, chève, &c.* from *clamare, clavis, &c.*

IX. When the *c* in Latin is followed by *t*, this letter is changed into *ç*; as, *acção, dicção, &c.* from *actio, dictio, &c.*; and sometimes the *e* before *t* is

changed into *i*; as, *feito*, *leito*, *noite*, *leite*, *peito*, &c. from *factus*, *lectum*, *nocte*, *lacte*, *pectus*, &c. Finally, both the *c* and *t* are preserved in a great number of words; as, *áeto*, *affl'eto*, *distin'eto*, &c. from *aetus*, *afflictus*, *distinctus*, &c.

X. The *d* is several times lost; as, *roér*, *excluír*, *raio*, &c. from *rodere*, *excludere*, *radius*, &c.

XI. The *f* is frequently preserved; as in *filbo*, *fazér*, *servór*, *formóso*, &c. from *filius*, *facere*, *fervor*, *formosus*, &c.

XII. The *g* is changed into *i*; as, *reino*, from *regnum*. Sometimes it is quite lost, as in *dêdo*, *frio*, *sêta*, *sinál*, *bainha*, &c. from *digitus*, *frigus*, *sagitta*, *signum*, *vagina*, &c.

XIII. The *b* is placed instead of the *l*; as, *álbo*, from *allium*. Sometimes it is added; as, *artílbo*, *albéo*, *fólba*, *confélbo*, &c. from *articulus*, *alienus*, *folium*, *consilium*, &c.

XIV. The *n* is sometimes added, and sometimes taken off; as, *máncha*, *ílba*, *Saltire*, *espóso*, from *macula*, *insula*, *sal nitrum*, *sponsus*, &c.

XV. The *mn* is preserved by many Portuguese writers in the words *álumno*, *calúmnia*, *colúmna*, *dámno*, *solémne*, *somno*, from *alumnus*, *calumnia*, *columna*, *damnum*, &c.

XVI. The double *nn* of the Latin is preserved in several words: as in *ánnos*, *innocéntia*, *innócho*, *innavegável*, *innovár*, *connéxo*, &c. from *annus*, *innocentia*, *innocius*, *innavigabilis*, *innovare*, *connexus*, &c.

XVII. The *gn* and *gm* are preserved in several Portuguese words; as in *augméto*, *fragméto*, *énigma*, *benigno*, *digno*, *indigno*, *ignominia*, &c. from *augmentum*, *fragmentum*, *ænigma*, *benignus*, *dignus*, &c.

XVIII. The *e* and the *i* after *n* are sometimes changed into *h*; as in *aránha*, *vinha*, *Hespánha*, *castánha*, &c. from *aranca*, *vinea*, *Hispania*, *castanea*, &c.

XIX. The *p* is changed into *b*; as in *cábra*, *cabéllo*, *cabéça*, &c. from *capra*, *capillus*, *caput*, &c. Some-

Sometimes *pl* is changed into *ch*; as, *chága*, *chóro*, *chúva*, &c. from *plaga*, *ploro*, *pluvia*, &c.

XX. The *q* is changed into *g*; as, *iguál*, *álguem*, *antigo*, *ágoa*, *aguia*, &c. from *equus*, *aliquis*, *antiquus*, *aqua*, *aquila*, &c.

XXI. The *t* is likewise changed into *d*; as, *cadea*, *fáda*, *ládo*, *nadár*, *piedáde*, &c. from *catena*, *fatum*, *latus*, *natare*, *pietas*, &c. The *ti* of the Latin is sometimes changed into *ça*, and sometimes into *ci*; as in *gráça*, *clemência*, *paciência*, &c. from *gratia*, *clementia*, *patientia*, &c.

N. B. All these alterations are not general in all the words, but are used in several; and on some occasions the Latin word is preserved without any mutilation or variation. And as it would be endless to pretend to shew all the affinity between the Portuguese and the Latin, I shall only observe, that they sometimes add, and sometimes take off letters from the Latin roots; as in *facíl*, *debíl*, *finál*, *materiál*, *estrépito*, *estómago*, *expectadór*, *especulár*, &c. from *facilis*, *debilis*, *finalis*, *strepitus*, *spectator*, &c.

A N E W

P O R T U G U E S E

G R A M M A R.

P A R T III.

CONTAINING

- I. *The most elegant Phrases of the Portuguese Language.*
- II. *Such Words as are most used in Discourse.*
- III. *A Collection of the choicest Portuguese Proverbs.*
- IV. *Familiar Dialogues.*

The different Significations of andár, to go.

ANDAR a pé,
Andar a cavállo,
Andár pélla pósta,
Andár em côche,
Andár a véla,
Andár pélla bolína,
Andár pará diánte,
Andár pará trás,
Andár a trás de alguem,

TO go on foot.
To ride on horseback.
To ride, or go post.
To ride in a coach.
To fail.
To sail with a side wind.
To go forward.
To go backward.
To go behind, or after one;
also to follow, to press, to
solicit a person.

Andár

<i>Andár ás apalpadéllos,</i>	To grope along, to grope, <i>or</i> feel one's way.
<i>Andár com o tempo,</i>	To go according to the times.
<i>Andár pejáda,</i>	To be with child, <i>or</i> big with child.
<i>Andár sahída,</i>	(<i>speaking of a bitch</i>) To be proud.
<i>Andár perdido,</i>	To go astray.
<i>Andár de pé,</i>	To be sickish, <i>but not bed-ridden</i> .
<i>Andár com hónra,</i>	To act like an honest man.
<i>A'nda,</i>	Go.
<i>A'nda pará diánte,</i>	Go on.
<i>Andár de esguélha,</i>	To go fideling.
<i>Andár de mal pará peór,</i>	To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire.
<i>Andár de reíxa com álguem,</i>	To bear one a grudge, to have a spleen against him, to owe him a spite.
<i>Com o andár do tempo,</i>	At long run.
<i>Andár de galope,</i>	To gallop.
<i>Andár em corpo,</i>	To be in cuerpo, <i>or</i> to be without the upper coat or cloak, so as to discover the true shape of the <i>cuerpo</i> or body.
<i>A'nda o mundo as avéssas,</i>	The world is come about.
<i>Andár espalhados,</i>	To lie about.
<i>Andár trabalhando nalgúma óbra,</i>	To be about some piece of work.
<i>Andár de gatínhas,</i>	To go crawling.
<i>Andár de cócoras,</i>	To go on one's breech.
<i>Andár dizéndo,</i>	To publish <i>or</i> report.

The different Significations of dar and dar-se.

<i>Dar,</i>	To give, to strike.
<i>Dar a entendér,</i>	To make one believe.
<i>Dar fé,</i>	To credit, to believe, <i>also</i> to perceive, to descry, to take notice, to smell out.
<i>Dar or vendér fiádo,</i>	To sell upon credit.
<i>Dar á luz,</i>	To publish.
<i>Dar senhoria,</i>	To call one a gentleman.
<i>Dar tu, or fallár a álguem por tu,</i>	To thee and thou one.

<i>Dar-se, a partido, or lançar-se ao partido de alguém,</i>	To side with one, to be for him.
<i>Dar palavra,</i>	To promise.
<i>Dar huma salva,</i>	To give a volley of shot, or to make a discharge of guns in honour of some persons of quality.
<i>Dar fiador,</i>	To bail.
<i>Dar principio, or fim,</i>	To begin, or end.
<i>Dar conta,</i>	To give an account.
<i>Dar-se ao estudo,</i>	To apply one's self to study.
<i>Dar em que fallar,</i>	To make one speak, to give an occasion to be talked of.
<i>Dar entráda,</i>	To give access to.
<i>Dar causa,</i>	To give cause.
<i>Dar em que entender,</i>	To vex one sadly, to trouble one.
<i>Dar de beber,</i>	To give drink.
<i>Dar cúces,</i>	To kick.
<i>Dar hum coscórão,</i>	To give a box on the ear.
<i>Dar pancádas,</i>	To beat with a cudgel.
<i>Dar mürros,</i>	To cuff.
<i>Dar marrádas,</i>	To butt, as rams do.
<i>Dar o fâro a alguém de alguma causa,</i>	To smell out a matter.
<i>Dar huma estocáda,</i>	To give a thrust.
<i>Dar os bons dias,</i>	To bid one good-morrow.
<i>Dar a guardár,</i>	To give in keeping.
<i>Dar a cósta,</i>	To run a-ground.
<i>Dar com alguém,</i>	To meet with one by chance, to light upon a person
<i>Dar em alguém,</i>	To strike one, also to accuse one.
<i>Dar cartas,</i>	To deal, or give the cards.
<i>Dar sobre o inimigo,</i>	To fall upon the enemy,
<i>Dar os parabéns,</i>	To congratulate.
<i>Dar os parabéns a alguém da sua chegáda,</i>	To bid one welcome.
<i>Ja Dar a mão ajudando,</i>	To give a helping hand.
<i>Dar a escolher,</i>	To let one take his choice.
<i>Dar enfado a alguém,</i>	To molest one.
<i>Dar no alvo,</i>	To hit the mark.
<i>Dar as cóstas,</i>	To run away, to betake one's self to flight.
<i>Dar parte de hum negócio,</i>	To impart a business,

<i>Dar pello amor de Déos,</i>	To give for God's sake.
<i>Dar húma fúrra,</i>	To beat one soundly.
<i>Dar húma vólta em redóndo,</i>	To walk a turn.
<i>Dar húma vîsta de filhos,</i>	To cast an eye on.
<i>Dar alcânçe ão que se dezeja,</i>	To obtain, <i>or</i> compass one's wish.
<i>Dar suspiros,</i>	To sigh.
<i>Dar ouvidos;</i>	To give hearing.
<i>Dar em rôsto,</i>	To upbraid, to cast in the teeth.
<i>Da cá,</i>	Give hither.
<i>Dêu-me húma dor,</i>	I was taken with a pain.
<i>Dar que fazer a álguem, or occupár álguem,</i>	To employ one, to set him at work, to set him upon some business.
<i>Dar hóras,</i>	To strike.
<i>O relógio dá hóras,</i>	The clock strikes.
<i>Dar a álma a Déos,</i>	To give up the ghost, to die.
<i>Dar comsigo em algúmaparte,</i>	To cast one's self into a place, <i>or</i> to go to a place.
<i>Dar léite,</i>	To suckle.
<i>Dar garróte,</i>	To strangle.
<i>Dar vózes,</i>	To cry out, to bawl.
<i>O sol dá nos ólhos,</i>	The sun shines in one's eyes.
<i>Dar razões,</i>	To debate, <i>or</i> contend.
<i>Dar comsigo no chão,</i>	To fall upon the ground.
<i>Dar fruto,</i>	To bear fruit.
<i>Dar as mãos,</i>	To shake hands.
<i>Dar com a pórtá na cára de álguem.</i>	To shut the door upon one.
<i>Dar com a pórtá nos ólhos a algúma còusa, (metaph.)</i>	To flight, to despise a thing.
<i>Dar préssa,</i>	To press, <i>or</i> hasten.
<i>Dar tregôas, (metaph.)</i>	To respite, to give some respite
<i>Esta travéssa vai dar á rua largá,</i>	This lane strikes, <i>or</i> goes into the broad street.
<i>Dêi no pensamênto de, &c.</i>	It came into my head to, &c.
<i>Quem me derá estár em casa !</i>	How fain would I be at home!
<i>Não sabe aónde ha de dar com a cabeça,</i>	He does not know which way to turn himself.
<i>Isto vos ha de dar na cabeça,</i>	The mischief will light upon your own head.
<i>Dar com a cabeça péllas paredes,</i>	To beat one's head against the wall.

<i>Dar em todos, or dizer mal de todos,</i>	To have a satirical virulent tongue, to spare nobody.
<i>Dar boa conta de si,</i>	To give a good account of himself, to behave cleverly.
<i>Dar á conta,</i>	To pay an account.
<i>E'u darei conta disso,</i>	I'll be answerable for it.
<i>Elle deu em ir áquelle lugar,</i>	He began to use that place.
<i>Dar em droga,</i>	To grow a very drug.
<i>Dar em ridicularias,</i>	To grow, or become ridiculous.
<i>Dar huma figa a álguem,</i>	To flirt at one, to fig, to give the fico.
<i>Dar-se por culpado,</i>	To acknowledge one's self guilty.
<i>De nenhuma sorte vos deis por entendido, or achado,</i>	Take no notice of any thing.
<i>Dar-se por aggravado,</i>	To make a shew of anger.
<i>Dar-se por satisfeito,</i>	To rest satisfied.
<i>Dar-se por vencido,</i>	To submit, to surrender one's self a prisoner, or to yield a point.
<i>Dar-se por desentendido,</i>	To feign one's self ignorant, to take no notice of any thing, to make as if one saw nor knew not.
<i>Quando se der a occasião,</i>	When occasion shall require it
<i>Dar-se pressa,</i>	To be in haste, to make haste.
<i>Elle deu-se a toda a sorte de vícios,</i>	He gave himself over to all manner of vices.
<i>Não-se me dá disso,</i>	I mind it not.
<i>Que se vos dá a vos disso?</i>	What have you to do with it?
<i>Pouco se me dá,</i>	I care but little.
<i>Não se lhe dá morrer,</i>	He does not fear death.
<i>Elles dão se muito bem,</i>	They agree mighty well together.
<i>Esta carne não se dá bem comigo,</i>	This meat does not agree with me.

Of the different Significations of the Verb estar.

We use the verb *estar* to make an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund; as, *elle está escrevendo*, he is writing.

Estar has several other significations; as,

Estar

Estár em pé,
Estár bem, ou mal,
Estár assentádo,
Estár parâ sahír pará fóra,
Estár com o sentido em França,
or estár com o sentido em
outra parte,
Está muito bem,
Está pará chovér,
Estár pará cahír,
Estár pará morré,
Estár em duvída,
Estaremos a ver,
Estár com húma mão sóbre a
outra,
Estár em cása,
Isto vos está bem,
Aquilo não me está bem,

Estár dormíndo,
Estár fazéndo,
Estár de nójo,
Estár álerta,
Estár de sentinella,
Estár álegre,
Elle está cómo quer,
Estár em perigo,
Estár encostádo,
Estár esperándo,
Estár muito témpo,
Estár caládo,
Estár ou vivér com óutros,
Estár de cima,
Estár debáxo,
Estár bem aviádo,
Estár a espéra,
Estár enamorado,
Estár na cáma,
Estár de cáma,
Estár no campo,
Estár com saúde, or de saúde,
Estár quiéto,
Estár neutrál,
Estarei por tudo o que vos
pareça máis conveniênte.

To stand upright.
 To be well, or ill.
 To be sitting.
 To be just going out.
 To have one's wits a wool-
 gathering.

It is well, it is very well.
 It is going to rain.
 To be ready to fall.
 To be like to die.
 To be in doubt.
 We will expect the issue.
 To stand idle.

To stay at home.
 This becomes you very well.
 That does not become me
 well.

To lie sleeping.
 To be a doing.
 To be in mourning.
 To look heedfully about.
 To stand centry.
 To be merry.
 He lives in clover.
 To be in danger.
 To lean upon.
 To expect.
 To stay a good while.
 To be hushed.
 To dwell with others.
 To lie over.
 To lie under.
 To be in an ill taking.
 To lie in wait.
 To be in love.
 To be a-bed.
 To be bed-rid.
 To live in the country.
 To be in health.
 To stand still, or to be quiet.
 To stand neuter.
 I shall stand to whatever you
 shall think fitting.

A dif. c/

*A difficuldáde está em, &c.
Estár por alguém,*

The difficulty consists in, &c.
To stand for one, to be of his
side.

*Estár por, or em lugar de, &c.
Elle estava na altúra do Cabo
da Boa Esperança,*

To stand for, or signify.
He stood off the Cape of Good
Hope.

*Eu não quero estár as razoes
com vósco,*

I wont stand, or dispute, with
you.

Está quanto quizéres,

Stay as long as you please.

Aónde estáis de casa?

Where do you live?

*Estaréi pélo que disér a pes-
soa que for de vósca mayór
agrado,*

I'll refer it to whom you
please.

Não podémos estár por isso,

We can't stand to that.

*Não quero estár pélla vósca
sentença,*

I won't take your judgment.

Cómo está vmsce?

How do you do, sir.

Estár, joined with the infinitive of a verb and the particle *pará*, signifies to be ready, or about doing a thing, which has always reference to the signification of the verb; as,

Estou pará ir,

I am going, I am ready to go.

*Estou pará comprar hum ca-
vallo,*

I am about buying a horse.

Estou pará cazárme,

I am going to be married.

Esta casa está pará cahir,

This house is ready to fall.

Estou pará dizer,

I dare say.

Não está no méu poder,

It is not in my power.

*Estár com a boca aberta (me-
taph.)*

To stare, to look, to hearken
attentively.

Estár de regimêto,

To keep to a diet.

Estár fiado em alguém,

To trust to, to rely or depend
upon one.

Estár no fundo,

To lie at the bottom.

Estár de frente,

To lie over-against.

Estár em competencia,

To stand in competition.

Estár ao lume,

To stand by the fire.

Estár de longe,

To stand at a distance.

Estár ao ar,

To stand in the air.

Estár alto,

To stand high, or in a high
place.

*Estar á mão direita de ál-
guem.*

To be at one's right hand, to
have the first place.

Elle

<i>Elle esteve em perigo de afogar-se.</i>	He was like to be drowned.
<i>Não estar no caso de, &c.</i>	Not to be able, or in the case of, &c.
<i>Estar a ordem de alguém,</i>	To be at one's disposal.
<i>Isso não está nos termos,</i>	That is not right, it won't do.
<i>Não estou no caso,</i>	I don't understand the case.
<i>Estar ás razões,</i>	To contend, to strive, or quarrel.
<i>Estar bem com alguém,</i>	To be in favour with one, to live in friendship with him.
<i>Estar bem,</i>	To be well, to be at one's ease.
<i>Bem aviado estaria eu, se, &c.</i>	It would be very bad for me, indeed, if, &c.
<i>Estar em conceito de homem honrado.</i>	To be looked upon as an honest man.
<i>Estar na fé,</i>	To believe, to think, or suppose.
<i>Estar de posse,</i>	To possess, to have the possession of a thing.
<i>Deixai estar isso,</i>	Let that alone.
<i>Estar em si,</i>	To be in one's right wits.
<i>Estar fora de si,</i>	To be out of one's wits.
<i>Deixá-vos estar (a sort of threatening.)</i>	I'll be revenged on you, you shall pay for it.

We have already observed the difference between *ser* and *stá*. See page 55.

Of the different Significations of fazer and fazer se.

Fazer signifies *to do, to make, to create*; also *to form of materials*; also *to feign, to seem, to make as if*.

<i>Elle fez que não o via,</i>	He made as if he did not see it.
<i>Fazer húma saúde,</i>	To drink, or to toast a health.
<i>Elle lhe fez cortar a cabeça,</i>	He caused his head to be cut off.
<i>Fazer pé atrás (metaph.)</i>	To fall, or draw back, to give ground; also yield, to submit.
<i>Que tendes vos que fazer com isto.</i>	What have you to do with it? or what is that to you?
	Q Fazer

Fazér brío de alguma cõusa,
gala

Fazér fim ao dezejo,

Fazér por alguma cõusa,

Fáço por isso,

Fazér ao negócio, or ao caso,

Fazér esmêlas,

Fazér gásto,

Fazér gêsto,

Fazér o gêsto, or a vontade
a alguém,

Fazér parallêlo,

Fazér de comér,

Fazér fúmo,

Fazér auxênte a alguém,

Faz frío,

Fazér gente,

Fazér em pedáços,

Fazér zombaria de alguém,

Não façáis caso d'isso,

Fazér agoádo,

Isto me faz vir a água á bó-
ca,

Fazér álto,

Fazér cása (in playing at
backgammon.)

Fazér a cea,

Fazér caras,

Fazér enredos,

Fazér carráncas,

Fazér caso,

Fazér de tripas coração,

Fazér muito caso de alguma
cõusa,

Não fáço caso d'elle,

Fazér festa,

Fazér huma festa,

To make a pride of a thing,
 to take glory in it.

To satisfy one's desire, or
 longing.

To take pains, to endeavour,
 to labour to a certain pur-
 pose, to work for a certain
 end.

I endeavour after it.

To come to the purpose.

To give alms.

To spend.

To like, to be pleased with.

To please one, to comply with
 one's desire.

To parallel, to compare.

To dress the meat.

To smoke.

To believe one absent.

It is cold.

To raise men, soldiers.

To pull into pieces.

To mock, or to laugh at a
 person.

Do not mind that.

To take in fresh water.

This makes my teeth, or
 mouth, water.

To halt in a march.

To put two men on the same
 point.

To get supper ready.

To make mouths.

To form a secret design
 against another.

To pout.

To make account of, or
 esteem.

To make one's utmost efforts.

To make great account of a
 thing, to make much of it.

I don't mind him.

To endear, to fondle.

To give an entertainment, to
 feast.

Fazér

<i>Fazér as vézes de álguem,</i>	To make any business for another.
<i>Fazér trapáças,</i>	To chicané, to cavil, to use tricks.
<i>Fazér lugar,</i>	To make room.
<i>Fazér merce,</i>	To grant a favour.
<i>Fazér ouvídos de mercadór,</i>	To make as if one were deaf.
<i>Ter que fazér,</i>	To be busy.
<i>Fazér exercício,</i>	To use exercise.
<i>Fazér exercício (a military word.</i>	To exercise.
<i>Os soldádos estão fazêndo exercício,</i>	The soldiers exercise.
<i>Que fazéis aquí?</i>	What make you here?
<i>Fazér hum vestído,</i>	To make a suit of clothes.
<i>Fazér húma léy, hum discúrso,</i>	To make a law, a speech.
<i>Fazér guérra,</i>	To make war.
<i>Fazér sabér algúma cóusa a álguem,</i>	To make one acquainted with a thing.
<i>Fazér enraivecér álguem,</i>	To make one mad.
<i>Fazér húma cónta,</i>	To cast up an account.
<i>Fazér cónta,</i>	To intend, or to propose.
<i>Elle fazia húma cónta, e sahíolhe óutra,</i>	He was much disappointed.
<i>Fazér cóntas com álguem,</i>	To settle the accounts with one.
<i>Iffo não me faz náda,</i>	It makes nothing to me, that does not concern me.
<i>Fazér páusa,</i>	To make a stand.
<i>Fazér de álguem tólo,</i>	To make a fool of one.
<i>Fazér dinhéiro de algúma cóusa,</i>	To make money of a thing, to sell it.
<i>Tornár a fazér,</i>	To make again.
<i>Fazér a razão,</i>	To pledge one.
<i>Ter que fazér com álguem,</i>	To deal with one, or to have to do with one.
<i>Fazér a álguem hum gílváz na cára,</i>	To mark one in the face.
<i>Fazér hónra,</i>	To honour.
<i>Fazér fé,</i>	To make known, to testify, to witness.
<i>Fazér forte,</i>	To fortify, or strengthen.

Fazér

Fazér menção,
Fazér mal,
Fazér de alguém o que húma
peffoa quer,
Fazér húma apósta,
Faz vento,
Faz hóje óuto días,

Fazér vida com alguém,
Fazér a fua vontade,
Fazér o poffível,

Não faréis náda com iſſo,
Não façâis mais aſſim,
Se tornâdes a fazer aſſim,
Dezejo que faça a fua fortuna,
Cuſtôu-me muito a fazello vir,

Fazér a óutrem o que quizerá-
mos que óutrem nós fizeſſe
a nós.

Não tenho que fazer com iſſo,
Fazér o que alguém manda,
Fáze de mim o que vos pa-
recerá,
Fazér hum gránde eſtróndo,
Elle foi d que fez tudo naquelle
negócio,
Que faréis hóje?

Fazér o ſeu cúrfô,

Fazér húma boa cáſa,
Fazér a bárba,
Fazér a cáma,
Não ſei que lhe fazer,
Fazér gránde negócio,
Fazér o ſeu officio.
Fazér profiſſão,
Tôdos o fazião morto,

Fazér vir,

To mention.
 To hurt.
 To diſpoſe of one:

To lay a wager.
 The wind blows.
 This day ſe'nnight, or a
 week ago.

To cohabit, or dwell together.
 To do as one pleaſes,
 To do one's beſt, or endea-
 vour, to do one's utmoſt.

You will do no good in it.
 Do ſo no more.
 If ever you do ſo again.
 I wiſh he may do well.
 I had much to do to get him
 to come.

To do by others as you would
 be done by.

I have nothing to do with it.
 To do as one is bid.
 Do with me as you ſhall think
 fit.

To make a great noiſe.
 He was the do-all in that
 buſineſs.

What will you do to-day? or
 how do you employ your-
 ſelf to-day.

To finiſh its courſe, as a ſtar
 does.

To raiſe, to ſet up one's family.
 To ſhawe.

To make the bed.

I can't help it.

To drive a great trade.

To exerciſe, or diſcharge.

To profeſs.

They gave out that he was
 dead.

To call, or ſend for.

Fazér

<i>Fazér entrár, ou sahír álguem,</i>	To call in, <i>or</i> out, to bid one come in, <i>or</i> out.
<i>Isto não faz náda,</i>	It is no matter.
<i>Não sei que fazér dísso,</i>	I have no need of it.
<i>Ja não tenho que fazér com elle</i>	I have done with him.
<i>Fazér hum livro,</i>	To write a book.
<i>Fazér amizade com álguem,</i>	To make friendship, to get into friendship with one.
<i>Fazér exémplo em álguem, or castigallo para dar exémplo,</i>	To make one a public example.
<i>Fazer húma còusa muito áo desentendído,</i>	To do a thing very covertly, so that people can't apprehend that it is done on set purpose, and with a design.
<i>Fazér das súas,</i>	To play the fool, to dodge, to play tricks.
<i>Elle sèmpre está fazêndo das súas,</i>	He is always playing his foolish tricks.
<i>Fazér fêscas,</i>	To bully, to provoke, to excite by words, or actions of contempt; also to elude, or deceive by false show.
<i>Fazér de pessôa,</i>	To behave courageously.
<i>Fazer jurar álguem,</i>	To tender the oaths to one, to put one to his oaths.
<i>Fazér saltár, or voár péllas áres,</i>	To blow up.
<i>Fazér boa vezinhança,</i>	To keep fair with one's neighbours.
<i>Fazér lenha,</i>	To fell wood.
<i>Fazér a rónnda,</i>	To walk the rounds.
<i>Fazér dividas,</i>	To run into debt, to contract debts.
<i>Fáz lua,</i>	The moon shines.
<i>Fazér violéncia,</i>	To offer violence.
<i>Fazér-se áo trabálho,</i>	To inure one's-self to hardships.
<i>Fazér-se tólo,</i>	To play the ninny.
<i>Fazér-se vélho,</i>	To grow old, <i>or</i> to grow in years.
<i>Fazér-se fêo,</i>	To grow ugly.
<i>Fazér-se sobérbo,</i>	To grow proud.
<i>Faz-se tarde,</i>	It grows late.

Fazêr-se signifies also *to feign, to pretend, to seem, to make as if.*

Faz-se mouco,

He won't hear.

The different Significations of ter and ter-se.

Ter que fazêr,

To be busy.

Ter odio,

To hate.

Ter por costúme,

To be wont.

Ter álguem por ignoránte,

To believe one ignorant.

Ter cuidádo de,

To be careful of.

Ter cuidádos,

To be full of care, or thoughtful.

Ter fástio,

To loath, to see food with dislike.

Ter ánimo,

To have courage.

Ter boa fama,

To be well spoken of.

Ter cara d'áço,

To have a brazen face.

Ter neceffidáde,

To be in want.

Ter prêssa,

To be in haste.

Ter muitos fúmos,

To be very proud.

Ter grande presumpção,

To presume much on one's self.

Ter razão,

To be in the right.

Não tér razão,

To be in the wrong.

*Ter alguma coisa debáxo da
língua,*

To have a thing at one's
tongue's end.

Ter alguma coisa na ponta da língua, we say, to have a thing at one's fingers ends, to have it perfect. They also say, *saber alguma coisa nas pontas dos dedos,* which exactly answers to our English phrase.

Ter feições feiticéiras,

To have a taking look.

Ter má fama,

To be ill spoken of.

Ter ciúmes,

To be jealous of.

Ter méyos,

To be able, or have means,

Ter no pensamento,

To bear in mind.

Ter obrigação,

To be obliged.

Ter medo,

To be fearful.

Ter razão, e mais que razão,

To have reason to spare.

Que téndes vos com isso?
Ter carruáge, e criádos,
Ter a álguem suspénso,
Hómem que tem bóna feição,

Ter méssa frânca,

Ter frío,
Ter as côstas quéntes em ál-
guem,
Ter por bem,
Tênho o por dóudo,
Ter não na sua resolúção,
Ter com que,
Não téndes do que vos que-
ixár,
Não téndes que, &c.

Isto não tem náda que fazér,
com o que eu digo,
Ter éntre mãos,

Ténho isso por certo;
Ir ter com álguem,
Vénho ter com um^o pará sabér
cómo pássa a senhóra fullá-
na,

Ir ter a algúm lugar,
Esta rúa vái ter ao mercádo,

Ter álguem por si,

Témos por nós a authoridáde
dos máis prudéntes,
Ter pará si,

Ter em muito,
Ter em pouco,
Ser tído em bóa conta,

Ter mão,
Ter mão nalgúma cóusa,

What is that to you?
 To keep a coach and servants.
 To hold one in suspense.
 A man of good address, a po-
 lite man.

To keep open table, to keep
 a table where a man may
 come without bidding.

To be cold.

To be backed, or supported
 by one.

To approve of, or consent.

I take him to be mad.

To be still in one mind.

To have wherewith.

You have no reason of com-
 plaint.

It is useless, or it will be to no
 purpose for you to, &c.

That is nothing to the pur-
 pose.

To have in hand, or in one's
 possession.

I hold that for a certainty.

To address one's self to one.

I address, or apply myself to
 you to know how misfs such
 a one does.

To go to a place.

This street strikes, or goes
 into the market.

To be supported, or protected
 by one.

We have the wisest men of
 our side, or of our opinion.

To think, or imagine, to
 reckon.

To set much by.

To value but little.

To be esteemed, regarded, or
 valued, to be in great
 esteem.

To hold or keep in, to restrain.

To bear up, to support, to
 prop, to keep up, to hold up.

<i>Atómos que tem mão huns nos óutros,</i>	Atoms that stick together.
<i>Ténha mão, or tem mão,</i>	Hold, stop.
<i>Ter,</i>	To contain.
<i>Ter-se em pé,</i>	To stand, to stand up.
<i>Ter-se bem a cavállo,</i>	To sit fast, or well, on horse- back.
<i>Ter-se em cása,</i>	To keep at home.
<i>Ter-se com alguém,</i>	To hold out, to resist, to stand against one, to cope with one, to oppose, or resist him.
<i>Não me pôsso ter com rízo,</i>	I can't forbear laughing.
<i>Não se pôde ter, que não fálle,</i>	He can't forbear speaking.

The different Significations of querér.

Querér signifies *to will, to be willing, and to be-
lieve; as,*

<i>Quérem algúns,</i>	Some believe.
<i>Querér bem,</i>	To love.
<i>Querér mal,</i>	To hate.
<i>Antes querér,</i>	To have rather.
<i>Quéira Déos,</i>	God grant it, God send it may-be so.
<i>Mas quéro que assim séja,</i>	I grant it, suppose it were so.
<i>Que quer dizér aquélle hómem?</i>	What does that man mean?
<i>Que quer dizér isto?</i>	What means this? what's the meaning of that?
<i>Isto quer dizér que, &c.</i>	The meaning is that, &c.
<i>E'u quéro absolutaménte que,</i>	I positively resolve that, &c.
<i>E'u assim o quéro,</i>	I'll have it so.
<i>Elle quer que vós obedecáis,</i>	He will have you obey.
<i>Náo quéro,</i>	I will not, I won't.
<i>Elle o fará quándo quizer,</i>	He will do it when he pleases, or when he has a mind to it.
<i>Elle quer partír amanhãõ,</i>	He intends, or has a mind, to set out to-morrow.
<i>O mal que éu lhe quéro me vénha a mim,</i>	I wish him no more harm than I do my self.

Havér, to have.

<i>Tu has de hir,</i>	You must go.
<i>Elle ha de vir hóje,</i>	He is come to day.

*Se eu houvér de hir,
Aindaque isso me houvêsse de
custár a vida,*

*Elle está todo nũ, e ha de ter
muito frio,*

Havêis vos de estar em casa,

Eu hei de acharme lá,

Elle ha de ser enforcado,

Eu hei de recebér dinhéiro,

Vos he que havêis de jogar,

*Aquillo he que vos havêis de
fazer,*

Havér por bem,

Havér por mal,

Que ha de ser,

Aquillo nunca ha de ser,

*Eu hei de ser a causa da sua
morte, ou ruina,*

*Pará haver de fallar, ouvir,
&c.*

Que ha de ser de mim?

Havér filhos,

Livros do déve, e ha de haver,

Havér mistér,

Há mistér apressar-se,

If I shall be obliged to go.

Though I were to lose my
life for't.

He is all naked, he must
needs be very cold.

Shall you be at home?

I must be there.

He is to be hanged.

I am to receive money.

You are to play.

You should do that.

To take in good part.

To take in ill part.

That is to be hereafter.

That will never be.

I shall be the death, or ruin
of him.

In order to speak, hear, &c.

What is to become of me.

To beget, to become the
father of children.

Books of debtor and creditor.

To want.

It is necessary to haste, or to
make haste.

Havér, when impersonal, is rendered into English
by the verb *to be*, preceded by *there*; as,

Há,

Há homens tão malvados,

Havia huma melher,

Há alguns bons e outros maos

Há muitas casas,

Há alguma cousa de novo?

Há mais he huma hora,

Há muito tempo,

Há perto de huma hora que,

elle sahio,

Ha hum anno,

There is, or there are.

There are men so wicked.

There was a woman.

There are some good, and
some bad.

There are several houses.

Is there any news?

It is above an hour since.

Long since.

It is almost an hour since he
went out.

A year ago.

Há

*Há óuto días,
Há perto de 20 legóas daquí
lá,
Não há,
Elle cuida que não há máis
que purgár,*

Havér se, v. r.

*E'lle sabe cómo se ha de ha-
vêr, or elle sabe cómo ha de
havêr se,
E'lle hóuve-se de maneira que,
&c.*

Eight days ago.
It is near upon 20 leagues
thither.
There is not.
He believes that purging is
all in all, or that purging
is the only remedy in such
a case.
To carry, to behave one's
self.
He knows how to behave
himself.
He behaved himself in such a
manner that, &c.

M. B. When this verb is used impersonally, it is
always followed by the particle *de*; as

*Ha-se de miſtér dinhéiro,
Ha-se de fazêr, ou dizêr isto,
Ha-se de fazêr o que elle qui-
zêr,*

Money is wanted.
This must be done, or said.
People must do what he
pleases.

Hir, a neuter and irregular verb, *to go, to walk, to
march*; also, *to grow, to reach any estate gradually,
to be going.*

*Hir por már e por terra,
Cóme vão os vossos negócios?
Túdo vái bem,
As súas cousas vão muito mal,*

To travel by sea and land.
How go your concerns?
All is well, all goes well.
Things go very ill (or very
hard) with him.

Hir a mão,

To hinder, to obstruct, to
obviate.

*Hir passádo,
Hir andádo,*

To grow out of fashion or use.
To go on or forward, to keep
or hold on his way; also
to proceed, to continue on,
to prosecute.

Hir andádo, or passádo,

To shift, to pass life not
quite well, to live though
with difficulty.

*Que vái de névo?
Que vái nisto? or ónde vái
isto a dar consigo?*

Is there any thing new?
What of all this?

Hir debáxo,
Hir para,
Quanto mais vámos pará a
primavéra, mais compridos
são os dias,

Hir de mal pará peér,
Hir diánte,
Hir por diánte,
Hir ao encôntro,
Hir ao fúndo,

Hir e vir,

Não faço máis do que hir e
voltár,
Isso ja lá vái,
Eilo la vái,
Eilo vái,

Que vos parece daquella mol-
hér? eilo vái, ella não he fêa,

Eilo vái, fólgo que assim seja,
Cómo as cousas agora vão,

Por que parte idês,
Déos vá convôscó,

Hir á rôda do mundo,
Hir com álguem,
Esta travessa vái ter á rua
larga,
E'u o iréi ver de camínho,

Hir continuádo o seu camínho
Hir fóra do seu camínho,
Hir hum de húma bándá, e
óutro da óutra,

Hir pará trás,
Hir detráz,
Hir atrás de álguem,
Hir em alcánce de álguem,

Hir búscár,
Hir pará dèntro,
Hir pará fóra,

To come by the worst.
 To approach, to go near.
 The nearer the spring, the
 longer the days.

To grow worse and worse.
 To go before.
 To go on, or forward.
 To go to meet.
 To sink, or fall to the bot-
 tom.

To go to and fro, to go and
 come.

I will not stay, I shall be back
 presently.

'Tis a thing past and done.

There he goes.

So so, pretty well.

How do you like that wo-
 man? She is so so, she
 may pass.

Well, well, I am glad on't
 As things go now, as the
 world goes.

Which way d'ye go?

The Lord of heaven go with
 you.

To go about the world.

To go along with one.

This lane goes into the broad
 street.

I will call upon him as I go
 along.

To go along.

To go out of one's way.

To go asunder.

To go backward.

To go behind.

To pursue, to go after one.

To go after one, in order to
 overtake him.

To go far, or fetch.

To go in.

To go out.

Hir

Hir peregrinando,
Hir fazer húma embaxáda,
Hir ver, cantár, &c.
Vamos,
Hir fazer hum negócio,
Hir com a maré,
Hir par a par com alguém,
Vái pará quatro mēses que eu
aquí cheguéi,

Ide em paz,
O tempo vái abrandando,
Hir (at cards),
Hir-se, v. r.

Hir-se a ólha, ou a panélla,
Hir-se o enfermo,
A quarésma vái se acabando,
Hir-se,

Náda se vái máis depréssa
que o tempo,

Aquélles montes vão se ostendendo,

Hir-se embóra,
Esperái até que a calma se va
embóra,

Vái-te embóra ; que não fábes
engodár a gente,

Hir-se de húma carta (at cards)

Vái-se fazendo tarde,

Vai-se chegando a noite,

Vai-se chegando o tempo da
sega,

Vai-se acabando o meu consula-
do,

Hir-se escapulindo,

Hir-se á mão,

To go a pilgrimage.
 To go on an embassy.
 To go to see, to sing, &c.
 Come, come on.
 To go upon a business.
 To go with the tide.
 To go cheek by jole with one.
 It is now going on four
 months since I came hi-
 ther.

Depart in peace.
 The weather grows mild.
 To go, to lay, to stake, to set.
 To go, to go away, to go
 one's way, to depart, also
 to run, or leak.

Is for the pot to boil over.
 Is for a sick man to die.
 Lent draws to an end.
 To slip, or pass away (as
 time).

Nothing goes faster than
 time.

Those mountains extend, or
 stretch themselves.

To go away, also to be over.
 Stay till the heat be over.

Away, or go, you know not
 how to wheedle people.

To throw away a card.

It grows late.

The night draws on.

It grows near harvest.

My consulsip is almost at
 an end.

To sneak away.

To refrain, to forbear, to ab-
 stain.

Hir-se impersonal ; as, *vái-se*, they go ; *foi-se*,
 they are gone ; *hir-se ha*, they shall go.

To pray.

<i>Senhór, cómo amigo, faça-me o favôr,</i>	Dear sir, do me the favour.
<i>Eú vos peço, or peçavos,</i>	I pray you.
<i>Peçolhe em cortezia,</i>	I beseech you.
<i>Peçolhe encarecidamente,</i>	I intreat, or conjure, you to do it.
<i>Peçolhe por favôr que, &c.</i>	I beg of you that, &c.
<i>Faça-me a finéza,</i>	Do me the kindness.
<i>Peçolhe perdão,</i>	I beg your pardon.

Expressions of Kindness.

<i>Minha vida,</i>	My life.
<i>Minha álma,</i>	My dear soul.
<i>Méu amor,</i>	My love.
<i>Méu querido, minha querida,</i>	My little darling.
<i>Méu coração,</i>	My dear love, my love.
<i>Filho do meu coração,</i>	My dear child.
<i>Filha da minha álma,</i>	My little honey.

To shew Civility.

<i>Agradêço a v^mce,</i>	I thank you.
<i>Dôu a v^mce os agradeciméntos</i>	I give you thanks.
<i>Béijo as mãos de v^mce,</i>	I kiss your hand.
<i>Fálo-héi com todo o gosto,</i>	I will do it chearfully.
<i>Com todo o méu coração,</i>	With all my heart.
<i>De muito boa vontade,</i>	Heartily, willingly.
<i>Vêja v^mce se o pôsso servir nal- guma côusa,</i>	See if it is in my power to serve you.
<i>Dispónha v^mce cómo lhe pare- cer dêste seu criado,</i>	Do what you please with your servant.
<i>Estôu esperándo péllas ôrdens de v^mce,</i>	I wait for your commands.
<i>Fa que v^mce assim ordéna,</i>	Since you will have it so.
<i>As ôrdens de v^mce,</i>	At your service.
<i>Fico muito obrigádo a v^mce,</i>	I am very much obliged to you.
<i>Quer v^mce que éu faça alguma côusa,</i>	Have you any thing to com- mand me.
<i>Sem cerimônia,</i>	Without ceremony.
<i>Não tem v^mce máis que fallár,</i>	You need but to speak.
<i>Faça-me a honra de me por âos pés da snr^a</i>	Present my respects, or duty, to my lady.

Não

*Não sei cómo agradecer a
vme tantos favôres,*

I know not how to make a
proper return for so many
favours.

*Não sou de comprimentos,
Deixemos estes comprimentos*

I am not for ceremonies.
Away with these ceremonies,
or compliments.

Isso he o melhor,

That is the best way.

To give tokens of Affirmation, Consent, Belief,
and Refusal.

*He verdáde,
He isso verdáde?
He muito verdáde,
Pará dizervos a verdáde,
Com effeito he assim,
Quem duvida disso?
Não ha duvida nisso,
Paréceme que sim, que não,
Apósto que sim,
Apósto que não,
Créame vme?
Está vme zombádo?
Fálle vme de véras?
Fálle de véras,
Póis, está feito,
Pouco a pouco,
Isso não he verdáde,
Não ha tal côusa,
He mentíra,
Estáva zombádo,
Séja muito embôra,
Não quero,*

It is true.
Is it true?
It is but too true.
To tell you the truth.
Really it is so.
Who doubts it?
There is no doubt of it.
I think so, not.
I lay it is.
I lay it is not.
Do believe me?
Don't you jest?
Are you in earnest.
I am in earnest?
Well, let it be so.
Softly, fair and softly.
It is not true.
There is no such thing.
It is a lie.
I did but jest.
Let it be so.
I won't, I will not.

To consult.

*Que se ha de fazer?
Que faremos?
Que lhe parece a vme que eu
faga?
Que remédio tem isso?
Fagamos assim,
Fagamos huma côusa,
Será melhor que,
Seria melhor que,*

What is to be done?
What shall we do?
What do you advise me to
do?
What remedy is there for it?
Let us do so, and so.
Let us do one thing.
It will be better that.
It would be better that.

Esperai

*Esperai hum pouco,
Deixáime com isso,
Antes quizêra,
Se isso fôsse comigo,
Tudo he o mesmo,*

Stay a little.
Let me alone.
I had rather.
Were I in your place.
It is all one.

Of Eating and Drinking.

*Tenho fome,
Mórro de fome,
Cóma um^a alguma coisa,
Que quer um^a comér ?
Quer um^a comér mais ?
Tenho sede,
Ja matêi a fome,
Tenho muita sede,
Mórro de sede,
Dême de bebêr,
Viva um^a muitos ánnos,
Eu beberia hum copo de vinho
Poís beba um^a,
Têhno bebido bastante,
Não pôsso bebêr mais,
Ja matêi a sede,*

I am hungry.
I am almost starved.
Eat something.
What will you eat ?
Will you eat any more ?
I am dry, or thirsty.
I have no more stomach.
I am very dry.
I am almost dead with thirst.
Give me some drink.
I thank you.
I could drink a glass of wine.
Drink then.
I have drank enough.
I can drink no more.
I am no more thirsty, or my
thirst is quenched.

Of Going, Coming, Stirring, &c.

*Dónde vem um^a ?
Pará ónde vái um^a ?
Vênho de ; vou pará, or a,
Quer um^a subír, ou descêr ?*

*Entre um^a, sáya um^a,
Não se búla daqui,
Chêgue-se pará mim,
Va-se um^a,
Vem ca,
Espêre por mim,
Não va tão deprêssa,
Tíre-se de diánte de mim,
Não me tóque,
Deixe estár isso,
Estôu bem aquí,
Abra um^a a porta.*

From whence do you come ?
Where do you go ?
I come from ; I am going to.
Will you come up, or come
down ?
Come in, go out.
Do not stir from hence.
Come near to me.
Go your way, be gone.
Come hither.
Stay for me.
Do not go so fast.
Get you out of my way.
Do not touch me.
Let that alone.
I am well here.
Open the door.

*Féche a pórtã,
Abra, ou féche a janélla,*

*Vénha v^m par aquí,
Pásse por lá,
Que procúra v^m?
Que perdéo v^m?*

Shut the door.
Open the window, or shut
the window.
Come this way.
Pass that way.
What do you look for?
What have you lost?

To wish well to a Person.

*O Céu vos guarde,
Déos vos de boa fortuna,
Dezéjo-vos todo o bem,*

*Déos vos ajude,
Déos vos perdôe,
I'de com Déos,
Até ver nos,
Bom proveito faça a v^m,*

Heavens preserve you.
God send you good luck.
I wish you every thing that
is good.
God assist you.
God forgive you.
God be with you.
Till I see you again.
Much good may do you.

To wish ill.

*O diábo te leve,
Maldito sejas tu,
Vá para os quintos inférnos,
Váite enforcár,
Enforcádo sejas tu,*

The devil take thee.
A curse on thee.
Away, go to hell.
Go and be hanged.
Would thou wert hanged.

To swear.

*Assim Déos me salve,
Arrebatádo seja eu,
Em consciência,*

As God shall help me,
shall save me.
May I burst.
In my conscience.

To threaten and insult.

*O'ha que te hei de dar,
Deixa te estár, or cála te que
me has de pagár,
Júra que te faréi arrepender
disso,
Se me enfadáres,
Coitado de ti,
Póucas razões, or cála éssa
bóca,
Isto basta,*

Take care, I will beat thee.
Thou wilt pay it me.
I swear thou shalt repent of it.
If you put me into a passion.
Woe be to thee.
Hold your tongue, don't speak
to me.
It is enough, it is sufficient.

To

To mock, to blame, and to call one names.

<i>Que bello focinho !</i>	O the fine snout !
<i>Que cara de mono !</i>	What an ape's face !
<i>Trapaceiro,</i>	A chicaner.
<i>Embuستهiro,</i>	A cheat, an impostor.
<i>Mexeriqueiro,</i>	A tale bearer, a tell-tale.
<i>Que bello sogeito !</i>	O the dull thing.
<i>Velhaco,</i>	A knave.
<i>Maroto,</i>	A rogue, a rascal.
<i>Ma casta,</i>	Curfed race.
<i>Tonto,</i>	Giddy-brains, blunderbuss.
<i>Asneirao,</i>	A great beast, a thick-skull.

To admire.

<i>O Deos !</i>	O God !
<i>He possivel !</i>	Is it possible !
<i>Quem teria imaginado, crido,</i> <i>dito !</i>	Who would have thought, believed, said !
<i>Que animal !</i>	What a beast it is !
<i>Que maravilha ! or o que mi-</i> <i>lagre !</i>	O strange !
<i>Nao me maravilho !</i>	I don't wonder.
<i>Como pode ser isto ! or Como</i> <i>he possivel !</i>	How can that be !
<i>Eis aqui como sao as cousas</i> <i>deste mundo !</i>	So goes the world !

To shew Joy and Displeasure.

<i>Que gosto !</i>	What pleasure !
<i>Que gloria !</i>	What glory !
<i>Que alegria !</i>	What joy !
<i>O que contentamento he o meu !</i>	How pleased I am !
<i>Que felicidade !</i>	What happiness !
<i>Sinto isso,</i>	I am sorry for it.
<i>Sinto isso na alma,</i>	That touches my very soul.
<i>Sinto isso no coração,</i>	It pierces me to the heart.
<i>O que desgraça he a minha !</i>	O how unhappy am I !

Affrontár-me desta sorte!

Assim he que se trata?

O'ha maroto!

Que bella cortesia!

*Não deveria tratar comigo
desta sorte,*

Parêce-te bem?

Aprênde, pedaço d'ásno,

*O'ha como me trata este ani-
mál,*

Olháique velháco he este,

Que diábo tem elle feito?

Póis, ainda teimáis?

To affront me thus!

Do you deal thus?

You rogue!

O what fine manners!

Thou oughtest not to treat
me thus.

Dost thou think that it will?

Learn, beast as thou art.

See the brute, how he uses
me.

Do you behold that rascal.

What the devil has he done?

What, are you obstinate still?

To call.

O'uve!

O'nde estás?

Húma palavra,

Dúas palavras somênte,

Hark!

Where art thou?

A word.

I'll speak but two words to
you.

To shew Uneasiness, Trouble, and Sorrow.

Sinto or pesame,

Deixame,

Pêço te que me deixes,

Não me québres a cabeça,

Ô'ra vámos, deixame,

Deixame, vái com Déos,

Váite daqui, or váite embóra,

Vái tratár da túa vida,

*Váite na ma hóra, or váite
co diábo,*

Não me fáças a cabeça tonta,

*Já me tens dito isso hum cén-
to de vêzes,*

I am sorry.

Let me be quiet.

Prithee get thee gone.

Do not break my head.

Away, away.

Go, go, God be with you.

Get thee gone from hence.

Go mind your own business.

Go to the devil.

Do not make me giddy.

You have told it me a hun-
dred times already.

To ask.

Que nóvas ha?

Que he isto? que ha?

What news?

What is this, what is the
matter?

O'nde

<i>Onde ídes?</i>	Where are you a-going?
<i>Dónde vîndes?</i>	Whence come you?
<i>Que quer dizer?</i>	What do you mean?
<i>De que serve?</i>	To what purpose?
<i>Que vos parece?</i>	What do you think?
<i>Quem teve tal atrevimento?</i>	Who is that has been so bold?
<i>Que dizem? que se diz?</i>	What do they say?
<i>Cómo diz um?</i>	How do you say?
<i>Por que não me responde?</i>	Why don't you answer?

To forbid.

<i>Deixái estár isso,</i>	Let that alone.
<i>Não toquéis,</i>	Do not touch.
<i>Não digáis náda,</i>	Say not a word.
<i>Guardáivos,</i>	Have a care.

Of speaking, saying, doing, &c.

<i>Fálla um alto,</i>	Speak loud.
<i>Fálla um mánso,</i>	Speak low.
<i>Com quem fálla um?</i>	Who do you speak to?
<i>Fálla um comigo?</i>	Do you speak to me?
<i>Fálla-lhe,</i>	Speak to him, <i>or</i> to her.
<i>Fálla um Português?</i>	Do you speak Portuguese?
<i>Que diz um?</i>	What do you say?
<i>Não digo náda,</i>	I say nothing.
<i>E'lla não quer calár-se,</i>	She will not hold her tongue.
<i>Ouví dizer que —</i>	I was told that —
<i>Assim mo disserão,</i>	I was told so.
<i>Assim dizem,</i>	They say so.
<i>Assim dizem todos,</i>	Every one says so.
<i>Quem lho disse a um?</i>	Who told it you?
<i>Dissemo o Sr. A.</i>	Mr. A. told it me.
<i>Pois elle he que lho disse?</i>	Did he tell you so?
<i>Pois ella he que o disse?</i>	Did she tell it?
<i>Quando o ouviu um. dizer?</i>	When did you hear it?
<i>Disserão mo hoje,</i>	I heard it to day.
<i>Não posso cre-lo,</i>	I can't believe it.
<i>Que diz elle?</i>	What does he say?
<i>Que vos disse elle?</i>	What did he say to you?
<i>Elle não me disse náda,</i>	He said nothing to me.
<i>Não lho diga um.</i>	Do not tell him that.
<i>E'u lho direi,</i>	I'll tell him, <i>or</i> her of it.
<i>Não diga náda,</i>	Say not a word.
<i>Disse um. aquillo?</i>	Did you say that?

Não o disse,
 Não disse *vm.* assim?
 Que está *vm.* fazendo?
 Que tem *vm.* feito?
 Não faço náda,
 Não tenho feito náda,
 Tem *vm.* acabádo?
 Que está elle fazendo?
 Que faz ella?
 Que quer, or que ordêna *vm.*?
 Que lhe fálta?

I did not say it.
 Did you not say so?
 What are you doing?
 What have you done!
 I do nothing.
 I have done nothing.
 Have you done?
 What is he doing?
 What does she do?
 What is your pleasure?
 What do you want?

Of understanding or apprehending.

Entêde-o, or percêbe-o <i>vm.</i> bem?	Do you understand him well?
Percêbe <i>vm.</i> o que elle disse?	Did you understand what he said?
Percêbe <i>vm.</i> o que elle diz?	Do you understand what he says?
Entêdemê, or percêbeme <i>vm.</i> ?	Do you understand me?
Entêdo a <i>vm.</i> muito bem,	I understand you very well.
Não entêdo a <i>vm.</i>	I do not understand you.
Sábe <i>vm.</i> a língua Portu- guêza?	Do you understand Portu- guese?
Não a fei,	I do not understand it.
Tem-me <i>vm.</i> percebido?	Did you understand me?
Agóra o percêbo,	Now I understand you.
Não se percêbe o que elle diz,	One cannot understand what he utters.
Parêce gágo,	He speaks like a stammerer.

Or knowing, or having Knowledge of.

Sábe <i>vm.</i> isso?	Do you know that?
Não o fei,	I do not know it.
Não fei náda disso,	I knew nothing of it?
Ella bem o sabia,	She knew well of it.
Porventura não sabia elle isso?	Did he not know of it?
Dêmos que eu ou soubêsse,	Suppose I knew it.
Elle não saberá náda disso,	He shall know nothing of it.
Elle nunca sôbe náda disto,	He never knew any thing about this.
E'u sôbe o primeiro, or ántes que <i>vm.</i> o soubêsse,	I knew it before you.

He

*He isto assim ou não ?
Não que eu saiba,*

Is it so, or not ?
Not that I know of.

Of knowing or being acquainted with, forgetting,
and remembering.

*Conhece-o vm. ?
Conhece-a vm. ?
Conhece-os vm. ?
Conheço-o muito bem,
Não os conheço,
Nós não nos conhecemos,
Conheço-o de vista,
Conheço-a de nome,
Elle conheceu-me muito bem,
Conhece-me vm. ?
Tenho-me esquecido do seu nome
Tem-se vm. esquecido de mim ?
Conhece-vos ella ?
Conhece o Sr. a vm. ?*

Do you know him ?
Do you know her ?
Do you know them ?
I know him very well.
I do not know them.
We do not know one another.
I know him by sight.
I have heard of her.
He knew me very well.
Do you know me ?
I have forgot your name.
Did you forget me ?
Does she know you ?
Does the gentleman know
you ?

Parece que não me conhece,

It appears he does not know
me.

O Sr. bem me conhece,

The gentleman knows me
well.

*Elle ja me não conhece,
Tenho a honra de ser seu con-
hecido,*

He knows me no more.
I have the honour to be
known to him.

Lembra-se vm. disso ?

Do you remember that ?

Não me lembro disso,

I do not remember it.

Lembro-me muito bem disso,

I do remember it very well.

Of Age, Life, Death, &c.

*Que idade tem vm. ?
Que idade tem seu irmão ?
Tenho vinte e cinco annos,
Tem vinte e dois annos,
Vm. tem mais annos do que eu,
Que idade terá vm. ?
He vm. casado ?
Quántas vezes tem vm. ca-
sado ?
Quántas molhéres tem vm.
tido ?*

How old are you ?
How old is your brother.
I am five and twenty.
He is twenty-two years old.
You are older than I.
How old may you be ?
Are you married ?
How often have you been
married ?
How many wives have you
had.

Tem

<i>Tem um. ainda páy, e máy?</i>	Have you father and mother still alive?
<i>Méu páy morréo,</i>	My father is dead.
<i>Mínha máy morréo,</i>	My mother is dead.
<i>Ha dous ánnos que méu páy morréo,</i>	My father has been dead these two years.
<i>Mínha máy casou éutra vez,</i>	My mother is married again.
<i>Quántos filhos tem um.?</i>	How many children have you?
<i>Ténho quatro,</i>	I have four.
<i>Filhos, ou filhas?</i>	Sons or daughters?
<i>Ténho hum filho, e tres filhas?</i>	I have one son and three daughters.
<i>Quántos irmãos tem um.?</i>	How many brothers have you?
<i>Não tenho nenhúm vivo,</i>	I have none alive.
<i>Tódos morrerão,</i>	They are all dead.
<i>Tódos havémos de morrer,</i>	We must all die.
<i>Of the word hora, as a Noun as well as an Interjection.</i>	
<i>Hóra,</i>	An hour, also a particular time.
<i>Eu eslarêi lá dèntro de húma hóra,</i>	I will be there within an hour.
<i>Que héras são?</i>	What's o'clock.
<i>São sete héras.</i>	It is seven o'clock.
<i>A que héras eslarêis vós lá?</i>	At what hour or time will you be there?
<i>As héras que for preciso,</i>	In due or good time, at the time appointed.
<i>Héras desoccupadas,</i>	Leisure hours.
<i>A última hóra ou a hóra da mórtè,</i>	The last hour, or the dying hour.
<i>Cáda hóra,</i>	Every hour.
<i>De hóra em hóra,</i>	Hourly, every hour.
<i>Méya hóra,</i>	Half an hour.
<i>Hum quártio de hóra,</i>	A quarter of an hour.
<i>Húma hóra e méya,</i>	An hour and a half.
<i>Pérto das nêve héras,</i>	About the ninth hour.
<i>Há húma hóra,</i>	An hour ago, or an hour since.
<i>Fóra de héras,</i>	Beyond the hour, or very late.
<i>A héras,</i>	In time.
<i>Recolhér-se a boas héras,</i>	To keep good hours.
<i>Recolhér-se fóra de héras,</i>	To keep bad hours.
<i>Héras de jantar ou de ceár,</i>	Dinner, or supper time.
<i>Pérto das héras de jantar,</i>	About dinner time.

<i>Ainda estais na cama a estas horas?</i>	Are you a-bed at this time of the day?
<i>O relógio da horas,</i>	The clock strikes.
<i>Ja dêrão onze horas,</i>	It struck eleven o'clock.
<i>Relógio de hora,</i>	Hour-glass.
<i>Muito a boas horas,</i>	Early, betimes.
<i>A boas horas,</i>	In good time, in time, at the time appointed, in the very nick of time.
<i>Na má hora,</i>	In an ill hour, unluckily, unfortunately.
<i>Vai-te na ma hora,</i>	Go to the devil, go and be hanged.
<i>Toda a hora que,</i>	Whensoever, at what time soever.
<i>Toda a hora que quizerdes,</i>	At what time you will.
<i>Hora,</i>	Time or hour of child-birth.
<i>Molher que anda para cada hora,</i>	A woman near her time.
<i>Horas de fazer oração,</i>	Prayer-time.
<i>Horas de hir á igreja,</i>	Church-time.
<i>Horas de hir para a cama,</i>	Bed-time.
<i>Horas de comer,</i>	Times of eating.
<i>Ja não são horas,</i>	The time is past, it is too late.
<i>Chegar a hora,</i>	Is for a person to die.
<i>Estár esperándopella sua hora</i>	To wait for God's time.
<i>Não ver a hora,</i>	To long, to desire earnestly, to wish with eagerness continued, with <i>em</i> , or <i>de</i> before the thing desired,
<i>São horas de, &c.</i>	Is it time to, &c.
<i>Horas canónicas,</i>	The set time for the clergy to say their office; also those parts of the office itself, called <i>Prime, Tierce, Sixth, None, &c.</i>
<i>Horas,</i>	Any little prayer book, but particularly that in which is the office of the <i>Blessed Virgin</i> .
<i>As quarênta horas,</i>	So they call the space of three days, in which the consecrated Host is exposed and laid to public view.
<i>Cônta das horas,</i>	Horography, account of hours
<i>Arte de dividir o tempo em horas,</i>	Horometry.
	Hora

Hóra as an Adverb and Interjection.

Hóra deixa-o-hir,
Hóra deíxate déstas parvoíces,
Hóra, deíxémo-nos déstes com-
priméntos,

Hóra vámos, despáxate,
Hóra vámos, não ha perigo,
Hóra vámos, tira daqui isto,
Hóra vámos, têm vergónha,
Hóra, eu não péssô sofrér
aquillo,

Hóra hum, hóra óutro,

Elles hóra estão sibre hum pe,
hóra sibre óutro,

Hóra, que quer dizer isso?

Túdo o que he bom, déve ser
amádó; hóra, Déos he infi-
nitaménte bom, logo, &c.

Hóra, havia hum enfermo,
Por hóra,

Pray let him go.
 Away with these fopperies.
 Away with these compli-
 ments.

Come, come, make haste.
 Away, there is no danger.
 Away with this.
 Away for shame.

I cannot away with it.

Sometimes one, sometimes
 another.

They stand now on one foot,
 and then on another.

How now?

All that is good to be loved,
 now God is infinitely good,
 therefore, &c.

Now there was a sick man.

At present, for the present,
 now, at this time.

A
VOCABULARY

OF

WORDS most used in DISCOURSE.

Do Céu e dos Elementos,

Of the Heaven and the Elements.

DÉOS,
Jesús Christo,
O Espírito Santo,
A Trindade,
A Virgem,
Os anjos,
Os archânjos,
Os santos,
Os bemaventurados,
O céu,
O paráiso,
Inférno,
Purgatório,
Os diabos,
O fogo,
O ar,
A terra,
O mar,
O sol,
A lua,
As estréllas,
Os raios,

GOD.
Jesus Christ.
The Holy Ghost.
The Trinity.
The Virgin.
The angels.
The arch-angels.
The saints.
The blessed.
Heaven.
Paradise.
Hell.
Purgatory.
The devils.
The fire.
The air.
The earth.
The sea.
The sun.
The moon.
The stars.
The rays.

<i>As núvens,</i>	The clouds.
<i>O vento,</i>	The wind.
<i>A chuvia,</i>	The rain.
<i>O trovão,</i>	Thunder.
<i>O relâmpago,</i>	The lightning.
<i>Saraiua,</i>	Hail.
<i>O rayo,</i>	The thunderbolt.
<i>A neve,</i>	The snow.
<i>A geada,</i>	The frost.
<i>O caramelo,</i>	The ice.
<i>O orvalho,</i>	The dew.
<i>Névoa,</i>	A fog, <i>or</i> mist.
<i>Nevoeiro,</i>	A thick fog.
<i>O terremoto,</i>	The earthquake.
<i>O dilúvio,</i>	The deluge, <i>or</i> flood.
<i>O calor,</i>	The heat.
<i>O frio,</i>	The cold.

*Do Tempo.**Of the Time.*

<i>O dia,</i>	The day.
<i>A noite,</i>	The night.
<i>Méyo dia,</i>	Noon.
<i>Méya noite,</i>	Midnight.
<i>A manhã,</i>	The morning.
<i>Depois de méyo dia,</i>	The afternoon.
<i>Hum hora,</i>	An hour.
<i>Hum quarto de hora,</i>	A quarter of an hour.
<i>Hum méya hora,</i>	Half an hour.
<i>Tres quartos de hora,</i>	Three-quarters of an hour.
<i>Hóje,</i>	To-day.
<i>O'ntem,</i>	Yesterday.
<i>Amanhã,</i>	To-morrow.
<i>Antes d'óntem,</i>	The day before yesterday.
<i>Depois de amanhã,</i>	After to-morrow.
<i>Depois de jantar,</i>	After dinner.
<i>Depois de cea,</i>	After supper.
<i>Hum semana,</i>	A week.
<i>Hum mês,</i>	A month.
<i>Hum anno,</i>	A year.
<i>Dia santo,</i>	A holy-day.
<i>Dia de trabalho,</i>	A working day.
<i>O nacer do sol,</i>	The sun-rising.
<i>O por del sol,</i>	The sun-set.

Têmpo de sêga, or da acêifa, The harvest.
Têmpo de vindima, The vintage.

Das Estaçoens do Têmpo.

Of the Seasons:

A primavera, The spring.
O verão, The summer.
O outôno, Autumn.
O invérno, Winter.

Os Días da Semána,

The Days of the Week.

Domíngo, Sunday.
Segúnda-feira, Monday.
Terça-feira, Tuesday.
Quarta-feira, Wednesday.
Quinta-feira, Thursday.
Sêsta-feira, Friday.
Sábado, Saturday.

Dos Mêses,

Of the Months.

Janêiro, January.
Feverêiro, February.
Márço, March.
Abríl, April.
Máyo, May.
Júnho, June.
Júlho, July.
Agósto, August.
Setêmbro, September.
Outúbro, October.
Novêmbro, November.
Dezêmbro, December.

Días Santos.

Holy-Days of the Year.

Día de A'nnos bom, New Year's Day.
Día de Réys, a Epiphanía, Twelfth Day.
A Candelária, Candlemas Day.

Purificação,
O Entrúdo,
Quárta feira de Cinzas,
A Quarésma,
Annunciação,
As Quatro Témporas,
A Semána santa,
Domíngo de Ramos,
Quárta feira de Trevóas,
Quínta feira de Endoénças,

Sêsta feira da Paixão,
Pascóa da Resurreyção,
Affumpção de N. S^a.
As Rogações, or Ladaínhas,
Ascensão,
Pentecóste,

Día do Corpo de Dêos,
Día de S. João,
Día de S. Pédro,
Día de todos os Santos,
Día dos Finados,
Día de S. Martinho,
Día de Natál,
Vigília, or véspera,

The Purification.
 The Carnival, *or* Shrovetide.
 Ash Wednesday.
 The Lent.
 Lady Day in March.
 The Ember Weeks.
 The Holy Week.
 Palm Sunday.
 Wednesday before Easter.
 Maunday Thursday, the last
 Thursday in Lent.
 Good Friday.
 Easter Day.
 Lady Day in harvest.
 Rogation Week.
 The Ascension.
 The Pentecost, *or* Whitsun-
 tide.
 Corpus Christi Day.
 Midsummer Day.
 Lammas Day.
 All Saints Day.
 All Souls.
 Martinmas.
 Christmas Day,
 The eve.

**Da Igrêja e Dignidades Ec-
 clesiásticas.**

A náve,
Zimbório,
Pináculo,
Córo,
Capélla,
Estánte,

Sacristin,
Companário, outórre dos sinos
Síno,
Badálo,
Pia,
Hysope,
Confessionário,

Of the Church and Ecclesiastical Dignities.

The aisle of the church.
 The dome.
 Pinnacle.
 The choir.
 The chapel.
 A reading desk, *or* chorister's
 desk.
 The vestry.
 The bellfry.
 The bell.
 The clapper of the bell.
 The font.
 A sprinkler.
 A confession seat.

Tribuna,

Tribuna,
Cemitério,

Carneiro,
Altár,
Frontál,
Pálho,
Toalha do altár,
Missál,
Sotãna,
Sobrepelliz,
Roquete,

O pápa,
Hum cardeál,
Hum patriárca,
Hum arcebispo,
Hum bispo,
Hum legádo,
Vice legádo,
Hum núncio,
Hum preládo,
Hum commendadór,
Hum abbáde,
Húma abbadéssa,
Hum priór,
Hum reitór,
Beneficiádo,

Fráde, or religiôso,
Coráa,
Hum guardiã,
Hum definidór,
Hum provinciál,
Hum gerál,
Hum vigário,
Hum vigário gerál,
Hum deão,
Hum arcediágo,
Diácono,
Subdiácono,
Hum cónego,
Arcipreste,
Hum clérigo,
Capellão,

A tribune, *or* gallery.
A church-yard, a burying-place.
A charnel.
An altar.
An antependium.
A canopy.
The altar cloth.
A missal, a mass-book.
A cassock.
A surplice.
A short surplice, a bishop's surplice.
The pope.
A cardinal.
A patriarch.
An archbishop.
A bishop.
A legate.
A vice-legate.
A nuncio.
A prelate.
A commander.
An abbot.
An abbess.
A prior.
A rector.
Beneficed clergyman, *or* incumbent.
A friar.
A shaven crown.
A guardian.
A definitor.
A provincial.
A general.
A vicar.
A vicar-general.
A dean.
Archdeacon.
Deacon.
A sub-deacon.
A canon.
Arch-priest.
A priest.
A chaplain.

Hum esmolér,
Hum párroco,
Benéfício simplés,
Freira,
Hum pregadór,
Sacristão, or sancristão,
Menino do côro,

An almoner.
 A curate.
 Sinecure.
 A nun.
 A preacher, or lecturer.
 A sexton, a vestry-keeper.
 A singing boy.

Nómes das cousas que geral-
 mente se cômem.

*Names of things most usually
 eaten.*

Pão,
Agúa,
Vinho,
Cárne,
Peixe,
Cárne cozida,
Cárne açáda,
Hum bocádc de pão,
Hum pastel,
Huma sópa,
Hum cáldo,
Huma saláda,
Hum mólho,

Bread.
 Water.
 Wine.
 Meat, or flesh.
 Fish.
 Boiled meat.
 Roast meat.
 A mouthful of bread.
 A pye.
 Soup.
 Broth.
 A fallad.
 Any kind of fause to dip in,
 provoking appetite.

Frúta,
Queíjo,
Manteíga,

Fruit.
 Cheese.
 Butter.

Do Serviço de huma Mésa.

Of the Covering of the Table.

A mésa,
Huma cadeíra,
A toálha da mésa,
Toálha de mãos,
Hum guardanápo,
Huma fáca,
Hum gárso,
Huma colhér,
Hum prato,
Hum saleíro,
Galhêta do vinágre,
Galhêta do azeite,

The table.
 A chair.
 The table cloth.
 A towel.
 A napkin.
 A knife.
 A fork.
 A spoon.
 A plate.
 A saltcellar.
 A vinegar bottle, or cruet.
 A cruet, or vial for oil.

Talher

An oil cruet

Talhér,
 Talhér de açúcar,
 Bayxélla ou serviço de prata,
 Húma cubérta,
 Práto, guardanápo, fáca,
 gárfo, colhér (túdo júnto)
 O gomil,
 Húma bacía,
 Hum cópo,
 Húma garráfa,
 Húma táça,
 Castiçal,
 Vêla,
 Tesóuras de espevitár,
 Húma sálva,
 Húma éscudélla,
 Césto pára por a paõ,
 Donzélla,
 Faquéiro,
 Louça de Bárro,
 Louça de estânho,

A cruet-stand.
 Sugar-box.
 A set of silver plate.
 A course.
 A cover.
 The ewer.
 A basin.
 A glass.
 A bottle.
 A cup.
 A candlestick,
 A candle.
 Snuffers.
 A salver.
 A porringer.
 A bread-basket.
 A dumb-waiter.
 A case for knives.
 Earthen ware.
 Pewter.

Do Comér, e Bebér.

Of Eating and Drinking.

Vaca,
 Carnéiro,
 Vitélla,
 Cordéiro,
 Gallinha,
 Gállo,
 Perú,
 Almóndegas,
 O jantar,
 Almóço,
 Cêa,
 Merénda,

Beef.
 Mutton.
 Veal.
 Lamb.
 Hen.
 Cock.
 A turkey.
 Puddings.
 The dinner.
 Breakfast.
 Supper.
 Luncheon, or the afternoon's
 luncheon.

Consoáda,

A light supper, as upon a collatio
 fast-day.

Banquéte,
 Fóme,
 Séde,
 Fastio,
 Paõ,

An entertainment.
 Hunger.
 Thirst.
 A loathing of meat.
 Bread.

Pão frêsko, or pão mólle,
 Pão quênte,
 Pão de toda farinha,
 Pão brâncô, or pão alvo,
 Arróz,
 Pão de rála,
 Pão de cevada,
 Pão de centêo,
 Pão de avêa,
 Pão de milho miúdo,
 Pão de milho grãde, ou de
 maiz,
 Pão levêdo,
 Pão ásmo,
 Biscôuto,
 Migálha de pão,
 Fatia de pão,
 Codêa de pão,
 Mássa,
 Tórta,
 Rôska,
 Estofado,
 Fiambre,
 Carne assada sobre grêlhas,
 Carne frita,
 Picado, or carne picada,
 Javali, or porco montéz,
 Presunto, *fiambre*,
 Porco,
 Cabrito,
 Toucinho,
 Hum lombo,
 Mãos de carneiro,
 Fressura, or forçura,
 Cachôla de porco,
 Linguica, or lingoiça,
 Chouriço de sangue de porco,
 Páyo,
 Fricassé,
 Fígado,
 Leite,
 Nata,
 Sôro,
 Requeijão,
 Coalhada,

New bread.
 A hot loaf.
 Wheaten bread.
 White bread.
 Rice.
 Brown bread.
 Barley bread.
 Rye bread.
 Oaten bread.
 Millet bread.
 Indian corn bread.
 Leavened bread.
 Unleavened bread.
 Biscuit.
 A crumb of bread.
 A slice of bread.
 A crust of bread.
 Dough.
 A tart.
 Bread made like a roll.
 Stewed meat.
~~Cold~~ meat.
 Broiled meat.
 Fried meat.
 A hash.
 A wild boar.
 Ham, gammon of bacon.
 Pork.
 Kid.
 Bacon.
 A loin.
 Sheep's trotters.
 A pluck.
~~A hog's haffer.~~ *Pig's head*
 A sausage.
 Black-pudding.
 A thick and short sausage.
 A fricassée.
 Liver.
 Milk.
 Cream.
 Whey.
 A kind of new cheese. *curds*
 Curdled milk.

Ovo,

O'vo,
Gemma do ovo,
Clara do ovo,
O'vo fresco,
O'vo mólle,
O'vo duro,
O'vo assádo,
O'vo galládo,
O'vos reaes,

O'vos escalfádos,
O'vos fritos,
O'vos mexidos, e fritos,
Bolínholo,
O'vos de péixe,
Dóces,
Confeitos,
Marmeláda,

An egg.
 The yolk of an egg.
 The white of an egg.
 A new laid egg.
 A soft egg.
 A hard egg.
 A roasted egg.
 An egg with a chicken in it.
 Sweet eggs spun out like hairs.
 Poached eggs.
 Fried eggs.
 An amlet.
 A fritter.
 The roes of fish.
 Sweetmeats.
 Comfits.
 Marmalade.

O que se A'ísta.

What is roasted.

Hum capáõ,
Húma fránga,
Hum frángo,
Pómbos,
Pómbro trocáz,

Gallínholo,
Húma espécie de gallínholo pe-
quena á qual os Castelhános
chamão gallinéta ciega,

Perdiz,
Tórdo,
Faisão,
Faisãosinho,
Hum leitão,
Veádo,
Hum Coélho,
Láparo,
Lébre,
Adem,
Gânso, or o mácho da ádem,
Páta,
Páto,

A capon.
 A pullet.
 A chicken.
 Pigeons.
 A wood culver, or wood-
 pigeon.
 A woodcock.
 A snipe.
 A partridge.
 A thrush.
 A pheasant.
 A pheasant-powt.
 A roasting-pig.
 A stag.
 A rabbit.
 A young coney.
 A hare.
 A duck.
 A drake.
 Goose.
 Gander, the male of the goose
Calhándra,

Calhândra,
Codorníz,

A sky-lark.
A quail.

De outros Pássaros.

Of other Birds.

Agúia,
Agúia nova,
Abútre,
Abestrús,
Esmerilhão,
Gavião, femer,
Mácho, (do gavião)

An eagle.
An eaglet.
A vulture.
An ostrich.
A merlin.
A sparrow-hawk.
A tassel, the tassel of a sparrow-hawk.

Falcão,
Falcão que ainda não voa,
Gerifalte,
Sácrè,
Gárça,
Melharúco,
Garçota,
Milhão, or milháfre,

A falcon.
A jass-hawk.
A ger-falcon.
A faker, a faker-hawk.
A heron.
Tomtit.
A little heron.
A kite.

Córvo,
Grálha,
Grálho,
Alveloa or rabeta,

A crow, or raven.
A rook.
A jack-daw.
A wag-tail.

Canário,
Pintafigo,

A canary-bird.
A gold-finch.

Mérlo,
Tentilhão,

A black-bird.
A chaffinch.

Rouxinol,
Verdelhão,

A nightingale.
A green-bird.

Papagáyo,
Pega,

A parrot.
A magpie.

Estorninho, or zorzal,
Francélho,

A starling.
A hobby, a musket.

Mócho,
Corúja,

Owl.
A screech owl.

Morcégo,

A bat.

A've nocturna, come melro,
que máma as câbras,

A goat milker.

O francolím,

A godwit, a moor-cock.

Búfo,

A night crow, or raven.

Cerceta,

A teal.

Córvo marinho,

A cormorant.

Gaiivota,

Gaivôta,
Gaivão,

Andorinha,
Mergulhão,
Marrêca,
Picãoço,
Taralhão,
Pavão,
Pavoa,
Arara,
Pardal,
Rôla,
Alcyón,
Cegonha,
Cúco,
Cisne,
Pintarróxo,
Gróu,
Pavoncino,
Pelicano,
Tarambôla,
Pisco,

A moor-hen, *or* gull.
A martlet, *or* martin, a kind
of swallow.
A swallow.
A dive, *or* didapper.
A wild-duck.
A wren, a little bird.
A kind of ortolan.
A peacock.
A pea-hen.
A macaw.
A sparrow.
A turtle-dove.
A king's fisher.
A stork.
A cuckow.
A swan.
A red robin.
A crane.
A lapwing.
A pelican.
A plover.
A bullfinch, *or* red-tail.

Pará os Días de Péixe, ou de
Jejum.

Sôpa de ervas, &c.

Péixe,
Péixe do mar,
Péixe do rio, ou da água doce
Sável,
Anchôva,
Anguía, or Enguía,
Barbo,
Lúcio,
Cárpe,
Síba,
Lúla,
Cábra,
Goráz,
Cóngro,
Douráda,

For Fish Days, or Fast Days.

Soup meagre, *or* lenten pot-
tage.
Fish.
Sea-fish.
Fresh-water fish.
A shad.
An anchovy.
An eel.
A barbel.
A pike, *or* jack.
A carp.
A cuttle.
A calamary.
The miller's thumb.
A rochet, *or* roach.
A conger. [the gilt head.
Dorado, St. Peter's fish, *or*
Lin-

Linguádo,
Lagôsta,
Bordálo,

Múgem,
Rodová lho,

Sárda,

Caválta,

Sardinha,

Bacalhão,

Arénque,

Voadór,

Arrénque de fumo,

Arrénque com óvas,

Pescáda,

Cadóz,

O'stra,

Lampréa,

Lampréa pequena,

Pórco marinho,

Pólvo,

Pérca,

Tínca,

Trúta,

Atúm,

Salmão,

Camarão,

Caranguêjo,

Ameijóa,

Ervilhas,

Fávas,

Espínafres,

Alcáchofras,

Espárgo,

Couve,

Repólho,

Nabos,

Grélos de couve,

Couve créspe,

Coliflór, or coulisflór,

Beldroégas,

Cenôuras,

Célgas, or acélgas,

Tomates,

A sole.

A lobster.

A sturgeon; some call it
shad-fish.

A mullet.

A byrt or turbot.

A sort of little mackarel.

A mackerel.

A pilchard.

Dry cod.

A herring.

A flying-fish.

A red herring.

A hard-rowed herring.

A kind of cod-fish.

A gudgeon.

An oyster.

A lamprey.

A lampern.

A porpoise.

Pourcontrell, or many-feet.

Perch.

A tench.

A trout.

A tunny-fish.

A salmon.

A shrimp.

A crab.

A cockle.

Pease.

Beans.

Spinage.

Artichokes.

Asparagus.

Cabbage, colewort.

Cabbage.

Turnips.

Sprouts.

Curled colewort.

Cauliflower.

Purslane.

Carrots.

Beets.

Apples of love.

Para

Pará temperár o Comér.

To season meat with.

Sal,
Piménta,
Pimentão,
Azéite,
Vinagre,
Mostarda,
Cravos,
Canéla,
Louréiro,
Alcapárras,
Cogumélos,
Tubará da terra,
Cebólas,
Ouregão,
Fúncho,
Cebolínhas,
Alho,
Laránjas,
Limóens,
Pinhóens,
Perrexil,
Sálfa,
Ortelãã,
Aipo horténse,
Alho porro,
Coéntro,
Açafrám,
Comínhos,

Salt.
Pepper.
Cayan pepper.
Oil.
Vinegar.
Mustard.
Cloves.
Cinnamon.
Laurel.
Capers.
Mushrooms.
Truffles.
Onions.
Organy.
Fennel.
Young onions.
Garlick.
Oranges.
Lemons.
The kernels of a pine apple.
Wild parsley.
Garden parsley.
Mint.
Cellery.
Leek.
Coriander.
Saffron.
Cummins.

Pará Saláda.

For a Sallad.

Almeirão,
Almeirão horténse, or endívia,
Alfáce,
Chicória,
Agrióens,
Mastrúços, or mastúrços,
Cerefólio,
Rabão,

Wild succory.
Endive.
Lettuce.
Succory.
Water cresses.
Cresses.
Chervil.
Raddish root.

Para

Pará Sombreméfa.

For the Dessert.

Maçããs,
 Péras,
 Péra bergamóta,
 Pécegos,
 Camoéza,
 Albrícoque,
 Ceréjas,
 Ceréjas de fáco,
 Gínjas,
 Gínja garrafál,

 Laránja da China,
 Uvas,
 Pássas de úva,
 Uva espím,
 Figos,
 Figos lámpos,

 Améixas,
 Pássas de améixas,
 Amóras de çárça, òr de sylva,
 Amóras que nácem de húma
 sorte de sylva ténra,
 Amóras que nácem da amo-
 réira,
 Mármelos,
 Romããs,
 Líma,
 Azeitónas,
 Amendóas,
 Néspéras,
 Melão,
 Melância, or balância,
 Castánhas,
 Nózes,
 Aveláns,
 Morángos,
 Medrónho,

Apples.
 Pears.
 A bergamot pear.
 Peaches.
 A pippin.
 Apricot.
 Cherries.
 Hard cherries.
 Sour cherries.
 A very large sort of cherry,
 the fruit of the dwarf
 cherry-tree.
 China-orange.
 Grapes.
 Raisins.
 Gooseberries.
 Figs.
 The first figs that come in
 May.
 Plums.
 Prunes.
 Blackberries.
 Raspberries.

 Mulberries.

 Quinces.
 Pomegranates.
 A lime.
 Olives.
 Almonds.
 Medlars.
 A melon.
 Water-melon.
 Chesnuts.
 Walnuts.
 Hazelnuts.
 Strawberries
 A sort of fruit they have in
 Portugal like a strawberry,
 eating whereof, they say,
 makes people drunk.

Támara,

Tamâra,
Fístico,
Alfarrôba,
Bolôta,
Sôrva,
Açoféifa, or maçã de náfega,
Dóces,

A date.
 A pistache-nut.
 A carob.
 A sweet acorn.
 Service.
 A jubub.
 Sweet-meats.

Das A'rvores e Arbústos.

Of Trees and Shrubs.

Dama/quêire,
Amendoêira,
Cerejeira,
Castanhêiro,
Cidrêira,
Sorvêira,
Palmêira,
Figuêira,
Marmelêiro,
Macêira,
Macêira da náfega,
Roméira,
Limoêira,
Amorêira,
Olivêira,
Nesperêira,
Laranjeira,
Múrta,
Noguêira,
Zambujêira,
E'ra,
Peceguêiro,
Rosêira,
Ameixiêira,
Perêira,
Rosmaninho,
Pinhêiro,
Giêsta,

An apricot-tree.
 An almond-tree.
 A cherry-tree.
 A chesnut-tree.
 A citron-tree.
 A service-tree.
 A palm-tree.
 A fig-tree.
 A quince-tree.
 An apple-tree.
 A jubub-tree.
 A pomegranate-tree.
 A lemon-tree.
 A mulberry-tree.
 An olive-tree.
 A medlar-tree.
 An orange-tree.
 Myrtle.
 A walnut-tree.
 A wild olive-tree.
 Ivy.
 A peach-tree.
 A rose-bush.
 A plum-tree.
 A pear-tree.
 Rosemary.
 A pine-tree.
 Broom.

Dos Reptíles, e Animáis
 amphíbios.

*Of Reptiles and Amphibious
 Creatures.*

Minhóca,
Serpénte,

An earth-worm.
 A serpent.

Serpénte

Serpente com ázas,
A'spide,
Cobra,
Cobra de cascavel,
Vibora,
Lagarto,
O'sga,
Alacrão,
Crocódilo,
Jacaré, or crocódilo da Ame-
rica,
Castór,
Cágado,
Lontra,

A flying serpent.
 An asp.
 A snake.
 A rattle-snake.
 A viper.
 A lizard.
 An evet, eft, or newt.
 A scorpion.
 A crocodile.
 An alligator.
 A beaver.
 A land tortoise.
 An otter.

Dos Insetos.

Of the Insects.

Aranha,
Formiga,
Caracól,
Rã,
Sápo,
Oução,
Escaravelho,
Carunchó,
Piolho, or lagártada hortaliça
Cigarra,
Borbolêta,
Grillo,
Piolho,
Piolho ládro,
Léndeia,
Púlga,
Mésca,
Perfomejo,
Carrapato,
Gafanhoto,
Polilha, or traça,
Véspe, or abéspora,
Abélha,
Zángo, or Zangão,
Tavaõ,
Bóyde Déos,
Mosquito,

A spider.
 A pismire or ant.
 A snail.
 A frog.
 A toad.
 Hand-worm.
 A beetle.
 Wood-worm.
 Caterpillar.
 Grasshopper.
 A butterfly.
 A cricket.
 A louse.
 Crab-louse.
 A nit.
 A flea.
 A fly.
 A bug.
 A tick.
 A locust.
 Moth.
 A wasp.
 A bee.
 A drone.
 An ox fly.
 A lady-bird.
 A gnat.

Graos de Parentesco,

Degrees of Kindred.

Páy,
 Mãy,
 Avó,
 Avá,
 Bisavó,
 Bisavá,
 Filho,
 Filha,
 Irmão,
 Irmã,
 Primogénito,
 O filho mais méço,
 Tio,
 Tia,
 Sobrinho,
 Sobrinha,
 Primo,
 Prima,
 Primo com irmão,
 Prima com irmão,
 Cunhado,
 Cunchada,
 Méyo irmão,
 Sógro,
 Sógra,
 Padrásto,
 Madrásta,
 Enteado,
 Enteada,
 Génro,
 Nóra,
 Neta,
 Neto,
 Bisnéto,
 Bisnéta,
 Consorte, masc. and fem.
 Marido,
 Molhér,
 Irmão gémeo,
 Coláço, or irmão de leite,
 Bastardo,
 Compádre,

Father.
 Mother.
 Grandfather.
 Grandmother.
 Great grandfather.
 Great grandmother.
 Son.
 Daughter.
 Brother.
 Sister.
 The eldest son.
 The youngest son.
 Uncle.
 Aunt.
 Nephew.
 Niece.
 Cousin.
 A female cousin.
 The male first cousin.
 The female first cousin.
 Brother-in-law.
 Sister-in-law.
 Half-brother.
 Father-in-law.
 Mother-in-law.
 A step-father.
 A step-mother.
 A step-son.
 A step-daughter.
 A son-in-law.
 A daughter-in-law.
 A grand-daughter.
 A grand-son.
 A great grand-son.
 A great grand-daughter.
 A consort.
 Husband.
 Wife.
 A twin-brother.
 A foster-brother.
 A bastard.
 A male gossip.

<i>Comádre,</i>	A female gossip.
<i>Afilhádo,</i>	A god-son.
<i>Afilháda,</i>	A god-daughter.
<i>Padrinho,</i>	A god-father.
<i>Madrinha,</i>	A god-mother.
<i>O parénte,</i>	A male relation.
<i>A parénte,</i>	A female relation.
<i>Parénte por afinidáde, or</i> <i>consanguinidáde.</i>	A kin, a relation either of affinity or consanguinity.

Dos differétes Géneros de
Estádo de hum Hómem,
ou de húma Mulhér, e das
súas qualidádes,

*Of the conditions of Man and
Woman, as well as of their
qualities.*

<i>O Hómem,</i>	A man.
<i>A molhér,</i>	A woman.
<i>Hum hómem de idáde,</i>	An aged man.
<i>Húma molhér de idáde,</i>	An aged woman.
<i>Hum vélho,</i>	An old man.
<i>Húma vélha,</i>	An old woman.
<i>Hum môço, ou mancêbo,</i>	A young man.
<i>Húma rapariga,</i>	A girl.
<i>Hum amánte,</i>	A spark.
<i>Húma amíga,</i>	A mistress.
<i>Húma criança, ou menino,</i>	A child, a little child.
<i>Hum rapáz,</i>	A boy.
<i>Hum rapazinho,</i>	A little boy.
<i>Húma menina,</i>	A little girl.
<i>Húma donzélla,</i>	A maiden.
<i>Húma vírgem,</i>	A virgin.
<i>Amo,</i>	A master.
<i>Ama,</i>	A mistress.
<i>Criádo,</i>	A male-servant.
<i>Criáda,</i>	A female-servant.
<i>Cidadão,</i>	A citizen.
<i>Rústico,</i>	A countryman.
<i>Hum estrangéiro,</i>	A stranger.
<i>Hum viúvo,</i>	A widower.
<i>Húma viúva,</i>	A widow.
<i>Hum herdéiro,</i>	An heir.
<i>Huma herdêira,</i>	An heiress.
<i>Soltéiro,</i>	A bachelor.
<i>Estádo de soltéiro,</i>	Bachelorship.

Hómem

<i>Hómem casádo,</i>	A married man.
<i>Molhér casáda,</i>	A married woman.
<i>Molhér que está de páрто,</i>	A lying-in-woman.
<i>Déstro,</i>	Dexterous.
<i>Agúdo,</i>	Sharp.
<i>Recatádo,</i>	Cautious.
<i>Astúto, or velháco,</i>	Cunning, sly, crafty.
<i>Espérto, or vívo,</i>	Sprightly.
<i>Dóudo,</i>	Mad.
<i>Malicióso,</i>	Malicious.
<i>Tímido,</i>	Fearful.
<i>Valeróso,</i>	Brave.
<i>Tónto,</i>	Stupid.
<i>Embuatéiro,</i>	Deceitful.
<i>Grosséiro,</i>	Clownish.
<i>Bem criádo,</i>	Well-bred.
<i>Cortéz,</i>	Courteous.
<i>Jústo,</i>	Just.
<i>Desavergonhádo,</i>	Impudent.
<i>Impertinénte,</i>	Impertinent.
<i>Importúno,</i>	Troublesome.
<i>Descuidáda,</i>	Careless.
<i>Temerário,</i>	Rash.
<i>Constánte,</i>	Constant.
<i>Devóto,</i>	Devout.
<i>Diligénte,</i>	Diligent.
<i>Misericordióso, or compas-</i>	Merciful.
<i>Paciénte,</i>	Patient.
<i>Ambicióso,</i>	Ambitious.
<i>Cobiçóso,</i>	Covetous.
<i>Sobérbo,</i>	Proud.
<i>Cobárde,</i>	Coward.
<i>Lisonjéiro,</i>	A flatterer.
<i>Golóso,</i>	Glutton.
<i>Desleál,</i>	Treacherous.
<i>Desagradecído,</i>	Ungrateful.
<i>Inhumáno,</i>	Inhumane.
<i>Insolénte,</i>	Insolent.
<i>Luxurióso,</i>	Lewd.
<i>Teimóso,</i>	Positive, stubborn.
<i>Preguiçóso,</i>	Slothful.
<i>Pródigo,</i>	Prodigal.
<i>Molheréngo,</i>	Given to women.
<i>Atrevído,</i>	Bold.
<i>Alegre,</i>	Merry.

<i>Que tem ciúmes,</i>	Jealous.
<i>Adúltero,</i>	Adulterer.
<i>Salteador,</i>	A highwayman.
<i>Matador,</i>	A murderer.
<i>Murmurador,</i>	A censurer.
<i>Calumniador,</i>	A calumniator.
<i>Feitiçeiro,</i>	A forcerer.
<i>Trahidór,</i>	A traitor.
<i>Malvado,</i>	Wicked.
<i>Rebêlde,</i>	A rebel.
<i>Pérfido,</i>	Perfidious.
<i>Bóbo,</i>	A buffoon.
<i>Mentiróso,</i>	A liar.
<i>Altivo,</i>	Haughty.
<i>Cóxo,</i>	Lame of the legs.
<i>Estropeado das mãos,</i>	Lame of the hands.
<i>Cégo,</i>	Blind.
<i>Mouco, or surdo,</i>	Deaf.
<i>Canhoto, or esquerdo,</i>	Left-handed.
<i>Múdo,</i>	Dumb.

Dos Moradores de húma
Cidade.

*Of the Inhabitants of a
City.*

<i>Nobre,</i>	A nobleman.
<i>Fidalgo,</i>	A gentleman.
<i>Mecânico,</i>	A mechanic.
<i>Tendeiro,</i>	A shop-keeper.
<i>Mercador or homem de negócio,</i>	Merchant, or trader.
<i>O vulgo, or a plebe,</i>	The mob.
<i>Canalha, or a mais vil gente da plebe,</i>	The rabble.
<i>Official,</i>	A work-man, a man that labours with his hands.
<i>Jornaleiro,</i>	A journeyman.
<i>Prateiro,</i>	A silver-smith.
<i>Orivés do ouro,</i>	A gold-smith.
<i>Livrêiro,</i>	A book-seller.
<i>Impressor,</i>	A printer.
<i>Barbeiro,</i>	A barber.
<i>Mercador de seda,</i>	A mercer.
<i>Mercador de panno,</i>	A woollen-draper.

Mercador

<i>Mercadór de pánno, delinho,</i>	A linen-draper.
<i>e roupas da India, or fan-</i>	
<i>queire,</i>	
<i>Alfayáte,</i>	A tailor.
<i>Alfayáte remendão,</i>	Botcher.
<i>Costureira,</i>	A sempstress.
<i>Sombreireiro,</i>	A hatter.
<i>Sapateiro,</i>	Shoemaker.
<i>Remendão, (sapateiro),</i>	A cobbler.
<i>Ferreiro,</i>	A blacksmith.
<i>Alveítar,</i>	Farrier.
<i>Cerralheiro,</i>	A locksmith.
<i>Parteira,</i>	A midwife.
<i>Médico,</i>	A physician.
<i>Charlatão,</i>	A quack.
<i>Cirurgiám, or surgião,</i>	A surgeon.
<i>Sacamólas,</i>	A tooth-drawer.
<i>Selleiro,</i>	A saddler.
<i>Carpinteiro,</i>	A carpenter.
<i>Gastadór, (in an army)</i>	A pioneer.
<i>Padeiro,</i>	A baker.
<i>Carniceiro,</i>	A butcher.
<i>Fruteiro,</i>	A fruiterer.
<i>Molhér que vende verdúras</i>	An herb woman.
<i>ou ortalíças,</i>	
<i>Pasteleiro,</i>	A pastry-cook.
<i>Taverneiro, or vendeiro,</i>	A vintner.
<i>Cervejeiro, oro que faz cervéja</i>	A brewer.
<i>Estalajadeiro,</i>	An inn-keeper.
<i>Bofarínheiro, or mercadór de</i>	A pedlar.
<i>merceria,</i>	
<i>Relogeiro,</i>	A watch-maker.
<i>Pregoeiro,</i>	A crier.
<i>Foyeiro, or joyalheiro,</i>	A jeweller.
<i>Boticário,</i>	An apothecary.
<i>Vidraceiro,</i>	A glazier.
<i>Carvoeiro,</i>	A collier.
<i>Fardineiro,</i>	A gardener.
<i>Letrado,</i>	A lawyer.
<i>Procuradór,</i>	A solicitor.
<i>Advogado,</i>	An advocate, or a pleader.
<i>Juíz,</i>	A judge.
<i>Carcereiro,</i>	A gaoler.
<i>Verdugo, or algóz,</i>	A hangman.
<i>Mariól,</i>	A porter.

Os cinco Sentidos.

The five Senses.

A vista,
O ouvido,
O olfacto,
O gosto,
O tacto,

The sight.
 The hearing.
 The smell.
 The taste.
 The feeling.

As Partes do Corpo Humano.

The Parts of the Human Body.

Cabeça,
Miêlos, or cérebro,
Toutiço,
Testa,
Molleira,
Fôntes,
Orêlha,
Cartilagem,
Tímpano,
Sobrancêlha,
Pálpebras, or Capéllas dos
olhos,
Pestânas,
Lágrimal,
Alva do olho,
Meninas dos olhos,
Naríz,
Maçãã do rosto,
Véntas,
Sépto, or diaphragmo do
nariz,
A ponta do nariz,
A boca,
Os dentes,
Agengiva,
A lingôa,
Padâr, paladâr, or ceôda
bôca,
Queixáda,
A bárba,

The head.
 The brains.
 The hinder part of the head.
 The forehead.
 The mould of the head.
 The temples.
 The ear.
 The gristle.
 The drum of the ear.
 Eye-brow.
 The eye-lid.
 The eye-lashes.
 The corner of the eye.
 The white of the eye.
 The eye-balls.
 The nose.
 The ball of the cheeks.
 The nostrils.
 The gristle of the nose.
 The tip of the nose.
 The mouth.
 The teeth.
 The gum.
 Tongue.
 The roof, or palate of the
 mouth.
 The jaw.
 The chin.

As bárbas,

<i>As bárbas,</i>	The beard.
<i>Bigôdes,</i>	Whiskers.
<i>O pescôço,</i>	The neck.
<i>A núca,</i>	The nape of the neck.
<i>A garganta,</i>	The throat.
<i>Séyo,</i>	The bosom.
<i>Têta,</i>	The pap.
<i>Peito,</i>	The breast.
<i>Bico de peito,</i>	The nipple.
<i>Estômago,</i>	The stomach.
<i>Costêlas,</i>	The ribs.
<i>Embigo,</i>	The navel.
<i>Barriga,</i>	The belly.
<i>Verilha,</i>	The groin.
<i>O bráço,</i>	The arm.
<i>O cotovêlo,</i>	The elbow.
<i>Sôbaco, or sôvaco,</i>	The arm-pit.
<i>A mão,</i>	The hand.
<i>Munhéca,</i>	The wrist.
<i>A pálma da mão,</i>	The palm of the hand.
<i>Os dédos,</i>	The fingers.
<i>O dédo polegár,</i>	The thumb.
<i>O dédo mostradór,</i>	The fore-finger.
<i>Dédo do méyo,</i>	The middle-finger.
<i>Dédo annulár,</i>	The ring-finger.
<i>Dédo menínho, or mínimo,</i>	The little-finger.
<i>Póntas dos dédos,</i>	The tips, or tops of the fingers.
<i>Júntas, e nós dos dédos,</i>	The joints, and knuckles of the fingers.
<i>Dédo do pé,</i>	A toe.
<i>A unha,</i>	The nail.
<i>As côstas,</i>	The back.
<i>Os ómbros,</i>	The shoulders.
<i>Ilhargas,</i>	The sides.
<i>As nádegas,</i>	The buttocks.
<i>Côxa,</i>	The thigh.
<i>Joelho,</i>	The knee.
<i>Barriga da pérna,</i>	The calf of the leg.
<i>Espinháço,</i>	The ridge-bone of the back.
<i>Tornozêlo,</i>	The ancle.
<i>O pé,</i>	The foot.
<i>Sóla do pé,</i>	The sole of the foot.
<i>O coração,</i>	The heart.
<i>Os bôfes,</i>	The lungs.

<i>O figado,</i>	The liver.
<i>O bácio,</i>	The spleen.
<i>Os rins,</i>	The kidneys.
<i>Abóca do estômago,</i>	The pit of the stomach.
<i>As tripas,</i>	The guts.
<i>O fel,</i>	The gall.
<i>A mãe,</i>	The womb.
<i>Béxiga,</i>	The bladder.
<i>Sângue,</i>	The blood.
<i>Cúspo,</i>	Spittle.
<i>Ourina,</i>	Urine.
<i>Excremento,</i>	Dung.
<i>Suór,</i>	Sweat.
<i>Mónco or rânho,</i>	Snot.
<i>Lágrima,</i>	Tear.
<i>Carépa, or cáspa,</i>	Scurf.

Dos Vestidos,

Of Cloaths.

<i>Hum vestido,</i>	A suit of cloaths.
<i>Cabelleira,</i>	A wig.
<i>Cravata,</i>	A cravat or neckcloth.
<i>Chapéu,</i>	A hat.
<i>Abas do chapéu,</i>	The brims.
<i>Cordão, ou fita, pará o cha-</i>	A hatband.
<i>Barrête,</i>	A cap.
<i>Cápa,</i>	A cloak.
<i>Gibão,</i>	A doublet.
<i>Véstia,</i>	A waistcoat.
<i>Camísa,</i>	A shirt.
<i>Cásaca,</i>	A close coat.
<i>Casacão,</i>	A great coat.
<i>Calções,</i>	Breeches.
<i>Ceróulas,</i>	Drawers.
<i>Méas, or méyas,</i>	Stockings.
<i>Méas de cabrestilho,</i>	Stirrup stockings.
<i>Lígas,</i>	Garters.
<i>Sapâtos,</i>	Shoes.
<i>Chinélas,</i>	Slippers.
<i>Bótas,</i>	Boots.
<i>Fivélas,</i>	Buckles.
<i>Esporas,</i>	Spurs.
<i>Punhos,</i>	Ruffles.
<i>Talim, or taly,</i>	A shoulder-belt.

Boldrie,

<i>Boldrié,</i>	A waist-belt.
<i>Espáda,</i>	A sword.
<i>Lúvas,</i>	Gloves.
<i>Cinta,</i>	A girdle.
<i>Lêngo,</i>	Handkerchief.
<i>Lêngo para o pescôço,</i>	A neck handkerchief.
<i>Samárria, or pellôte do câmpo,</i>	A shepherd's jacket.

Pará Molhéres.

Camisa de molhéres,
Toucádo,
Sáya,
Mantilha,

Máto,

Aventál,
Bracelêtes,
Anél,
Arrecádas,
Lêque,
Penteadór,
Toucador,
Sináes,
Espélho,
Régalo,
Espartilha,
Pén,

Alfinêtes,
Tesbura,
Dedál,
Agúlha,
Fio,
Fio de pérolas,
Polvilhos,
Jóyas,
Cór,
Palito,
Rôca,
Fúso,
Almofadínha para alfinêtes,

For Women.

A shift, or smock.
A head drefs.
A petticoat.
A little cloak women wear on their heads.
A mantle, a kind of cloak women wear in Portugal, covering their head and the upper part of their body.

An apron.
Bracelets.
Ring.
Ear-rings.
A fan.
A combing cloth.
A toilet, a dressing table.
Patches to wear on one's face.
A looking-glass.
A muff.
Stays.
A comb.
Pins.
A pair of scissars.
A thimble.
A needle.
Thread.
A necklace of pearls.
Powder.
Jewels.
Paint.
A tooth-pick.
A distaff.
The spindle.
Small pincushion.

Agúlha

<i>Agúlha de toucár,</i>	Bodkin.
<i>Fítas,</i>	Ribbons.
<i>Fichú (sôrte de lenço para o</i> <i>pescôço,</i>	A necklace.
<i>Tenazinhas,</i>	Nippers.
<i>Pendêntes,</i>	Bob, <i>or</i> pendant.
<i>Pa'latina,</i>	Tippet.
<i>Guárda infânte, or Guardin-</i> <i>fânte,</i>	Farthingale, <i>or</i> hoop.
<i>Vêo,</i>	Veil.
<i>Rênda,</i>	Lace.
<i>Bílbros,</i>	Bobbins.
<i>Bílbros feitos de ôsso,</i>	Bones.
<i>Agôa da raínha de Ungria,</i>	Hungary water.
<i>Agôa de cheiro,</i>	Scented water.
<i>Justilho,</i>	Bodice.

Os dóze Signos Celéstes.

The twelve Celestial Signs.

<i>Aries,</i>	Aries, <i>or</i> the ram.
<i>Touro,</i>	The bull.
<i>Gémini or Géminis,</i>	The twins.
<i>Cancér,</i>	The crab.
<i>Leão,</i>	The lion.
<i>Virgem,</i>	The virgin.
<i>Líbra,</i>	The balance.
<i>Escorpião,</i>	The scorpion.
<i>Sagitário,</i>	The archer.
<i>Capricórnio,</i>	The goat.
<i>Aquário,</i>	The water-bearer.
<i>Peíxes,</i>	The fishes.

De húma Cása e do que lhe
pertence.*Of a House, and all that be-*
longs to it.

<i>Cása,</i>	A house.
<i>Alicérse,</i>	Foundation.
<i>Párede,</i>	A wall.
<i>Tábique,</i>	A light brick-wall.
<i>Páteo, or Pétio,</i>	A court, <i>or</i> yard.
<i>Andâr, or sobrado,</i>	A floor.
<i>Facháda,</i>	The front.
<i>Janélla,</i>	A window.

Abóbada.

<i>Abóbada,</i>	A vault.
<i>As escádas,</i>	The stairs.
<i>Degrãos,</i>	Steps.
<i>Telhado,</i>	A tiled roof.
<i>Télas,</i>	Tiles.
<i>Ladrilhos, or tijóles,</i>	Bricks.
<i>Aposento,</i>	A room.
<i>Antecâmara,</i>	Antichamber.
<i>Sála,</i>	A hall.
<i>Tecto,</i>	A roof.
<i>Alcova,</i>	An alcove.
<i>Balcão,</i>	A balcony.
<i>Gabinete,</i>	Closet.
<i>Almário,</i>	A cupboard.
<i>Guárda-roupa,</i>	Wardrobe.
<i>Adega,</i>	A cellar.
<i>Cozinha,</i>	A kitchen.
<i>Despensa,</i>	A pantry.
<i>Cheminé,</i>	A chimney.
<i>Cavallariça,</i>	The stable.
<i>Gallinheiro, or casa das gal- linhas,</i>	A hen-house.
<i>Poleiro,</i>	A hen-roost.
<i>Jardín,</i>	A garden.
<i>Neceffárias,</i>	The necessary-house.
<i>Casa onde se jánta,</i>	A dining-room.
<i>Câmara, or casa em que se dorme,</i>	Bed-chamber.
<i>Sála da vísitas nos baixos de húma casa,</i>	A parlour.
<i>Pórta,</i>	The door.
<i>Postigo,</i>	A wicket.
<i>Limínar, or lumiár,</i>	The threshold.
<i>Vidraças que se põem no tecto de húma casa pará a alumiár</i>	Sky-lights.
<i>Algeróz,</i>	The gutter.
<i>Beiras, or ábas do telhado,</i>	The caves.
<i>A couceira dá pórta,</i>	The hinges.
<i>Fechadura,</i>	A lock.
<i>Cadeado,</i>	A padlock.
<i>Ferrólho,</i>	The bolt.
<i>Tranca da pórta,</i>	The bar of a door.
<i>Cáno da chave,</i>	The pipe of a key.
<i>Chave méstra,</i>	A master-key.
<i>Guárdas da fechadura,</i>	The wards of a lock.

Palhetão da chave,
Vidrúça,
Escada feita a carracól,
Escada secreta,

Viga,
Parêde méstra,
Parêdes méyas,
Arca,
Câma,
Sobrecão da câma,
Cortinas da câma,
Lençoes,
Cabeceira da câma,
Pés da câma,
Cólcha,
Colcháô,
Cobertór,
Cobertór de felpa,
Cátte pés tabóas, &c. de que
se compõem o leito,
Travessêiro,
Tapête,
Tapeçaria,
Pedernêira,
Isca,
Mécha,
Enxergão,
Esteira,
Cáens da cheminé,
Fólles,
Tenâzes,
Férta,
Abâno or abanadór,
Panêlla,
Têsto,
Aza da panêlla,
Férro pará aticár o lume,
Escumadeira,
Colhér grânde,
Caldeira,
Sertáa, or frigideira,
Coadór,
Grêlhas,
Rálo,

Key bit.
 The glass of a window.
 A winding stair-case.
 Back-stairs, a private stair-case.
 A beam.
 The main wall.
 The party walls.
 Chest.
 Bed.
 The bed's tester.
 Bed curtains.
 Sheets.
 The bed's head.
 Bed's feet.
 Counterpane, a quilt.
 A matrafs.
 A blanket.
 A rug.
 Bedstead.

 A pillow.
 A carpet.
 Tapestry.
 A flint.
 Tinder.
 Match.
 A straw-bed.
 A mat.
 Hand-irons.
 Bellows.
 Tongs.
 A shovel.
 Fire-fan.
 A pipkin.
 The pot-lid.
 The ear of a pot, or pipkin.
 A poker.
 A skimmer.
 A ladle.
 A kettle.
 A frying pan.
 A cullender, or strainer.
 Gridiron.
 A grater.

<i>Espêto,</i>	A spit:
<i>Almofaríz,</i>	A mortar of metal wherein things are pounded.
<i>Mão do almofaríz,</i>	A pestle.
<i>Redôma,</i>	A vial.
<i>Bálde,</i>	A bucket, <i>or</i> pail.
<i>Sabão,</i>	Soap.
<i>Rodilha,</i>	A coarse cloth.
<i>Esfregão,</i>	A dish-clout.
<i>Fôrno,</i>	Oven.
<i>Pá do fôrno,</i>	The peel of the oven.
<i>Vascúlho pará alimpár o fôrno,</i>	A maukin, a coal-rake to make clean an oven.
<i>Farinha,</i>	Meal-flour.
<i>Trinchánte,</i>	A carver.
<i>Mordômo,</i>	A steward.
<i>Camareiro,</i>	A valet-de-chambre.
<i>Camareiro mór,</i>	A chamberlain.
<i>Escôva,</i>	A brush.
<i>Vassôura,</i>	A broom.
<i>Despenseiro,</i>	A butler, a yeoman of the larder, a steward.
<i>Págem,</i>	A page.
<i>Lacáyo,</i>	A footman.
<i>Cochêiro,</i>	A coachman.
<i>Cocheira,</i>	A coach-house.
<i>Môço dos cavállos, ou da estrebaria,</i>	A groom.
<i>Copéiro,</i>	A cup-bearer.
<i>Escudeiro de húma fidálga,</i>	A lady's gentleman usher.
<i>Amo, ou senhór da casa,</i>	Landlord.
<i>Ama, ou senhórá da casa,</i>	Landlady.
<i>Grímpa,</i>	Weather-cock.

Córes.

Colours.

<i>Bráncó,</i>	White.
<i>Azúl,</i>	Blue.
<i>Azúl celéste, or turquí,</i>	Sky-colour.
<i>Azúl ferrête,</i>	Dark blue.
<i>Azúl cláro,</i>	Light blue.
<i>Cór de camúrça,</i>	Light yellow.
<i>Amarélo,</i>	Yellow.
<i>Cor de rósa,</i>	Rosy colour.
<i>Cor de pálha,</i>	Straw colour.

Verde,

<i>Vérde,</i>	Green.
<i>Cor de vérde mar, or vérde cláro,</i>	Plunkét colour <i>or</i> sea-green.
<i>Cor vermélha,</i>	Red colour.
<i>Cor vermélha muito víva, or carmín,</i>	Carmine, a bright red colour.
<i>Cor incarnáda,</i>	Carnation colour.
<i>Cor de carne,</i>	Flesh colour.
<i>Cor carmesin,</i>	Crimson red.
<i>Cor négra, or préta,</i>	Black colour.
<i>Cor de mel,</i>	A dark yellow.
<i>Fúrta córes, or cambiántes,</i>	A deep changeable colour.
<i>Cor víva,</i>	A lively and gay colour.
<i>Cor trísle,</i>	A dull colour.
<i>Cor escúra,</i>	A dark colour.
<i>Cor carregáda,</i>	A deep colour.
<i>Cor de fogo,</i>	Fire colour.
<i>Pádo,</i>	Grey.
<i>Cor de cinza,</i>	Ash colour.
<i>Escarlata,</i>	Scarlet.
<i>Leonádo,</i>	Tawney.
<i>Cor de laránja,</i>	Orange colour.
<i>Cor de azeitóna,</i>	Olive colour.
<i>Róxo,</i>	Purple, violet.
<i>Róxo, or cor de auróra,</i>	Aurora colour.

Róxo sometimes signifies *red* or *rosy colour*; particularly in poetry, as in *Camóens*, Canto I. Stanza 82.

*Pará que áo Portuguêz se lhe tornásse,
Em róxo sângue a ágoa, que bebêsse,*

Béftas.	Beasts.
<i>Béfta doméstica,</i>	Tame beast.
<i>Béfta bráva,</i>	A wild beast.
<i>Béfta de cárga,</i>	A beast of burthen.
<i>Béfta de sélla,</i>	A beast for the saddle.
<i>Gádo,</i>	Cattle.
<i>Gádo gréffo,</i>	Great cattle.
<i>Gádo miúdo,</i>	Small cattle.
<i>Rebânho,</i>	A flock.
<i>Manáda de gádo gréffo,</i>	A herd of big cattle.
<i>Téuro,</i>	A bull.
<i>Bezérro,</i>	Heifer.

Bezérro,

<i>Bezérro,</i>	A calf, a steer, a young bullock.
<i>Bóy,</i>	An ox.
<i>Búrro,</i>	An ass.
<i>Búrra,</i>	A she-ass.
<i>Pérco,</i>	A hog.
<i>Pórca,</i>	A sow.
<i>Fáca,</i>	A young mare, also a nag.
<i>Egóa,</i>	A mare.
<i>Cria,</i>	A foal, a filly.
<i>Pótra,</i>	A colt, or young horse.
<i>Cavállo,</i>	A horse.
<i>Cavállo anão,</i>	A nag.
<i>Cavállo de pósta,</i>	A post horse.
<i>Garranhão, or cavállo de lançamento,</i>	A stallion.
<i>Cavállo de aluguel,</i>	A hackney-horse.
<i>Cavállo de coche,</i>	A coach-horse.
<i>Cavállo que anda de chauto,</i>	A jolting-horse.
<i>Cavállo pequeno que serve para senhores,</i>	A palfrey.
<i>Cavállo que toma o freio entre dentes,</i>	A horse that champs the bit.
<i>Cavállo rijo da boca,</i>	A hard-mouthed horse.
<i>Cavállo doce de freio,</i>	A tender mouthed horse, one that easily submits to the curb.
<i>Cavállo que tem boa boca,</i>	A horse that will eat any thing.
<i>Cavállo que tropessa,</i>	A stumbling horse.
<i>Cavállo espantadiço,</i>	A startling-horse.
<i>Cavállo ardente, or fogázo,</i>	A stately horse.
<i>Cavállo quemorde e dá couces,</i>	A biting and kicking horse.
<i>Cavállo rebellão,</i>	A untamed horse.
<i>Cavállo que não soffre áncas,</i>	A horse that will not carry double.
<i>Cavállo mal mandado,</i>	A restive horse.
<i>Cavállo de albárda,</i>	A pack-horse.
<i>Cavállo de carro,</i>	A cart-horse.
<i>Cavállo de sella,</i>	A saddle-horse.
<i>Cavállo de correr,</i>	A race-horse.
<i>Cavállo de guerra,</i>	A war-horse.
<i>Cavállo ajaezado,</i>	A horse with all his furniture.
<i>Cavállo de Barbaria,</i>	A Moorish horse, a barb.
<i>Cavállo capado,</i>	A gelding.
<i>Cavállo sem ser capado,</i>	A stone-horse.
<i>Cavállo que da aos fôlles,</i>	A broken winded horse.

Cavállo,

<i>Cavállo quadrálvo,</i>	A horse that has four white feet.
<i>Cavállo alazão,</i>	A sorrel horse.
<i>Cavállo báio,</i>	A bay horse.
<i>Cavállo castânho,</i>	A chesnut-coloured horse.
<i>Cavállo báio e castânho,</i>	A chesnut bay.
<i>Cavállo rocím,</i>	A worthless nag, a poor jade.
<i>Cavállo remendádo,</i>	A dapple horse.
<i>Cavállo ruão or rússô porcel-láno,</i>	A dapple-grey horse.
<i>Cavállo que seffre ancas,</i>	A double horse.
<i>Cavállo trotão,</i>	A trotting-horse.
<i>Cavállo que serve pará andar á caça,</i>	A stalking-horse.
<i>Cavállo que anda de furta pássô</i>	A pad, an easy-paced horse.
<i>Cão,</i>	A dog.
<i>Cão de quinta,</i>	A house dog.
<i>Cão de caça,</i>	A hound.
<i>Cão de água,</i>	A water spaniel.
<i>Cão de gádo,</i>	A shepherd's dog.
<i>Cão de móstra, podéngo, or perdigueiro,</i>	A setting dog.
<i>Cão de fila,</i>	A great cur, a mastiff dog.
<i>Cão sacadór,</i>	A dog tumbler.
<i>Cão de búfca,</i>	A finder.
<i>Alão,</i>	A bull-dog.
<i>Gálgo,</i>	A greyhound.
<i>Cão pará caçar rapózas e lén-tras,</i>	A terrier.
<i>Cachorrínho,</i>	A little puppy, a whelp.
<i>Cachorrínho de frálida,</i>	A lap-dog.
<i>Cachórro,</i>	A little dog.
<i>Mú mácho, or mulo,</i>	A he-mule.
<i>Múla,</i>	A she-mule.
<i>Córça,</i>	A she-deer, a doe.
<i>Cárça de tres ánnos,</i>	A spade.
<i>Córço de dous ánnos,</i>	A pricket.
<i>Córço,</i>	A wild buck.
<i>Córço ou cóna de hum énnos,</i>	A fawn.
<i>Gámo,</i>	A fallow deer.
<i>Veádo,</i>	A stag.
<i>Cábra montéz,</i>	A wild she-goat.
<i>Veádo gránde de cinco ánnos,</i>	A hart.
<i>Doninha,</i>	A weasel.
<i>Teixúgo, or texúgo,</i>	A badger.

<i>Gáto de algália,</i>	A civet cat.
<i>Doninha de rábo múi felpúdo,</i>	A squirrel.
<i>a módo de rapósa,</i>	
<i>Elephánte,</i>	An elephant.
<i>Foínha, fuínha, or mártá,</i>	A marten, <i>or</i> martern.
<i>Armínho,</i>	An ermin.
<i>Ouriço cacheíro,</i>	An hedge-hog.
<i>Arganáx,</i>	A dormouse.
<i>Ráto,</i>	A rat.
<i>Rapósa,</i>	A fox.
<i>Lóbo,</i>	A wolf.
<i>Ráta da Índia,</i>	A rat of India of the bigness of a cat.
<i>Forão,</i>	A ferret.
<i>Toupeíra,</i>	A mole.
<i>Leão,</i>	A lion.
<i>Leóa,</i>	A lioness.
<i>Ráto cheiróso,</i>	A musk cat.
<i>Leopádo,</i>	A leopard.
<i>Urso,</i>	A he-bear.
<i>Urfa,</i>	A she bear.
<i>Urso pequéno,</i>	A bear's cub.
<i>Tigre,</i>	A tiger.
<i>Póco montéz,</i>	A wild bear.

Das cousas do Cámpo.

Of country affairs.

<i>Cása do cámpo, or quinta,</i>	A country house.
<i>Cása de lavradór,</i>	A farm-house.
<i>Quinteira,</i>	A husbandman, a farmer.
<i>Boyéiro,</i>	A herdsman, he that ploughs with oxen, <i>or</i> tends them.
<i>Vaqueíro,</i>	A cow-keeper.
<i>Porqueíro,</i>	A swine-herd.
<i>Pastór,</i>	A shepherd.
<i>Surrão,</i>	A scrip, <i>or</i> small bag.
<i>Cajádo,</i>	A sheep-hook.
<i>Pastora,</i>	A shepherdess.
<i>Herdáde,</i>	A great <i>or</i> large field, a wide arable ground,
<i>Hertolão,</i>	A gardener.
<i>Hortalíça,</i>	All sorts of herbage.
<i>Cavadór,</i>	A ditcher.
<i>Vinhateíro,</i>	A vine dresser.

Lavrador,

A farmer, one who cultivates ground, whether his own or another's.

Pástos,

Feeding ground, pasture, sheep-walk.

Arádo,

A plough.

Férro do arrádo,

The plough-share.

Rábo do arrádo,

The plough-handle.

Abegaõ, or official que faz

A plough-wright.

arados,

Aguilháda,

A goad.

Enfínko,

A rake.

Gráde,

A harrow.

Semeador,

A sower.

Roçador,

A weeder.

Fouce roçadoura,

A weeding-hook.

Fouce,

A scythe, or sickle.

Podão,

A pruning-knife.

Segador,

A reaper, or mower, harvest man.

Mangoál,

A flail.

Forçádo,

A prong to cast up sheaves of corn with.

Caçador,

A huntsman.

Pescador,

A fisherman.

Rêgo,

A furrow.

Terra que fica levantáda entre dous rêgos,

A balk, or ridge of land between two furrows.

Outeiro,

A hill.

Mónte, or montanha,

A mountain.

Válle,

A valley.

Lagóa,

A moor, fen, or marsh, a standing water, but sometimes dry.

Lágo,

A lake or standing pool, but always full of water.

Ribeiro,

A brook, a stream of water, with a gentle or natural current.

Ribeirinho,

A rivulet, a streamlet.

Pláno, or planície,

A plain.

Pénha, or rocha,

A rock.

Penhásco,

A great rock.

Deserto,

A desert or wilderness.

<i>Despenhadeiro,</i>	A precipice.
<i>Bósque,</i>	A wood.
<i>Bósque pequeno,</i>	A grove, <i>or</i> thicket.
<i>Pedáço de chão sem árvores,</i>	A glade in a wood.
<i>dentro de hum bósque,</i>	
<i>Pomár, or vergél,</i>	An orchard.
<i>Prádo,</i>	A meadow.
<i>Ramada,</i>	A bower.
<i>Fonte,</i>	A fountain.
<i>Trigo,</i>	Wheat.
<i>Trigo candiál,</i>	The best wheat.
<i>Trigo bretanha,</i>	Red wheat.
<i>Centéo,</i>	Rye.
<i>Feráã,</i>	Meslin, mixed corn, as wheat and rye, &c.
<i>Treméz,</i>	The corn of three months growth.
<i>Espélta,</i>	Spelt.
<i>Espíga,</i>	Ear of corn.
<i>Cabeça da espíga,</i>	The grain at the top of the ear of corn.
<i>Báinha, donde sabe a espíga</i>	The cod, <i>or</i> husk in which <i>depois de formada,</i> the ear of corn is lodged.
<i>Legúmes,</i>	Pulse.
<i>Grãos,</i>	Spanish pease.
<i>Lentilha,</i>	A lentil.
<i>Tramêço, or tremôço,</i>	A lupine.
<i>Feijens,</i>	French-beans.
<i>Feijão sapáta, or bájes,</i>	Kidney-beans.
<i>Feijão fradinho,</i>	A sort of small French beans with a black spot.
<i>Chicháro,</i>	Chichlings.
<i>Carréta,</i>	A waggon.
<i>Cárrro,</i>	A cart.
<i>Róda,</i>	A wheel.
<i>Caímbas,</i>	The felloes of the wheel.
<i>Eixo,</i>	The axle-tree.
<i>Ráyo da róda,</i>	The spoke of a wheel.
<i>Currál de bóys,</i>	An ox-stall.
<i>Currál de ovelhas,</i>	A sheep-fold.
<i>Currál de cábras,</i>	A house for goats.
<i>Chiqueiro de porcos,</i>	A hog's-sty.
<i>Erva,</i>	Grass.
<i>Trigo em érva,</i>	Green corn.

Seára,
Tárro,
Cíncho,

Enxada,
Enxadao, or alvião,
Cánga,
Cangalhos,

Sébe,
O que faz sébes,
Fouce roçadoura de que uzão
pará fazer sébes,
Tempo de lósquia e a festa que
nélle fazem os rústicos,
Cantiga dos segadores despois,
de acabado o tempo da sega,
çarça,
Máta,
Máto,

Leíra, or taboleiro,
Chórro de ágoa,
Verêda,
Rásto,
Cêsta,
Cabáz,
Cabána, or choupána,
Cabaço,

Standing corn.
A milk-pail.
A cheese-vat, to make cheese
in.

A mattock, a hoe.
A two pronged fork.
A yoke for oxen.
The arms of the yoke used
for oxen.

A hedge or fence.
Hedger.
Hedging bill.

The sheep-shearing, the time
of shearing sheep.
Harvest home.

A bramble.
A thicket, a forest.
A place where many shrubs
grow.

A bed in a garden.
A water-spout.
A path.

The track.

A basket.
A frail, a pannier.
A cottage, a hut.

A dry hollow ground used to
keep seeds in.

Cóufas pertencêntes à
Guérra.

Things relating to War.

Serviço, ou vida militar,
Militár, ou servir na guérra,
Artilharía, artelharía, ou ar-
tilhería,

Canhão, ou peça de artilharía,
Canhão de ferro,
Canhão de brônze,
Alma do canhão,
Fogão do canhão,
Culátra do canhão,

Warfare.
To go a warfaring.
Artillery.

A cannon.
Iron cannon.
Brass cannon.
The mouth of a cannon.
The touch-hole of a cannon.
The breech of a cannon.

Botao,

<i>Botão, ou extremidade da</i>	The pummel.
<i>culátra,</i>	
<i>Bálas encadeadas,</i>	Chain-shots.
<i>Bála de canhão,</i>	A cannon bullet, cannon-ball, <i>or</i> cannon-shot.
<i>Carréta do canhão,</i>	The carriage of a cannon.
<i>Pólvora,</i>	Gun-powder.
<i>Méyho canhão,</i>	A demi-cannon.
<i>Canhão dobrado,</i>	A double cannon.
<i>Canhão para bater húma</i>	A cannon for battery.
<i>praça,</i>	
<i>Canhão de vinte e quatro,</i>	A twenty-four pounder.
<i>Calibre,</i>	Caliber.
<i>Carregár,</i>	To load.
<i>Escórvar,</i>	To prime.
<i>Fazér pontaria,</i>	To level.
<i>Petréchos, or munições de</i>	Military stores.
<i>guerra,</i>	
<i>Encravár húma peça,</i>	To nail up a gun.
<i>Descavalgár húma peça,</i>	To dismount a gun.
<i>Desparár,</i>	To fire.
<i>Tiro de peça,</i>	A cannon shot.
<i>Trem de artilharia,</i>	The train of artillery.
<i>Colubrina,</i>	A culverin.
<i>Falconete,</i>	A falconet.
<i>Petárdo,</i>	A petard.
<i>Pedreiro,</i>	A swivel gun, pederero, <i>or</i> paterero.
<i>Bómba,</i>	A bomb.
<i>Bombárda,</i>	A great gun, a bombard.
<i>Morteíro,</i>	A mortar-piece.
<i>Granáda,</i>	A grenade.
<i>Espingárda,</i>	A firelock.
<i>Pistóla,</i>	A pistol.
<i>Carabina,</i>	A carabine.
<i>Mosquète,</i>	A musket.
<i>Machadínha,</i>	A battle-ax.
<i>Lança,</i>	A lance.
<i>Alabárda,</i>	An halbert.
<i>Partasána,</i>	A partizan.
<i>Pique,</i>	A pike.
<i>Calár os piquês para resistir</i>	To present the pikes against
<i>a cavalaria,</i>	the cavalry.
<i>Alfange,</i>	Scymeter.
<i>Espáda,</i>	A sword.

<i>Desembainhár a espáda,</i>	To unsheath the sword.
<i>Púnho da espáda,</i>	The handle of a sword.
<i>Maçãa da espáda,</i>	The pommel of a sword.
<i>Guarnição da espáda,</i>	The hilt of a sword.
<i>Fólha da espáda,</i>	The blade of a sword.
<i>Metér mão a espáda,</i>	To clap one's hand on one's sword.
<i>Matár,</i>	To kill.
<i>Ferír,</i>	To wound.
<i>Desbaratár,</i>	To rout.
<i>Saqueár,</i>	To sack.
<i>Punhál,</i>	A poniard.
<i>Bayonéta,</i>	A bayonet.
<i>Calár a bayonéta,</i>	To fix the bayonet in the musket.
<i>Capacéte,</i>	A head-piece, <i>or</i> helmet.
<i>Morrião,</i>	A morrion.
<i>Viséira,</i>	The vizor of an helmet.
<i>Gorjál, or góla,</i>	The gorget.
<i>Peito de armas,</i>	A breast-plate.
<i>Couráça,</i>	A cuirass.
<i>Espaldár,</i>	The back-plate.
<i>Cossoléte,</i>	A corslet.
<i>Broqué,</i>	A buckler.
<i>Escúdo,</i>	A shield.
<i>Adága,</i>	Dagger, a short sword.
<i>Sáya de málha,</i>	A coat of mail.
<i>Réy de armas,</i>	The king at arms, <i>or</i> king of heralds.
<i>Aráuto,</i>	A herald.
<i>Generál,</i>	A general.
<i>Tenénte generál,</i>	A lieutenant general.
<i>Sargéto mor de batálha,</i>	A major general.
<i>Sargéto,</i>	A serjeant.
<i>Sargéto mor,</i>	Major.
<i>Mariscál, or marichál,</i>	Marshall.
<i>Méstre de câmpo generál,</i>	Master de camp general.
<i>Coronél,</i>	Colonel.
<i>Méstro de câmpo,</i>	Master de camp.
<i>Coronél de infantaria,</i>	Colonel of foot.
<i>Officiál de guérre,</i>	An officer.
<i>Brigadeiro,</i>	Brigadier.
<i>Tenénte coronél,</i>	Lieutenant-colonel.
<i>Ajudánte de sargéto mor,</i>	Adjutant.
<i>Ajudánte de tenénte de méstre de câmpo,</i>	Aid de camp.

<i>Capitão,</i>	Captain.
<i>Pósto de capitão,</i>	Captaincy or captainship.
<i>Tenente,</i>	Lieutenant.
<i>Cornêta,</i>	Cornet.
<i>Alféres,</i>	Ensign.
<i>Bandeiras,</i>	Colours.
<i>Estandárte,</i>	Standard.
<i>Alféres de cavalaria que tráz o estandárte,</i>	Standard-bearer.
<i>Pagadór,</i>	Agent.
<i>Provedór, dos mantimentos de húma armáda,</i>	Purveyor.
<i>Commissário,</i>	Commissary.
<i>Commissário gerál,</i>	Muster-master.
<i>Engenheiro,</i>	Engineer.
<i>Aposentadór do exército,</i>	Quarter-master.
<i>Cábo de esquádra,</i>	Corporal.
<i>Tambor, ou caixa,</i>	Drum.
<i>Tambór ou o que toca tambór,</i>	A drummer.
<i>Baguêtas,</i>	Drum-sticks.
<i>Cordéis de tambór,</i>	Drum-strings.
<i>Tóques do tambór,</i>	The beats of a drum.
<i>Tocár o tambór,</i>	To beat a drum.
<i>Alvoráda, ou general,</i>	The general, one of the beats of the drum.
<i>Móstra,</i>	Muster.
<i>Passar móstra,</i>	To muster, to review forces.
<i>Trombêta,</i>	A trumpet.
<i>Trombeteíro, ou trombêta,</i>	A trumpeter.
<i>Pifão,</i>	A fife or fife.
<i>Sódo,</i>	Wages, or pay for soldiers.
<i>Soldádo,</i>	A soldier.
<i>Soldádo que está de sentinella,</i>	Soldier on duty.
<i>Entrár de guárda,</i>	To mount, or go upon the guard.
<i>Sentinella,</i>	Duty, sentinel.
<i>Rendér a guárda, sentinellas, &c.</i>	To relieve the guard, &c.
<i>Blocár, or bloqueár,</i>	To block up.
<i>Infánte, or soldádo de pé,</i>	A foot soldier.
<i>Granadeíro,</i>	Grenadier.
<i>Bigodes,</i>	Whiskers.
<i>Drágão,</i>	Dragoon.
<i>Soldádo de cavállo,</i>	Trooper, or cavalier.
<i>Montár a cavállo,</i>	To get on horseback.

<i>Apeár se,</i>	To alight.
<i>Guárda da pessoa real, or</i>	Life-guard-man.
<i>archeiro,</i>	
<i>Cavalleiro armado de couraça,</i>	Cuirassier.
<i>Mosqueteiro,</i>	Musketeer.
<i>Soldado com espingarda,</i>	Fusilier.
<i>Alabardeiro,</i>	Halberdier.
<i>Geniséro,</i>	Janissary.
<i>Soldado armado com lança,</i>	A spearman.
<i>Soldado que leva pique, or</i>	A pikeman.
<i>piqueiro,</i>	
<i>Besteiro, ou soldado que pelé-</i>	Cross-bow-man.
<i>ja com besta,</i>	
<i>Gastador,</i>	A pioneer.
<i>Mineiro, ou minador,</i>	Miner.
<i>Bombardeiro,</i>	A bombardier.
<i>O tiro da artilharia, ou o</i>	Gunshot, or the space to
<i>espaço que a bala despa-</i>	which a shot can be thrown.
<i>rada corre,</i>	
<i>Artilheiro,</i>	Matros, also a gunner, or
	cannoneer.
<i>A arte da artilharia,</i>	Gunnery.
<i>General da artilharia,</i>	General of the artillery.
<i>Aventureiro,</i>	A volunteer.
<i>Recrutas,</i>	Recruits.
<i>Explorador, ou corredor de</i>	Scout.
<i>exercito,</i>	
<i>Espia,</i>	Spy.
<i>O que leve vivêres ao exercito,</i>	Sutler.
<i>ou vivandeiro,</i>	
<i>Soldado que faz correrias,</i>	A marauder, a soldier that
	goes a marauding.
<i>Atabale,</i>	Kettle-drum.
<i>Infanteria,</i>	The infantry.
<i>Cavalaria,</i>	Cavalry.
<i>Cavalaria ligeira,</i>	Light-horse.
<i>Vanguarda,</i>	The vanguard.
<i>Corpo de batalha,</i>	The main body of an army.
<i>Retaguarda,</i>	The rear.
<i>Corpo de reserva,</i>	The corps de reserve.
<i>Corpo de guarda,</i>	The corps de guard.
<i>Piquete,</i>	The piquets of an army, or
	piquet guard.
<i>Ala,</i>	The wing of an army.
<i>Batalhão,</i>	Battalion.

Destacamento,

<i>Destacamento,</i>	Detachment
<i>Regimento,</i>	Regiment.
<i>Companhia,</i>	A company.
<i>Esquadrão,</i>	A squadron.
<i>Mochila,</i>	Knapfack.
<i>Bagagem, ou bagage,</i>	Baggage.
<i>Batedôres do campo,</i>	Discoverers.
<i>Almázem, ou armázem,</i>	Armory.
<i>Murálias,</i>	Walls.
<i>Améa, ou améya,</i>	A battlement.
<i>Parapeito,</i>	The parapet.
<i>Castello,</i>	A castle.
<i>Forte,</i>	A fort.
<i>Fortaléza,</i>	A fortress.
<i>Fortificação,</i>	Fortification.
<i>Torre,</i>	A tower.
<i>Citadella,</i>	A citadel.
<i>Baluarte,</i>	Bulwark.
<i>Filéira,</i>	A file.
<i>Cortina,</i>	A curtain.
<i>Méya lua,</i>	Half moon.
<i>Troneira,</i>	A loop-hole;
<i>Terra-pléna,</i>	A rampart.
<i>Rebelim, ou Revelim,</i>	A ravelin.
<i>Contrascarpa,</i>	Counterescarp.
<i>Barreira,</i>	A barrier.
<i>Falsabraga,</i>	A faulsbraye.
<i>Fosso,</i>	A ditch.
<i>Guarita,</i>	A centry-box.
<i>Casamata,</i>	A casemate.
<i>Corredor, ou estrada encoberta</i>	The covert way.
<i>Cestoens,</i>	Gabions.
<i>Estacada, ou palissada,</i>	A palisade.
<i>Reduto,</i>	A redoubt.
<i>Atalaya,</i>	A watch tower.
<i>Manta, ou Mantelête,</i>	A mantelet, or cover for men from the shot.
<i>Faxina,</i>	Fascines.
<i>Mina,</i>	A mine.
<i>Contramina,</i>	A countermine.
<i>Fazer voár a mina,</i>	To spring a mine.
<i>Trincheira,</i>	A trench.
<i>Abrir as trincheiras,</i>	To open the trenches.
<i>Real,</i>	Camp.
<i>Vivêres, ou munições de boca,</i>	Provisions.

<i>Bisénho,</i>	A new soldier.
<i>Batálha,</i>	A battle.
<i>Dar batálha,</i>	To give battle.
<i>Escaramuça,</i>	A skirmish.
<i>Sítio,</i>	A siege.
<i>Quartél,</i>	A quarter.
<i>Encamisada,</i>	A camifado.
<i>Sortida,</i>	A sally.
<i>Batér,</i>	To batter.
<i>Brécha,</i>	A breach.
<i>Pontão,</i>	A pontoon.
<i>Escalada,</i>	An escalade.
<i>Affálto,</i>	An assault.
<i>Dar affálto,</i>	To storm.
<i>Tomar por affálto,</i>	To take by storm.
<i>Chamada,</i>	The chamade.
<i>Capitulár,</i>	To capitulate.
<i>Capitulação,</i>	Capitulation.
<i>Tregóas,</i>	Truce.
<i>Guarnição,</i>	Garrison.
<i>Preboste,</i>	A provost.
<i>Preboste-general,</i>	A provost-marshal.
<i>Léva,</i>	Levy.
<i>Levantár soldádos, ou fazer</i> <i>léva de gente,</i>	To raise men, to levy, or raise soldiers.
<i>Levantár o fúio,</i>	To raise the siege.
<i>Levantár o campo,</i>	To decamp.
<i>Affentár o campo,</i>	To pitch one's camp.
<i>Campo volante,</i>	A flying camp.
<i>Campánha,</i>	A campaign.
<i>Metér-se em campánha,</i>	To begin the campaign, to open the field.
<i>Guerrecár,</i>	To war.
<i>Péça de campánha,</i>	A field-piece.
<i>Forragem,</i>	A forage.
<i>Quartéis de invérno,</i>	Winter quarters.
<i>Dar quartél,</i>	To give quarters.
<i>Aquartelár-se,</i>	To take quarters.
<i>Marchár,</i>	To march.
<i>Marchár com bandeiras des-</i> <i>pregadas,</i>	To march with flying colours
<i>Tocár a recolhér,</i>	To sound a retreat.
<i>Entregár húma práça,</i>	To surrender a place.

Navegação.

Navigation.

<i>Návio,</i>	A ship.
<i>Náo,</i>	A large ship.
<i>Náo de guerra,</i>	A man of war.
<i>Náo de carga, ou mercantil,</i>	A merchant-ship, a merchantman.
<i>Návio veleiro,</i>	A very good sailer, or a ship that sails well.
<i>Návio ronçeiro,</i>	A bad sailer.
<i>Galé,</i>	A galley.
<i>Galeáça,</i>	A galleass.
<i>Galeão,</i>	A galleon.
<i>Galeôta, ou galeóto,</i>	A galliot, a small galley.
<i>Comître,</i>	The boatswain of a galley.
<i>Fragata,</i>	A frigate.
<i>Carraca,</i>	A carrack.
<i>Fústa,</i>	A foist.
<i>Pináça,</i>	A pinnace.
<i>Bárca de passagem,</i>	A ferry-boat.
<i>Bárco,</i>	A boat.
<i>Bárca,</i>	A bark, a great boat.
<i>Canóa,</i>	A canoe.
<i>Góndola,</i>	Gondola, a small boat, much used in Venice.
<i>Esquífe,</i>	A skiff.
<i>Chalúpa, ou balándra,</i>	A sloop.
<i>Chalúpa pequéna,</i>	A shallop.
<i>Bergantim,</i>	A brigantine, or brig.
<i>Bálsa,</i>	A float.
<i>Capitána,</i>	The admiral's ship.
<i>Almiránte,</i>	The vice-admiral's ship.
<i>Armáda,</i>	A fleet, a navy.
<i>Fróta,</i>	A fleet of merchant ships.
<i>Esquádra,</i>	A squadron, part of a fleet.
<i>A bórdo,</i>	A-board.
<i>Pópa,</i>	The poop, stern, or steerage.
<i>Próa,</i>	The prow, or head.
<i>Péças de próa pará dar caça ao inimigo,</i>	Chase guns.
<i>Tartána,</i>	A tartan.
<i>Brulóte,</i>	A fire-ship.
<i>Patáxo,</i>	A patache.
<i>Falúa,</i>	A felucca.
<i>Batél, or bateira,</i>	A small bark, a wherry.
	<i>Caravéla,</i>

<i>Caravêla,</i>	A caravel.
<i>Sorte de patáxo para serviço de huma não de guerra que he mayór d'elle,</i>	A tender.
<i>Não de linha,</i>	A line of battle-ship.
<i>Guárda-côsta,</i>	A guard-ship.
<i>Galeôta da qual se lançam as bômbas,</i>	Bomb-ketch.
<i>Návio que serve para andar a côrso,</i>	A cruiser.
<i>Corsário,</i>	A privateer.
<i>Hyácte,</i>	Yacht.
<i>Návio de transporte,</i>	A transport.
<i>Não da Índia Oriental,</i>	East-India-man.
<i>Não da Índia Occidental,</i>	West-India-ship.
<i>Sorte de embarcação pequena Hollandêza de hum só másto,</i>	A Dutch dogger.
<i>Návio para levar carvão,</i>	A collier.
<i>Embarcações pequenas,</i>	Small craft.
<i>Embarcação, ou bárcogrãde que serve para levar fa- zendas a bordo,</i>	A barge.
<i>Embarcação grãde, ou ca- ravêla, que serve para commercear pélla côsta,</i>	A fly-boat, a large vessel used in the coasting trade.
<i>Embarcação de avízo,</i>	Advice-boat.
<i>Paquète,</i>	Packet-boat.
<i>Bárcos de pescar,</i>	A fishing-boat, or busf.
<i>Láncha,</i>	Cock-boat, a scull.
<i>Rémos,</i>	Oars.
<i>Pá do rémo,</i>	The blade of the oar.
<i>Sentina,</i>	The well.
<i>Lástro, ou lástro,</i>	Ballast.
<i>Lastár, ou lançár lástro ao návio,</i>	To ballast a ship.
<i>Másto, or árvore,</i>	A mast.
<i>Másto grãde,</i>	The main-mast.
<i>Másto de mezêna,</i>	The mizen-mast.
<i>Másto da traquète,</i>	The fore-mast.
<i>Másto do guarapês,</i>	The bowsprit, or bolt-sprit.
<i>Gávea,</i>	The round-top, main-top, or scuttle of a mast.
<i>Quilha,</i>	The keel.
<i>Vérge, ou entêna,</i>	A yard.

<i>Laiz, ou extremidades das vérgas,</i>	The yard-arms.
<i>Pranchas, que cobrémos cos- tódos do návio da parte de fóra,</i>	Side-planks, or side of a ship.
<i>Véla,*</i>	A sail.
<i>Véla méstra, or a véla do másto gránde,</i>	The main sheet.
<i>Véla da Gavéa,</i>	The main-top-sail.
<i>Véla do joanête do másto gránde,</i>	Main-top-gallant-sail.
<i>Papafigos,</i>	The mizen and fore-sail.
<i>Mezéna,</i>	Mizen sail.
<i>Gáta, ou véla de cima da me- zéna,</i>	Mizen-top-sail.
<i>Traquéte,</i>	The fore-sail.
<i>Velácho,</i>	The fore-top-sail.
<i>Joanête do traquéte,</i>	The fore-top gallant-sail.
<i>Cevadeira,</i>	The sprit-sail.
<i>Véla latina,</i>	A shoulder of mutton sail.
<i>Fazér fôrça de véla,</i>	To crowd the sail.
<i>Maftaréos,</i>	The topmasts, or top-gallant- masts.
<i>Maftaréo da mezéna, ou ma- staréo da gáta,</i>	Mizen-top-mast.
<i>Portinhóla,</i>	A port-hole.
<i>Bandeiras,</i>	The colours.
<i>Flámmulas ou galhardêtes,</i>	Streamers, pendants.
<i>Agúlha de mareár,</i>	The mariner's compass.
<i>Bitácola,</i>	Bittacle.
<i>Costúras do návio,</i>	The seams of a ship.
<i>Léme,</i>	Helm, or rudder.
<i>Cána do léme,</i>	The whip, or whip-staff.
<i>Cubérta,</i>	Deck.
<i>Cubérta corrída,</i>	Flush fore and aft.
<i>Escotilhas,</i>	The hatches; scuttles.
<i>Escotilhão,</i>	A room by the hatches, to keep the provisions.
<i>Castéllo de pépa,</i>	The hind castle.
<i>Castéllo de próa,</i>	The fore castle.
<i>Garrár a âncora,</i>	To drive; or when a ship drags on her anchor.
<i>Âncora,</i>	The anchor.

* By *vela* is oftentimes meant the ship itself.

<i>Metêr a âncora na láncha,</i>	To boat the anchor.
<i>ou bóte depóis de levantála,</i>	
<i>Âncora de rebóque,</i>	A kedger.
<i>Âncora de esperança,</i>	Sheet anchor.
<i>Unhas da âncora,</i>	Flookes.
<i>Argola da âncora,</i>	The ring of an anchor.
<i>Estár a âncora a-pique,</i>	Is for the anchor to be a-peak.
<i>Amárra,</i>	A cable.
<i>Picár, ou cortár as amárrias,</i>	To cut the cables.
<i>Sônda, ou prúmo,</i>	Sounding lead.
<i>Cutêlos,</i>	Studding sails.
<i>Maré,</i>	The tide.
<i>Bosina,</i>	A speaking trumpet.
<i>Preparár hum návio, de vé-</i>	To rig a ship.
<i>los, córdas, &c.</i>	
<i>Piloto,</i>	Pilot, <i>or</i> steersman.
<i>Escrivão,</i>	A purser.
<i>Pilotagem,</i>	Pilotage.
<i>Cárta de mareár,</i>	Sea-chart.
<i>Capitão,</i>	A captain.
<i>Capitão tenênte,</i>	First lieutenant.
<i>Contramestre,</i>	A boatswain.
<i>Marinheiro,</i>	A sailor.
<i>Camaróte,</i>	A cabin.
<i>Marinheiro que he camaráda</i>	A messmate.
<i>ou pertence ao mesmo rancho</i>	
<i>Tormênta,</i>	A tempest.
<i>Borrásca,</i>	A storm.
<i>Bonança,</i>	Fair weather.
<i>Calmaria,</i>	Calm.
<i>Vênto em pópa,</i>	The wind full a-stern, a fore-
	wind.
<i>Návio arrasádo em pópa,</i>	A ship that sails before the
	wind.
<i>Derróta,</i>	The course, <i>or</i> way of a ship.
<i>Alár a bolina,</i>	To sharp the main bowling,
	to haul up the bowling.
<i>Ir pela bolina,</i>	To tack upon a wind, sail
	upon a bowline.
<i>Nó da bolina,</i>	The bowling knot.
<i>Barlavênto,</i>	Windward.
<i>Ganhár o barlavênto,</i>	To get the wind.
<i>Barlaventiár, ou deitár a</i>	To ply to windward.
<i>barlavênto,</i>	
<i>Sotavênto,</i>	Leeward.

<i>Escovéns,</i>	Hawfers.
<i>Escótas,</i>	Tacks.
<i>Velame, córdas, e o mais que he necessário pará preparar hum návio,</i>	Tackle, or tackling, the rig- ging of a ship.
<i>Corda,</i>	A rope.
<i>Enxárcias,</i>	Shrouds.
<i>Arribár,</i>	To put into a harbour.
<i>Bombórdo,</i>	Larboard.
<i>Estibórdo,</i>	Starboard.
<i>Ló,</i>	Loof.
<i>Metér de ló,</i>	To loof, or keep the ship nearer the wind.
<i>Bómba,</i>	A pump.
<i>Dár a bómba,</i>	To pump.
<i>Bálde pará deitár ágoa na bómba,</i>	Pump-can.
<i>Escúma que sáhe da bómba de- póis de tér tirádo a ágoa,</i>	Pump-suck.
<i>Návio, cuja ágoa se não póde tirár com a bómba,</i>	A ship that is floaked.
<i>Mánga de couro por ónde sáhe a ágoa da bómba,</i>	Pump-dale.
<i>Bráço da bómba,</i>	The pump-handle.
<i>Faról,</i>	Light, or lantern.
<i>Vénto,</i>	Wind.

Rósa da Agúlha, ou dos
Véntos.

*The Fly of the Mariner's
Compass.*

<i>Nórte,</i>	North.
<i>Nórte 4^a a nordéste,</i>	N. by E.
<i>Nor nordéste,</i>	N. N. E.
<i>Nordéste 4^a a nórté,</i>	N. E. by N.
<i>Nordéste,</i>	N. E.
<i>Nordéste 4^a a léste,</i>	N. E. by E.
<i>Les nordéste,</i>	E. N. E.
<i>Léste 4^a a nordéste,</i>	E. by N.
<i>Léste,</i>	East.
<i>Léste 4^a a suéste,</i>	E. by S.
<i>Les suéste,</i>	E. S. E.
<i>Suéste 4^a a léste,</i>	S. E. by E.
<i>Suéste,</i>	S. E.
<i>Suéste 4^a a sul,</i>	S. E. by S.

Susuéste,

<i>Susuêste,</i>	S. S. E.
<i>Sul 4^a a suêste,</i>	S. by E.
<i>Sul,</i>	South.
<i>Sul 4^a a sudoêste,</i>	S. by W.
<i>Susudoêste,</i>	S. S. W.
<i>Sudoêste 4^a sul,</i>	S. W. by S.
<i>Sudoêste,</i>	S. W.
<i>Sudoêste 4^a a oêste,</i>	S. W. by W.
<i>Oês sudoêste,</i>	W. S. W.
<i>Oêste 4^a a sudoêste,</i>	W. by S.
<i>Oêste,</i>	West.
<i>Oêste 4^a a noroêste,</i>	W. by N.
<i>Oês noroêste,</i>	W. N. W.
<i>Noroêste 4^a a oêste,</i>	N. W. by W.
<i>Noroêste,</i>	N. W.
<i>Noroêste 4^a a nôrte,</i>	N. W. by N.
<i>Nor noroêste,</i>	N. N. W.
<i>Nôrte 4^a a noroêste,</i>	N. by W.
<i>Vênto travessão, ou travessia,</i>	Contrary wind.
<i>Dar a embarcação a travéz,</i>	To hull.
<i>Pairár,</i>	To ply to and again in one's station.
<i>Esporão,</i>	Beak.
<i>Colhér hum cábo,</i>	To coil a cable.
<i>Largár mais cábo,</i>	To pay more cable.
<i>Abrir ágoa,</i>	To leak, or spring a leak.
<i>Fazér agoáda,</i>	To take in fresh water.
<i>Arpão,</i>	A grapple.
<i>Arpár hum návio,</i>	To grapple a ship.
<i>Fatêxa,</i>	Grapple.
<i>Pedáço de lóna breáda que se põem ao redor do másto e das bômbas pará que a ágoa não penêtre,</i>	Tarpaulin.
<i>Passadór,</i>	A fidd, or pin of iron to open the strands of ropes.
<i>Córda com que se prênde obóte, ou láncha á pópa do návio,</i>	Boat-rope, or girt-rope.
<i>Apito,</i>	A boatswain's call.
<i>Abadérnas,</i>	Nippers.
<i>Abíta,</i>	Bits.
<i>Emproár,</i>	To steer right forward, to turn the prow straight forward.

<i>Guinár o návio,</i>	To yaw or make yaws:
<i>Parte superior, ou máis álta</i>	The tafferel.
<i>da pópa de hum návio,</i>	
<i>Apagafanões,</i>	Leech-lines.
<i>Arreigadas,</i>	Puttocks.
<i>Briões,</i>	Bunt lines.
<i>Barredouras,</i>	Bow-studding-sails:
<i>Bartidouro,</i>	Boat's skit.
<i>Bastárdos,</i>	Parrels.
<i>Bigóta,</i>	A dead-eye.
<i>Botálos,</i>	Studding-sail-booms:
<i>Braceár,</i>	To brace.
<i>Bráços,</i>	Braces.
<i>Bragueiro, or vergueiro,</i>	The rudder's rope.
<i>Brandães,</i>	Back-stays.
<i>Buçardas,</i>	Breast-hooks.
<i>Cachólas,</i>	Cheeks.
<i>Cadáste,</i>	Stand-post.
<i>Cadernál,</i>	A large block with more than one shive:
<i>Cavernas,</i>	The floor-timbers.
<i>Colhedóres,</i>	Lines of the shrouds:
<i>Compassár hum návio,</i>	To trim a ship.
<i>Cossouros,</i>	Trucks.
<i>Craca,</i>	The foulness of the ship's bottom.
<i>Estár hum návio lançado á</i>	Is for a ship to heel:
<i>bánda,</i>	
<i>Cabrestante,</i>	The capstan.
<i>Dar cága,</i>	To chase.
<i>Cúrvas,</i>	The knees.
<i>Méfas da guarnição,</i>	Chain-wales.
<i>Desástre,</i>	Boat's skit.
<i>Enbornâes,</i>	Scupper-holes.
<i>Porão,</i>	The hold of a ship.
<i>Máca,</i>	Hammock.
<i>Convéz,</i>	Deck or quarter-deck.
<i>Camaróte do cirurgião,</i>	Cockpit.
<i>Fréte,</i>	Freight.
<i>Cárga,</i>	Cargo.
<i>O'rdem que o capitão recebe</i>	Sailing orders.
<i>para dar a véla,</i>	
<i>A acção de imbarcár se,</i>	Embarkation.
<i>Desembárque,</i>	Disembarking.
<i>Embargo,</i>	Embargo.

<i>Ancoragem,</i>	Anchorage.
<i>Batálha naval,</i>	Sea-fight.
<i>Caravéla mexeriqueira, ou de espia,</i>	A ship for espial.
<i>Arriár, ou arreár,</i>	To veer.
<i>Arreár as vélas,</i>	To strike sail.
<i>Arreár bandeira,</i>	To strike the flag.
<i>Levantár ferro, levár âncoras</i>	To weigh anchor.
<i>levar ferro, levar-se, ou levar,</i>	
<i>Léva,</i>	The action of weighing or taking up the anchor.
<i>Boleár a peça,</i>	To move a gun towards star-board or larboard.
<i>Pêça de léva,</i>	The signal gun.
<i>Rebocár, ou levár de rebóque,</i>	To tow.
<i>Fazér costúras,</i>	To splice.
<i>Passagem,</i>	Passage.
<i>Passageiro,</i>	Passenger.
<i>Viagem,</i>	Voyage.
<i>Návio cujo capitão tem cartas de représ álias,</i>	Letters of marque.
<i>Querenár hum návio,</i>	To careen a ship.
<i>Breár as costúras do návio,</i>	To pay the seams of a ship.
<i>Dar á côsta,</i>	To run a-ground or on shore.
<i>Soluçar a não,</i>	Is for a ship to roll, or to float in rough water.
<i>Naufragár,</i>	To suffer a wreck, to be wrecked.
<i>Naufrágio,</i>	Shipwreck.
<i>Patrão, ou méstre de não,</i>	Shipmaster.
<i>Carpenteiro de návios,</i>	Shipwright.
<i>Estaleiro,</i>	Stock.
<i>Embarcár,</i>	To ship.
<i>Embarcár,</i>	To go aboard, to take shipping.
<i>Grumete,</i>	The meanest sort of sailor, or servant to the sailors.
<i>Rapáz que serve como móço do návio,</i>	Ship-boy.
<i>Rapáz que serve ao capitão,</i>	A cabin-boy.
<i>Calafate,</i>	A calker.
<i>Calafetár hum návio,</i>	To calk a ship.
<i>Calafêto,</i>	Oakham.

Arsenal,

<i>Arсенál, ou ribeíra das náos,</i>	An arsenal, a store-house, or magazine.
<i>Emmaſteár hum návio,</i>	To fit a ship, or vessel, with masts.
<i>Remár,</i>	To row.
<i>Remadór,</i>	Rower.
<i>Forçádo,</i>	Galley-slave.
<i>Despenſeíro,</i>	Steward.
<i>Marinheiros, e tóda a óutra gente que perténce áo návio,</i>	The crew of a ship.
<i>Chúſma,</i>	Crew of galley slaves.
<i>Guarnição da náó,</i>	Marines, foldiers who serve on board of ships.
<i>O ſobrecárga do návio,</i>	Supercargo.
<i>Baleſtílla,</i>	Cross-staff.
<i>Quadránte,</i>	Quadrant.
<i>Outánte,</i>	Hadley's quadrant.
<i>De ré,</i>	Aft.
<i>Paravánte,</i>	Fore.
<i>Situação de húma cóſta, ilha, &c. a reſpeíto de qualquer óutro lugár,</i>	The bearing.
<i>Quarenténa,</i>	Quarantine.
<i>Balíza,</i>	Sea-mark.
<i>Lárga,</i>	Large.
<i>Amarár,</i>	To bear off.
<i>Caçár a véla,</i>	To turn the ſail to the wind ſide.
<i>Caceár hum návio,</i>	It is ſaid of a ſhip that is hurried away from her courſe by ſtrong winds, tides, &c.
<i>Lançár hum návio áo mar,</i>	To launch a ſhip.
<i>Fugír,</i>	To bear away.
<i>Entrár com vénto fréſco e bom no pórtó,</i>	To bear in the harbour.
<i>Bórdo,</i>	Tack.
<i>Bórdo, ou bándá,</i>	Broadſide.
<i>Návio de álto bórdo,</i>	First rate man of war.
<i>Cáça,</i>	Chace.
<i>Préſa, ou tomádia,</i>	Prize, or capture.
<i>Eſtár de vergadálto,</i>	To ſtand for the offing.
<i>Véntos demonçáo, ou geróes,</i>	Trade winds.
<i>Andár de conſérva,</i>	To keep company together, to ſail under a convoy.

Dar,

Dar, ou fazer hum bérdo,

To tack the ship, or tack
about, or to bring her head
about.

*Estar á cápa, ou por-se á
cápa,*

To lie by at sea, to back the
sails.

*Do Commércio, e do que lhe
pertence.*

*Of Trade, and of Things re-
lating to it.*

Cônta,

Account.

Cônta de vênda,

Account of sales.

Fazer húma'cônta,

To cast up an account.

Pedir cõntas,

To call to an account.

Dar á cônta,

To pay on account.

Cônta corrénte,

Account current.

Dinheiro de contádo,

Ready money.

Acção,

Stock.

*O que negocia em comprar e
vendêr accções,*

Jobber.

Ballança,

Balance.

Fárdo,

Bale.

Bânco,

Bank.

Banqueiro,

Banker.

Quêbra,

Bankruptcy.

Falido, ou quebrádo,

Bankrupt.

Ajústê, ou concêrto,

Bargain.

Tróca,

Barter.

Portadór,

Bearer.

Lançadór,

Bidder.

O que lança mais,

Out-bidder.

Lêtra de câmbio,

Bill of exchange, a draught.

*Negociar húma lêtra de câm-
bio,*

To negotiate a bill of ex-
change.

Cônta,

Bill.

Partida,

Parcel.

Conhecimêto,

Bill of lading.

Escritúra de obrigaçã,

Bond, engagement.

*Guárdalivros, ou o que em
húma casa de negócio têm
a seu cãrgo os livros,*

Book-keeper.

Occupaçã, or negócio,

Business.

Compradór,

Buyer.

Dinheiro,

Cash.

Pérte, ou carrêto,

Carriage.

Cazêiro,

<i>Caxeiro, ou o que guarda a</i>	<i>A cashier, or cash-keeper.</i>
<i>caixa,</i>	
<i>Cênto,</i>	<i>Cent.</i>
<i>Certidão,</i>	<i>Certificate.</i>
<i>Câmbio,</i>	<i>Change, exchange.</i>
<i>Freguez,</i>	<i>Chap, chapman, or customer.</i>
<i>Gastos,</i>	<i>Charges.</i>
<i>Barato,</i>	<i>Cheap.</i>
<i>Caro,</i>	<i>Dear.</i>
<i>Recibo da alfandega,</i>	<i>Clearance, or cocket.</i>
<i>Commissão,</i>	<i>Commission.</i>
<i>Mercancia,</i>	<i>Commodity.</i>
<i>Compromisso,</i>	<i>Compromise.</i>
<i>Consignação,</i>	<i>Consignment.</i>
<i>Consumo,</i>	<i>Consumption.</i>
<i>Conteúdo,</i>	<i>Contents.</i>
<i>Contrato,</i>	<i>Contract.</i>
<i>Correspondência,</i>	<i>Correspondence.</i>
<i>Correspondente,</i>	<i>Correspondent.</i>
<i>Prezzo,</i>	<i>Price, rate.</i>
<i>Alfandega,</i>	<i>Custom-house.</i>
<i>Guárdas d'alfandega,</i>	<i>Custom-house officers.</i>
<i>Guárdas que estão vigiando</i>	<i>Tidesmen, or tide waiters.</i>
<i>até que os navios estejam</i>	
<i>descarregados,</i>	
<i>Feitoria,</i>	<i>Factory, settlement.</i>
<i>Escritório,</i>	<i>Counting-house.</i>
<i>Crédito,</i>	<i>Credit.</i>
<i>Acredór,</i>	<i>Creditor.</i>
<i>Corrente,</i>	<i>Current.</i>
<i>Costume,</i>	<i>Custom.</i>
<i>Data,</i>	<i>Date.</i>
<i>Contratador,</i>	<i>Dealer.</i>
<i>Tráfego, ou negócio,</i>	<i>Dealing, traffick.</i>
<i>Dívida,</i>	<i>Debt.</i>
<i>Devedór,</i>	<i>Debtor.</i>
<i>Dinheiro desembolcado,</i>	<i>Disbursement.</i>
<i>Desconto,</i>	<i>Discount.</i>
<i>Extracção, ou cópia,</i>	<i>Docket.</i>
<i>Depósito,</i>	<i>Deposit.</i>
<i>Desconto nos pagamentos que</i>	<i>Draw-back.</i>
<i>se fazem a dinheiro de con-</i>	
<i>tado, ou por qualquer ou-</i>	
<i>tra razão,</i>	
<i>Acredór importuno,</i>	<i>Dun.</i>

<i>Cópia,</i>	Duplicate.
<i>Corretór,</i>	A broker.
<i>Corretór de letras de câmbio,</i>	Exchange-broker.
<i>Affeguradór, ou seguradór,</i>	Insurer or under-writer.
<i>Endóffo,</i>	Endorsement.
<i>Endoffadór,</i>	Endorser.
<i>Abarcadór,</i>	Engrosser.
<i>Levantamêto de préço,</i>	Enhancement.
<i>Affêto no regísto,</i>	Entry.
<i>Equivalênte,</i>	Equivalent.
<i>Exigência,</i>	Exigency.
<i>Despêza,</i>	Expence.
<i>Extracção,</i>	Export, or exportation.
<i>Extorsão,</i>	Extortion.
<i>Feitór,</i>	Factor.
<i>Feíra,</i>	Fair.
<i>Fio, ou arâme no qual se en-</i> <i>filião os papéis num escritório,</i>	File for papers.
<i>Quatro, cinco, &c. por cento,</i>	Four, five, &c. per cent.
<i>Freiár,</i>	To freight a ship.
<i>Frête,</i>	Freight.
<i>O que frêta hum návio,</i>	A freighter.
<i>Cabedal, ou quantia de din-</i> <i>heiro destinado para algú-</i> <i>ma cousa,</i>	Fund.
<i>Ganho,</i>	Gain, or profit.
<i>O que ganha,</i>	Gainer.
<i>Fazendas ou effeitas,</i>	Goods, effects.
<i>Estrea,</i>	Handfel.
<i>Escritúra,</i>	Hand-writing.
<i>Entrada,</i>	A custom for imported com-
<i>Negociante que introduz faz-</i> <i>endas numa praça ou reino</i>	modities.
<i>Rênda,</i>	Importer.
<i>Interesse,</i>	Income.
<i>Communicação, ou commercio,</i>	Interest.
<i>Inventário,</i>	Intercourse.
<i>Insufficiência, ou falta de</i> <i>meyos para pagar,</i>	Inventory.
<i>Factura,</i>	Insolvency.
<i>Arras,</i>	Invoice.
<i>Escritúra de arrendamêto,</i>	Jointure.
<i>Arrendadór,</i>	Lease.
<i>Livro de razão,</i>	Lessee.
	Ledger-book

<i>Emprestímo,</i>	Loan.
<i>Dinheiro emprestado,</i>	Money lent.
<i>Cárta,</i>	Letter.
<i>Sobrescrito da cárta,</i>	The direction of a letter.
<i>Fechár húma cárta,</i>	To make or close up a letter.
<i>Fechár húma cárta com sinete,</i>	To make and seal up a letter.
<i>Mála em que o corréo tráz</i> <i>as cártas,</i>	Mail.
<i>Hypótheca,</i>	Mortgage.
<i>Acredór hypothecário,</i>	Mortgagee.
<i>O que hypótheca,</i>	Mortgager.
<i>Fiadór,</i>	Bail.
<i>Pagaméto,</i>	Payment.
<i>Fálta de pagaméto,</i>	Non-payment.
<i>Escrito de divída,</i>	Note, or promissory note.
<i>Dóno,</i>	Owner.
<i>Fárdo pequeno,</i>	Pack, a trufs.
<i>Serapilheira,</i>	Packcloth, wrapper.
<i>Brahánte,</i>	Packthread.
<i>Maço de cártas,</i>	Packet of letters.
<i>Companheiro de álguem no</i> <i>negócio, ou sócio,</i>	Partner.
<i>Sociedade, ou companhia no</i> <i>negócio,</i>	Partnership.
<i>Penhór,</i>	Pawn, or pledge.
<i>Contráto do segúro dos mer-</i> <i>câncias,</i>	Policy of insurance.
<i>Segúro,</i>	Insurance.
<i>Segurár,</i>	To insure.
<i>Protestár húma létra,</i>	To protest a bill.
<i>Aceitár húma létra,</i>	To accept a bill.
<i>Protésta,</i>	Protest.
<i>Sacár húma létra,</i>	To draw a bill.
<i>Corréo aónde se lanção as cártas,</i>	Post-office.
<i>Corréo que léva cártas,</i>	Postman, or letter carrier.
<i>Pórtte de cártas,</i>	Postage.
<i>Prémio ou dinheiro que se</i> <i>pága aos seguradores,</i>	Premium.
<i>Dinheiro que se pága aos</i> <i>marinheiros por têm</i> <i>carregádo o návio,</i>	Primage.
<i>Capítal,</i>	Principal, or capital.
<i>Pérdas e danos,</i>	Losses and damages.
<i>Importância,</i>	Proceed.
<i>Importância líquida,</i>	Neat proceed.

<i>Proméſſa,</i>	Promise.
<i>Bens,</i>	Property.
<i>Pontualidáde,</i>	Punctuality.
<i>Cômpra,</i>	Purchase.
<i>Recíbo,</i>	Receipt.
<i>Recâmbio,</i>	Re-exchange.
<i>Arbitro, ou louvado,</i>	Referee or umpire.
<i>Louvamêto, ou arbitrio,</i>	Reference.
<i>Regatão,</i>	Regrater.
<i>Quitagão,</i>	Release.
<i>Reméſſa,</i>	Remittance.
<i>Vênda, das côſas por miúdo,</i>	Retail.
<i>cómo fazem os mercadôres</i>	
<i>de retálho,</i>	
<i>Mercadór de retálho, ou tra-</i>	Retailer.
<i>peíro,</i>	
<i>Riquêzas,</i>	Riches, wealth.
<i>Vênda,</i>	Sale, or vent.
<i>Padrão,</i>	A pattern.
<i>Amôſtra,</i>	Sample.
<i>Sinête,</i>	Seal.
<i>Lácre,</i>	Sealing-wax.
<i>Ajuſtamêto de cóntas,</i>	Settlement of accounts.
<i>Lôja,</i>	Shop.
<i>Mercadór que tem lôja,</i>	Shop-keeper.
<i>Lívro em que o mercadór de</i>	Shop-book.
<i>lôja tem ſúas cóntas,</i>	
<i>O que faz contrabádo,</i>	Smuggler.
<i>Fazênda-de contrabádo,</i>	Contraband, or prohibited
	goods, goods smuggled, or
	run.
<i>Fazér contrabádo,</i>	To run, to smuggle prohi-
	bited goods.
<i>Modélo, ou fél dos pézos e</i>	Standard meaſure.
<i>medidas públicas,</i>	
<i>Almázem,</i>	Ware-houſe.
<i>Sobreſcrevénte,</i>	Subscriber.
<i>Sobſcripſão,</i>	Subscription.
<i>Tára,</i>	Tare and Tret.
<i>Fazênda roím,</i>	Trash of goods.
<i>Riſco,</i>	Riſk.
<i>Fúros,</i>	Interest.
<i>Uſo,</i>	Uſance.
<i>Uſureíro,</i>	Uſurer.
<i>Uſúra,</i>	Uſury.

<i>Obréa,</i>	Wafer.
<i>Mercâncias,</i>	Wares.
<i>Valór,</i>	Worth.
<i>Avária,</i>	Average.
<i>Direitos,</i>	Duties or custom.
<i>Tribúto, ou contribuição,</i>	Cefs, tribute.
<i>Táxa,</i>	A set rate, assize.
<i>Sísa,</i>	Excise.
<i>Síseíro,</i>	Exciseman.
<i>Câes,</i>	Wharf.
<i>Direito que se pága, por des-</i> <i>embarcár fazêndas no câes,</i>	Wharfage.
<i>Collectór do mêsmo direito, ou</i> <i>tribúto,</i>	Wharfinger.
<i>Dizímos,</i>	Tenths, or Tithes.
<i>Dizimadór, ou dizimeíro,</i>	Tithe-gatherer.
<i>Louça vidrada, sem ser da</i> <i>Chína,</i>	Dutch ware.
<i>Mercadór de sobrado,</i>	Wholesale dealer.
<i>Vênda que se faz por partidas,</i>	Wholesale.

Da Moéda, ou Dinheiro Por-
tuguéz.

Of the Portuguese Coin.

This mark * is prefixed to the imaginary money.

* <i>Reál,</i>	A ree, equal to $\frac{27}{40}d.$
<i>Des réis,</i>	10 rees, $\frac{27}{40}d.$
<i>Vintem,</i>	A vintin, $1\frac{7}{20}d.$
<i>Toftão, ou 5 vintems,</i>	A testoon, $6\frac{3}{4}d.$
<i>4 Toftóens, ou hum crusado,</i>	A crusade, 2s. 3d.
<i>Crusado nôvo, ou 24 vintens,</i>	A new crusade, 2s. $8\frac{2}{3}d.$
<i>8 Toftóens,</i>	8 testoons, 4s. 6d.
<i>Hum quarto de ouro, ou 12</i> <i>toftóens,</i>	12 testoons, 6s. 9d.
* <i>Milréis, ou 10 toftóens,</i>	A milree, 5s. $7\frac{1}{2}d.$
<i>16 Toftóens,</i>	16 testoons, 9s.
<i>Méya moéda de ouro,</i>	Half moidore, 13s. 6d.
<i>3,000, ou 32 toftóens,</i>	32 testoons, 18s.
<i>Moéda de ouro de 4,800,</i>	A moidore, 1l. 7s.
<i>Méya dóbra, ou 6,400,</i>	Joanese, 1l. 16s.
<i>Dóbra, ou 12,800,</i>	128 testoons. 3l. 12s.

A
COLLECÇÃO COLLECTION

DE.

OF

Adágios Portuguezes.

Portuguese Proverbs.

A Ágoa o da, a ágoa o léva,

Na ágoa envólta péfca o pef-
cadór,

Está cómo o péixe n'ágoa,
Trazér a ágoa pará o moínho,
Levár ágoa ao mar,
As ágoas estão baixas,
O que não pôde al fer, déves
soffrér,

Cóme cómo hum alárve,
Metér a pálha na albárda,
Alazão tostado ántes mérte
que cançado,
Húma disgráça alcánça a
óutra,
Estár na aldéa, e não ver as
cásas,

Quem trabálha, tem alfáya,
Fállo-lhe em álhós, respónde-
me em bugálhos,
Em témpo nevádo o álho vále
hum cavállo,

WH A T is got over the
devil's back will be
spent under his belly; also
lightly come, lightly go.

To fish in troubled waters
(to make a benefit of pub-
lic troubles.)

He lives in clover.

To bring grist to the mill.

To carry coals to Newcastle.

He or she is at a low ebb.

What can't be cured must be
endured.

He eats like a thresher.

To cheat, to impose upon.

A dark sorrel horse will die
before he'll jade.

One mischief draws on ano-
ther.

We say; you can't see wood
for trees: or to be like the
butcher that looked for
his knife when he had it
in his mouth.

He that works has furniture.

I talk of chalk and you of
cheese.

Garlick in the foggy weather
is as good as a horse; it
means that garlick is a
good defence for travellers
against dampness and cold
weather.

Têzo cômo hum álho,

As stiff as garlick; that is a healthy, strong, robust person.

*Sua álma, sua páлма,
Na almoéda tem a bárba
quéda,*

As you brew, even so bake.
At a sale keep your beard on your chin still; that is, let not your beard wag too fast in bidding, lest you overbid and repent.

Pagár os áltoz de vázio,

To have but little or no sense at all.

*Quem áma a beltrão, áma a
sêu cão,*

Love me, love my dog.

*Cada qual áma sêu semel-
hãnte,*

Like will to like, or like loves like.

*Tãmbem os ameaçados cômem
pão,*

Threatened folks eat bread; we say, threatened folks live long.

*Cóntas de perto, e amigos de
lônge,*

Even reckonings make long friends.

*Não se dêve perdêr a amizãde
por da cá a quálla páلha,*

An inch breaks no squares.

*Tam bom he Pedro cômo sêu
ámo,*

Like master, like man.

*Furtár o carneiro, e dar os
pês pello amor de Déos,*

We say, to steal a goose and give the giblets in alms.

*Nem hum dêdo faz mão, nem
húma andorinha verão,*

One swallow does not make summer. *Una hirundo non facit ver,* says Horace.

*Levár páлhas, e arálhos,
Na área aberta o jústo pécca,*

To sweep flakes.

That is, it is opportunity makes the thief.

*De hum argueiro, fazêr hum
cavalleiro,*

We say to make mountains of mole-hills.

*Com arte, a com engãno se
vive méyo áнно; com en-
gãno, e com arte se vive a
óutra páрте,*

That is, all a man's life is a cheat.

*Quem a bóa árvore se chéga,
bóa sômbra o côbre,*

That is, he that relies on good worthy people, reaps a benefit.

Ásno mórtô, cevãda ao rábo,

A day after the fair, or after meat, mustard.

*Ásno que tem fome, cárdos
côme,*

We say, hungry dogs will eat dirty pudding.

*Sópa de mel não se fez pará
a bóca do ásno,*

*Máis quero ásno que me leve,
que cavállo que me derrúbe,*

*Máis val má avênça que bóa
senténça,*

*Quem não se aventura, não
anda a cavállo, nem em mála*

Não deítes azeíte no fogo,

Bóca não admítte fiádor,

Da mão á bóca se pérde a sópa,

*Em bóca cerráda não éntra
mósca,*

Quem tem bóca vái a Ríma,

Pélla bóca mórrre o peixe,

*Cáda bofarinheiro lóuva séus
alfinêtes,*

*Quem tem quátro, e gásta cín-
co, não ha mistér bolsa nem
bolfinho,*

*Cábar vái pella vínha por onde
vái a máy, vái a filha,*

*Matár dóus coélhos de húma
cajadáda,*

*Quem cánta seus máles, espán-
ta,*

Deitár a cápa ao tóuro,

Víva el réy, e da cá a cápa,

Good things are not fit for
fools.

Better be an old man's dar-
ling, than a young man's
warling.

It is better to agree at any
rate, than go to law.

Nothing venture, nothing
have.

Do not throw oil into the fire.

The belly has no ears.

Much falls between the cup
and the lip.

A close mouth catches no
flies.

That is, a man may go any
where, if he has language
to speak for himself and
ask his way.

Much talking brings much
woe.

Every man thinks his own
geese swans.

He that hath four and spends
five hath no need of a
purse.

Like father like son.

We say, to kill two birds
with one stone.

The person who sings makes
easy his misfortunes; that
is, singing causes him not
to reflect on it so much as
he otherwise would.

To throw one's cloak at the
bull; that is, to venture
all a man has to save his
life.

Let the king live, and give
me the cloak; that is spo-
ken of persons who, under
a pretence of authority,
rob and plunder other peo-
ple, and at the same time

Andár de cápa cahida,

*O cão com raiva de seu dono
tráva,*

*Quem com cães se lança, com
púlgas se levanta,
A carne de lobo dente de cão,*

*Quem faz casa na praça,
huns dizem que he alta,
outros que he baixa,*

*A cavállo dado não ólhes o
dente,*

*Quem quer cavállo sem tácha,
sem elle se ácha,*

*Na terra dos cégos, o tórto
he réy,*

*Cobra boa fama, e deita-te a
dormir,*

*Fazer as contas sem a hós-
peda,*

Do contádo come o lobo,

*Em casa de ladrão não fálles
em córda,*

*Do couro lhe sahem as cor-
reás,*

o pretend they are doing jus-
tice to the power reposed
in their hands.

To be behind-hand in the
world.

A mad dog bites his own mas-
ter; there is no trusting to
madmen, or people in a rage.

We say, lie with beggars and
you will get fleas.

That is, to return railing for
railing; or, as our modern
proverb says, give him a
Rowland for his Oliver;
the Latins say, *par pari re-
ferre*.

That is, a man in public busi-
ness can't please everybody;
or, as Solon says; 'tis rare
that statesmen can all par-
ties please.

Never look in the mouth of
a gift horse.

'Tis a good horse that never
stumbles.

In a country of blind men, he
that has one eye is the king.

When your name is up, you
may lie a-bed till noon.

To reckon without the hos-
tess; or as we say, the host.

The wolf eats of what is
counted; that is, thieves
will steal, though they
know it will be missed,
much more if they think
it will not.

You should not mention a
halter to any whose rela-
tions or friends have suf-
fer'd by it; that is, no man
should be hit in the teeth
of his disgrace.

The thongs come out of his
skin; that is, he pays for it.

Cortar

- Cortár o vestido conforme o pánno,*
Criái o córvo, tirárvos-ha o ólho,
- Tánta culpa tem o ladrão cómo o consentidór,*
Dadivas quebrántão pênhas,
- Melhór he fazer de bálde que estár debálde,*
- Deitár azeíte no fogo,*
- Não he o démo tam féo cómo o pintão,*
Primeíro são dentes, que paréntes,
- Lá vái a língoa, ónde o dente gríta,*
Quándo cuidas metér o dente em segúro, toparáz o duro,
- Dar com a língoa nos dentes,*
- Quem não fálla, não o óuve Déos,*
- Ventúra te dé Déos, filho ; que sabér pouco te bástá,*
- Cáda qual por si, e Déos por tódos,*
Em bons días, boas óbras,
- To cut one's coat according to the cloth.
 It is said of a person that, being received in distress, defrauds or grows too great for him that entertained him.
- The receiver is as bad as the thief.
- Gifts break rocks ; that is, kindness overcomes the hardest hearts ; and bribes or presents corrupt the most resolved.
- It is better to work for nothing than be lazy and do nothing at all.
- To make bad worse. *Horace* says, *Oleum addere camino.*
 We say, the lion is not so fierce as his picture.
- We say, near is my coat, but nearer is my skin, &c. *Terence* says, *Heus proximus sum egomet mihi.*
- To scratch where it itches.
- Harm watch, harm catch, *Horace* says,
 —et fragili quærens illidere dentem,
 —Offendet solido —
- To contradict one's self, to belie.
- A man may hold his tongue in an ill time ; also spare to speak and spare to speed.
- God give you good luck, child, for a little learning will serve your turn ; because it is fortune that raises men more than merit.
- Every one for himself, and God for all.
- The better days the better

<i>Pará dia de são ceréjo,</i>	deed. We say, when two Sundays come together, that is, never.
<i>Tódo póde o dinheíro,</i>	Money ; governs the world.
<i>O hómem propóem, e Déos</i> <i>dispóem,</i>	Man proposes, and God dis- poses.
<i>Dórme cõmo hum arganáx,</i>	He sleeps like a dormouse.
<i>A bom entendedor poucas pa-</i> <i>lavras,</i>	A word to the wise is enough.
<i>Gáto escaldádo da ágoa fría</i> <i>ha médo,</i>	We say, a burnt child dreads the fire.
<i>No escudellár verás quem te</i> <i>quer bem, ou mal,</i>	That is, people's affections are discovered by their li- berality.
<i>Esmoulou são Matthéus, es-</i> <i>molou pará os seus,</i>	Charity begins at home.
<i>Não ha melhor espelho que o</i> <i>amigo vélho,</i>	There is no better looking glass than an old friend ; that is, such a one will not flatter a man, but tell him the truth.
<i>Nem estopa com tiçóens, nem</i> <i>molher com varçens,</i>	That is, conversation of wo- men is dangerous ; it is not good jesting with edged tools.
<i>Fallár sem cuidár, he atirár</i> <i>sem afrontár,</i>	To let one's tongue run, with- out reflecting on what one says, is like shooting at random.
<i>Fállá pouco e bem térte háo</i> <i>por alguém,</i>	Talk little and well, and you'll be counted some- body ; that is, you'll be esteemed.
<i>Quem a fama tem perdida,</i> <i>mórto anda nésta vida,</i>	He who has lost his reputa- tion is as good as dead while living.
<i>A quem má fama tem, nem</i> <i>acompánhes, nem digas</i> <i>bem,</i>	Do not keep company with, nor be fond, of one that has a ill name.
<i>Aproveitador de farélos,</i> <i>esperdiçador de farinha,</i>	That is, one that saves at the spiggeot and lets it run out at the bung ; also, penny and pound foolish.
<i>Não fazem boa farinha,</i>	They can't set their horses

*Quem ma a faz nélla jaz,
 Agôra dá pão e mel, e depôis
 dará pão e fel,
 Lingôa doce cômo mel, e co-
 raçãõ amargôso cômo fel,
 Batêr o fêrro quândo estã
 quênte,*

*Quem com fêrro mãta, a fêrro
 morre,
 Carregãdo de fêrro, carre-
 gãdo de mêdo,*

*Quem te fãz fêsta, nãõ soêndo
 fazêr, ou te quêr enganâr,
 ou te ha mistêr,*

*Nãõ fiês, nem profies, nem
 arrêndes, vivêrás êntre as
 gêntes,*

*Mijár claro, dir húma figa
 ao mêdico,
 Se nãõ bêbe na tavérna, fêlga
 nélla,
 Achêu fôrma parã o sêu sa-
 páto,*

*Nãõ sejãis forneiro se têndes
 a cabêça de manteiga,*

*Ao hómem ousãdo a fortúna
 lhe dá a mãõ,
 Rôupa de francêzes,*

*Cahír da frigideira nas brá-
 sas,
 Dizêr os filhos ao soalheiro,
 o que ouvem dîzêr a sêus*

together.
 Self do self harm.
 After sweet meat comes sour
 sauce.
 An honey tongue, an heart
 of gall.
 To beat the iron whilst it is
 hot, or, to make hay whilst
 the sun shines.
 He who kills by the sword
 dies by the sword.
 He who is loaded with iron
 is loaded with fear; that
 is, he who loads himself
 with armour and weapons
 against danger, discovers
 he is much afraid.
 He that makes more of you
 than he is wont to do, either
 designs to cheat you, or
 stand in need of you.
 Do not trust, nor contend
 no hire, and you'll live
 among men; that is, you'll
 live peaceably.
 Tell the truth and shame the
 devil.
 We say he does not smoke
 but smokes.
 He has found a last to his
 shoe; that is, he has met
 with his match.
 Do not undertake to be a
 baker if your head is made
 of butter; that is, do not
 take upon you any busi-
 ness you are unfit for.
 Fortune favours the bold.
 Things left at random, or
 exposed to be pillaged.
 To fall out of the frying-pan
 into the fire.
 Little pitchers have great
 ears.

*páys ao fumeiro,
Perto vai o fumo da chama,*

*Quem húma vez fúrta, fiel
nunca,*

*Mal vai ao fúso quando a
bárba não anda em cima,*

*Cáda terra com seu úso, cáda
roça com seu fúso,*

*Quantas cabeças, tantas ca-
rapúças,*

*Quem lhe dóer a cabeça que
a aperte,*

*Se quêres saber quem he o
villão, metelhe a vâra na
mão,*

Não ha rósa sem espínkos,

*Andár, andár, vir morrer á
beira,*

Quem não deve, não teme,

*Quem quando póde, não quer,
quando quer, não póde,*

*Homem honrado não ha mis-
tér gabádo,*

Hómem gránde, bêsta de pão,

*Debaixo de má cápa jáz bom
bebedór,*

We say there is no smoke
without some fire.

He who once steals is never
trusty; or, once a thief,
always a thief.

Alas for the spindle when the
beard is not over it! By
the spindle is meant the
woman, and by the beard
is meant the man.

So many countries, so many
customs.

Several men, several minds.

We say, if any fool finds the
cap fit him, let him put it
on.

Set a beggar on horseback,
and he will ride to the
devil.

There is no rose without
thorns, there is no sweet
without some sweat.

To eat an whole ox and
faint at the tail. This pro-
verb is spoken when any
body falls short of a thing,
after having used all his
endeavours.

Out of debt out of danger.

It is good to make hay while
the sun shines.

We say, a good face needs
no band.

This proverb intimates, that
things are not to be valued
by their bulk, but accord-
ing to their intrinsic worth
and value; and so we say,
a lark is better than a
kite.

A tattered cloak may cover a
good drinker; that is, men
are not to be judged by

* E

outward

*Quem muito abraça, pouco a-
perta,*

*No açugue, quem mal falla,
mal ouve,*

*Quem em mais alto, nada,
mais presto se afoga,*

*Hóspede com sol, ha honôr,
Hospeda formosa, dano faz a
bolsa,*

*O hóspede e o peixe aos tres
dias fede,*

*Horta sem agoa, casa sem tel-
hado, molher sem amôr, ma-
rido sem cuidadô, de graça
he caro,*

*Hônra ao bom paraque te
hônra, e ao mau paraquete
não deshonre,*

*Hônra he dos ânos a que se
faz aos criados,*

*Officio de conselho, hónra sem
proveito,*

*Hómem apercebido, méyo com-
batido,*

outward appearance.

All grasp, all lose; or, covet
all, and lose all.

He that speaks knavishly shall
hear knavishly. *Terence*
says, *Qui pergit ea, quæ*
vult, dicere, ea, quæ non
vult, audiet.

That is, the highest charges
are the more liable and
nearer to the downfall.

First come, first served.
A beautiful hostess, or land-
lady, is bad for the purse.
Fresh fish, and new-come
guests, smell when they
are three days old.

That is, a garden without
water, a house untiled, a
wife without love, and a
careless husband, are all
alike, being all stark
nought.

Honour a good man, that he
may honour you; and an
ill man, that he may not
dishonour you.

The honour done to servants
redounds to their masters.
An office in the council is
honour without profit;
that is, to be of the coun-
cil of a town, by which
nothing is got in Portugal.

A man that is prepared, has
half the battle over.

DIÁLOGOS

FAMILIAR

FAMILIARES.

DIALOGUES.

DIÁLOGO I.

DIALOGUE I.

TENHA *vm.* muito bons dias,

Cómo está *vm.*? ou cómo passa *vm.*?

Bem, não muito bem, vou passando,

Muito bem para servir a *vm.*
As ordens de *vm.*

Fico-lhe muito obrigado,

Vm. muitos annos,

Cómo está, ou passa a senhór seu irmão?

Muito bem, não muito bem,

Elle terá gosto de ver a *vm.*

Não teréi tempo para hir a vê-lo hoje,

Faça favor de assentar-se,

Dá húma cadeira ao senhór,

Não he necessário,

Tenho que hir a fazer húma visita aquí nesta vizinhança

Vm. tem pressa,

E'u logo voltarei,

Adéos meu senhór,

Folgo de vêr a *vm.* com boa saúde,

Beijo as mãos de *vm.*

Sou criado de *vm.*

Sou muito seu criado,

GOOD morrow, sir.

How do you do, sir?

Well; not very well; so, so.

Very well to serve you.

At your service.

I am obliged to you.

I thank you.

How does your brother do?

He is very well; not very well.

He will be glad to see you.

I shall have no time to see him to day.

Be pleased to sit down.

Give a chair to the gentleman.

There's no occasion.

I must go make a visit in the neighbourhood.

You are in haste.

I'll be back, or return presently.

Farewel sir.

I am glad to see you in good health.

I kiss your hand.

I am your servant.

Your most humble servant.

D I Á L O G O II. D I A L O G U E II.

Pará fazer húma Vísita de
Manhãa.

To visit in the morning.

ONDE está teu amo?

Ainda dorme?

Não, senhór, elle está acordádo

Está elle ja levantádo?

*Não, senhór, elle ainda está
na câma,*

*Que vergónha de eslár ainda
na câma a éstas horas!*

*O'ntem á noite fui pará a câma
tão tarde, que não me pôde
levantár cedo ésta manhã,*

Que fizêrão v^m depois de cea?

*Dançámos, cantámos, rímos,
e jugámos,*

A que jégo?

A'os centos,

*Quanto me péza de o não ter
sabído!*

Quem ganhóu? quem perdeo?

Eu ganhéi dez moédas,

Até que horas jugárão v^m?

*Ate dúas horas despois da
méya noite,*

*A que horas foi v^m. pará a
cama?*

A's três, ás três horas e méya,

*Não me admíro que v^m. se le-
vante tão tarde,*

Que horas são?

*Que horas lhe parece a v^m.
que são?*

Paréceme que apénas são oito,

Sím! oito! ja dêrão dez,

*Então he preciso que me levante
quanto mais depréssa pu-
der,*

WHERE is your master?

Is he asleep still?

No, sir, he is awake.

Is he up?

No, sir, he is still a-bed.

*What a shame 'tis to be a-bed
at this time a-day!*

*I went to bed so late last
night I could not rise early
this morning.*

What did you do after supper?

*We danced, we sung, we
laughed, we played.*

At what game?

We played at piquet.

*How grieved am I, I did not
know it!*

Who won? who lost?

I won ten moidores.

Till what hour did you play?

Till two in the morning.

*At what o'clock did you go
to bed!*

*At three, half an hour after
three.*

*I don't wonder at your rising
so late.*

What's o'clock?

What do you think it is?

Scarce eight, I believe yet.

*How! eight! it has struck
ten.*

*Then I must rise with all
speed.*

D I Á L O G O III.

D I A L O G U E III.

Pará vestir-se.

To dress one's self,

QUEM está ahí?
Que quer vm.?

*Despáxa-te, acênde o lume, e
veste-me,*

Ha muito bom lume,

Da-me a minha camisa,

Eila aquí está, senhór,

Não está quente, está muito fria

Eu a aqueitarei, se vm. quizer

*Não, não; traze-me as mín-
has méyas de seda,*

Huma déllas está róta,

Da-lhe hum ponto, concérta-a

Dei-a ao que as concérta,

Fizêste-bem,

O'nde estão as minhas chinélas?

*O'nde está a minha roupa de
chámbré?*

Pentéa-me,

Procúra outro pente,

Da-me o meu lenço;

Eis aquí hum lavado,

*Da-me o que está na minha
algibeira,*

*Dei-o á lavandeira, elle está-
va sujo,*

Trouxe elle já a minha roupa?

Sim, senhór, e não falta nada,

Traze-me os meus calções,

*Que vestido quer vm: pará
hoje?*

O mesmo de ontem,

*O alfaiate ha de trazer logo
o seu vestido,*

Bátem á porta, vé la quem hé,

Quem he?

He o alfaiate,

Deixa-o entrar,

WH O is there?

What will you please
to have?

Be quick, make a fire, dress
me.

There is a fine fire.

Give me my shirt.

Here it is, sir.

'Tis not warm, 'tis quite cold;

If you please I'll warm it.

No, no; bring me my silk
stockings.

One of them is torn.

Stitch it a little, mend it.

I have given it to the stock-
ing mender.

You have done right.

Where are my slippers?

Where is my night gown?

Comb my head.

Look for another comb.

Give me my handkerchief.

Here is a clean one.

Give me that which is in my
pocket.

I gave it to the washer-wo-
man, it was foul.

Has she brought my linen?

Yes, there wants nothing.

Bring me my breeches.

What clothes will you wear
to-day.

Those I wore yesterday.

The taylor will bring your
cloth suit presently.

Somebody knocks, see who
it is.

Who is it?

It is the taylor.

Let him come in.

* E 3

D I Á L O G O IV. D I A L O G U E IV.

O Senhór e o Alfaiáte. *The Gentleman and the Taylor*

TRAZE'IS o meu vestido?

*Sim, senhór, eílo aquí,
Há muito tempo que estôu
esperádo por elle,
Não pôde vir até agóra,
Não está acabádo,
Ainda não estava forrádo,
Quer um. vestir a casaca pará
ver se lhe está bem?
Vejámos se está bem feita,*

*Ténho pará mim que lhe haja
de agradár,
Parêce-me muito comprída,*

*He costume agóra de tráze-
las comprídas,
Abotoá-a,
He muito apertáda,
Assím, déve ser pará que lhe
estêja bem ao corpo,
Não são as mángas demasia-
damênte largas?
Não, senhór, estão-lhe admi-
ravelmênte,*

*Os calçêns são muito aper-
tádos?*

*E'sta he a móda de agóra,
E'ste vestido está-lhe bizar-
ramênte,*

*He muito cúрто, muito com-
prído, muitogrande, muito
pequeno,*

*Têndes feito a vóssa cênta?
Não, senhór, não tive tempo,
Trazêi-a amanhã, e pagár-
vos hei,*

DO you bring my suit of
clothes?

Yes, sir, here 'tis.

You make me wait a great
while.

I could not come sooner.

It was not finished.

The lining was not sewed.

Will you please to try the
close coat on?

Let us see whether it be well
made.

I believe it will please you.

It seems to me to be very
long.

They wear them long now.

Button me.

It is too close.

To fit properly, it ought to
be close.

Are not the sleeves too wide?

No, sir, they fit very well.

The breeches are very nar-
row.

That is the fashion.

This suit becomes you migh-
ty well.

'Tis too short, too long, too
big, too little.

Have you made your bill?

No, sir, I had no time.

Bring it to-morrow, I'll pay
you.

DIALOGO V.

Para almoçar.

TRÁZE nos alguma coisa
para almoçar,
*Sim, senhor, he linguigas e
pastelinhos,*
Gosta um. de presunto?

*Sim, traze-o; — comeremos
huma talhada d'elle,
Estende hum guardanapo so-
bre aquella mesa,
Da-nos pratos, facas, e gar-
fos,*

Lá-vos copos;
Dá huma cadeira ao senhor,
*Afferte-se um assento senão
pé do lume,*

*Não tenho frio, aqui ficaréi
muito bem,*

Vejamos se o vinho he bom;

*Da cá aquella garrafa com
aquelle copa,*

*Faça favor de provar aquelle
vinho,*

*Cómo lhe agrada; que diz
um. d'elle?*

Não he máo, he muito bom,

*Eis aqui as linguigas; tira
aquelle prato,*

Cóma um. linguigas;

*Fa comi algumas; ellas são
muito boas,*

Dá-me de beber,

A saúde de um.

Bom proveito faça a um.

Dá de beber ao senhor;

Eu bebi ainda agora;

Os pastelinhos são bem bons,

*Estávão hum pouco máis co-
zidos que devião estar;*

DIALOGUE V.

To breakfast.

BRING us something for
breakfast.
Yes, sir, there are some sau-
sages and petty-patees.

Do you choose the gammon
of bacon?

Yes, bring it; we will eat a
slice of it.

Lay a napkin on that table.

Give us plates, knives, and
forks.

Ring the glasses.

Reach the gentleman a chair.

Sit down, sir; sit by the fire.

I am not cold, I shall be very
well here.

Let us see whether the wine
be good.

Give me that bottle and a
glass.

Taste that wine, pray.

How do you like it? what
say you to it?

It is not bad; it is very good.

Here are the sausages, take
away this plate.

Eat some sausages, sir.

I have eat some, they are very
good.

Give me some drink.

Your health, sir,

Much good may it do you.

Give the gentleman some
drink.

I drank but just now.

The petty-patees were very
good.

They were baked a little too
much.

* E 4

Vm.

*Vm. não come,
Têho comido tanto, que não
poderêi jantar,*

*Vm. está zombando, vm. não
tem comido nada,
Têho comido com muito
gosto, tanto das linguças
cômo do presunto,*

You do not eat.
I have eat too much, I shall
not be able to eat any dinner.

You only jest, you have eat
nothing at all.
I have eat very heartily both
of sausages and gammon
of bacon.

DIALOGO VI.

Pará fallár Portuguêz.

COMO vái vm. com o seu
Portuguêz?

*Esta vm. já muito adiantado
nêlle?*

*Ainda me falta muito; não
sei quási nada,*

*Dizem pôrem que vm. o fälla
muito bem,*

*Prauvêra a Déos que assim
fôsse!*

*Os que dizem isso, estão muito
enganados,*

*Estêja vm. na certêza que
assim mo differão,*

*Pôso fallár algúmas palá-
ras que aprendi de cor,*

*E unicamênte o que he neces-
sário pará começár a fallár,*

*O começár não he bastánte,
he precíso que vm. acábe,*

*Falle vm. sempre ou bem, ou
mal,*

Têho médo de dar érros,

*Não ténha vm. médo; a língoa
Portuguêza não he difficil,*

*Conhégo isso, e também que
êlla he muito engraçáda,*

*Que felicidade seria a mínha
se eu a soubêsse bem!*

DIALOGUE VI.

To speak Portuguese.

HOW goes on your Por-
tuguese?

*Are you much improved in
it now?*

*Far from it; I know nothing
almost.*

*It is said, however, you speak
it very well.*

Would to God it were true!

*Those that say so are much
mistaken.*

I assure you I was told so.

*I can say a few words which
I have learnt by heart.*

*And so much as is neces-
sary to begin to speak.*

*The beginning is not all, you
must make an end.*

*Be always speaking, whether
well, or ill.*

*I am afraid to commit blun-
ders.*

*Never fear; the Portuguese
language is not hard.*

*I know it; and that it has
abundance of graces.*

*How happy should I be, if I
were master of it!*

A ap-

*A applicação he o único méyo
pará aprendê-la,
Quanto témpo há que vm. a-
prênde?*

*Apénas há hum mês,
Cômo se châma seu mēstre?
Châma-se—*

*Há muito témpo que o con-
hêço,*

*Elle tem ensinâdo a muitos
dos meus amigos,*

*Não lhe diz elle ser preciso que
falle sempre Portuguêz?*

*Sim, senhór, assim me diz
muitas vezes,*

*Pois, porque não falla vm.?
Com quem quer vm. que eu
falle,*

Com os que fallarem com vm.

*E' eu quizêra fallar, mas não
me atrevo,*

*He preciso que vm. não tenha
medo, nem se peje dos que
o ouvirem fallar,*

*Application is the only way
of learning it.*

*How long have you been
learning?*

Scarce a month yet.

What is your master's name?

His name is—

*I have known him a great
while.*

*He has taught several friends
of mine.*

*Does not he tell you that you
must constantly talk Por-
tuguese?*

Yes, sir, he often tells me so.

Why do not you talk then?

*Who would you have me
talk with?*

*With those who shall talk to
you.*

*I would fain talk, but dare
not.*

*You must not be afraid, you
must be bold.*

D I Á L O G O VII.

Do Témpo.

QUE témpo faz?

O témpo está admirável,

O témpo está roim,

Faz frio? faz calma?

Não faz frio, não faz calma,

Ch. ve? não chove?

Não o crêyo,

O vento está mudado,

Teremos chuvia,

Hoje não há de chovér,

Chove, chove a cantáros,

Está nevando,

Trovêja,

D I A L O G U E VII.

Of the Weather.

WHAT sort of weather
is it?

It is fine weather.

It is bad weather.

Is it cold? is it hot?

It is not cold, it is not hot.

Does it rain? does it not rain?

I do not believe it.

The wind is changed.

We shall have rain.

It will not rain to-day.

It rains, it pours.

It snows.

It thunders.

*Cáhe pédra,
Relampaguêa,
Faz muita calma,
Geôu a noite passáda ?
Não, senhór, mas agora está
geando,*

Parece-me que há neveiro,

Vm. não se engana, assim he,

*Vm. tem hum grande catarro,
ou estillicídio,*

*Há quinze dias que o ténho,
Que horas são,*

He cedo, não he tarde,

He tempo de almoçar ?

*Pouco falta pará serem horas
de jantar,*

*Que faremos depois de jan-
tar ?*

*Daremos hum pass. yo, ou ire-
mos passear,*

Vamos dar huma volta,

*Não vamos fóra com este tem-
po,*

It hails.

It lightens.

It is very hot.

Has it freezed to night ?

No, sir, but it freezes now.

*It appears to me to be a great
fog.*

*You are not mistaken, it is
very true.*

*You have caught a violent
cold.*

I have had it this fortnight.

What's o'clock ?

'Tis early, 'tis not late.

Is it breakfast-time ?

*'Twill be dinner-time imme-
diately.*

*What shall we do after din-
ner ?*

We'll take a walk.

Let us take a turn now.

*We must not go abroad this
weather.*

D I Á L O G O VIII.

Pará perguntar que novas ha.

QUE vár de nóvo ? ou que
novas ha ?

*Sábe vm. alguma cousa de nó-
vo ? ou sabe vm. algumas ?*

*Não tenho ouvido náda de novo
De que se fálle pélla cidade ?*

Não se fálle de náda,

*Não tendes ouvido fallar de
guerra,*

Não buço fallar náda disso,

Porem fálle-se de hum cerco,

*Fallou-se nisso, mas não he
verdade,*

D I A L O G U E VIII.

To enquire after news.

WHAT news is stirring ?

Do you know any ?

I have heard none.

What's the talk of the town ?

There's no talk of any thing.

*Have you heard no talk of
war ?*

I have heard nothing of it.

*There's a talk however of a
siege.*

*There was such a discourse,
but it is not true.*

Antes

*Antes péello contrário fálla-se
de páz,*

Affim o créyo,

Que se diz na côrte?

Fálla-se de húma viágem,

*Quándo vos paréce que el réy
partirá?*

*Não se sabe. Não se diz quan-
do,*

*O'nde, ou pará ónde se diz
que elle irá?*

*Huns dizem que irá pará
Flandres, e óutros pará
Alemánha,*

E que diz a Gazéta?

E'u não a lí,

*He verdáde o que se diz do
Sr.——?*

Póis que se diz d'elle?

*Dizem que está ferido mor-
talmente,*

*Muito me pesaria disso; elle
he hum homem de bem,*

Quem o ferio?

*Dóus marótos que o investi-
rão,*

Sábe-se o porque?

*A notícia que córre he, que
deu num d'elles hum cos-
corrão,*

*E'u não créyo isso; nem eu
tão pouco,*

*Eílo vái, cedo saberémos a
verdáde,*

On the contrary there's a
talk of peace.

I believe so.

What say they at court?

They talk of a voyage.

When do you think the king
will set out?

'Tis not known, they do not
say when.

Where do they say he'll go?

Some say into Flanders,
others into Germany.

And what says the Gazette?

I have not read it.

Is it true what's reported of
Mr.——?

What of him?

They say he is mortally
wounded.

I should be sorry for that,
he's an honest man.

Who wounded him?

Two rogues that set upon
him.

Is it known upon what ac-
count?

The report is that he gave
one of them a box on the
ear.

I don't believe it. Nor I
neither.

However, we shall soon know
the truth.

DIÁLOGO IX.

DIALOGUE IX.

— Pará escrevêr.

To write.

DA I-ME húma folha de
papél, húma pénnna, e hú-
ma pouca de tinta,

*I'de ao meu quártio, e achareis
em cima da mēsa tudo o que
vos for preciso,*

GIVE me a sheet of pa-
per, a pen, and a little
ink.

Step to my closet, you'll find
on the table whatever you
want. *Não*

*Não ha pénnas,
 Há grãde quantidãde déllas
 na escrivãinha,
 Não préstão parã náda,
 Lá há óutras,
 Não éstão aparãdas,
 O'nde está o vóssô canivête?
 Sabéis vós aparãr pénnas?
 Eu apáro-as a méu módo,
 Esta não está má,
 Em quãto acãbo ésta cártã,
 fazêime o favór de fechãr
 as óutras, e fazér hum
 mãço déllas,
 Que sello quer um. que eu lhe
 põha?
 Sella-o com o méu sinête, ou
 com as mínhas ármãs,
 Com que lácre quer um. que
 as fêche,
 Fechãr-as com o vermélho ou
 com o prêto; seja qual for,
 não impórta,
 Tem um. pósto a dáta?
 Parêce-me que sim, mas aĩnda
 não a assínêi,
 A quãtos estãmos hóje do
 mez?
 A óuto, a déz, a quĩnze, a
 vinte,
 Pónde o sobrescrĩto?
 O'nde está a aréa?
 Vós nũca tẽdes aréa,
 Ahĩ há algũma, no arrecĩro,
 Ahĩ está. o sêu criãdo; quer
 um. que êlle leve as cártãs
 ao córrêo,
 Léva as mínhas cártãs ao
 corréo, e não te esqueçãs de
 pagár o pórtẽ,
 Não tẽnho dinheĩro,
 Ahĩ está húma moéda de búro,
 Vãĩ depréssa, e vem logo,*

There are no pens.
 There are a great many in
 the standish.
 They are good for nothing.
 There are some others.
 They are not made.
 Where is your penknife?
 Can you make pens?
 I make them my own way.
 This is not bad.
 While I make an end of this
 letter, do me the favour to
 make a packet of the rest.
 What seal will you have me
 put to it?
 Seal it with my cypher, or
 coat of arms.
 What wax shall I put to it?
 Put either red, or black, no
 matter which.
 Have you put the date?
 I believe I have, but I have
 not signed it.
 What day of the month is
 this?
 The eighth, the tenth, fif-
 teenth, twentieth.
 Put the superscription.
 Where is the powder?
 You never have powder or
 sand.
 There's some in the sand
 box.
 There's your servant, will
 you let him carry the let-
 ters to the post-house?
 Carry my letters to the post-
 office, and don't forget to
 pay postage.
 I have no money.
 There's a moidore.
 Go quickly, and return as
 soon as possible.

DIÁLOGO X. DIALOGUE X.

Pará comprár.

To buy.

QUE quer vm.

*Quéro hum bom pánno fino
pará hum vestído,
Ténha vm. a bondáde de en-
trár, e verá o máis bélo
pánno que há em Lóndres,
Deixe-me ver o melhór que
vm. tem,*

*Aquí tem vm. hum excellénte,
que agóra se costúma trazér,
He hum bom pánno, mas a
cór não me agráda,
Ahí tem vm. outra péça que
tem o cór máis clára,*

*Agrádame a cór, mas o pánno
não he forte, não tem cór-
po,*

*Vêja ésta péça; vm. não ac-
hará em nenhúma parte
óutra tão bóa cómo élla,
Quánto péde vm. por cáda
ána delle?*

O seu jústo preço he——

*Sr. não he méu costume por-me
a regateár; fáca-me favór
de dizér me o último preço,
Ja disse a vm. que aquélle he
o seu jústo preço,
He muito cáro, dar lhe heí a
vm.—*

*Não póssó dar náda de abáte,
ou não póssó abatér hum cei-
tíl,*

*Vm. não há de vendér por és-
se preço,*

*Vm. quíz sabér o último pré-
ço, e éa disse-lho,*

WHAT do you want, sir?
What would you please
to have?

I want a good fine cloth to
make me a suit of clothes.

Be pleased to walk in, sir,
you'll see the finest in
London.

Shew me the best you have.

There's a very fine one, and
what's worn at present.

'Tis a good cloth, but I don't
like the colour.

There's another lighter piece.

I like that colour well, but
the cloth is not strong, 'tis
too thin.

Look upon this piece here,
sir, you'll not find the like
any where else.

What do you ask for it an-
ell?

Without exacting, it is
worth——

Sir, I am not used to stand
haggling; pray tell me
your lowest price.

I have told you, sir, 'tis
worth that.

'Tis too dear, I'll give you——

I can't bate a farthing.

You shall not have what you
ask.

You asked me the lowest
price, and I have told
you.

Hora

*Hôra vámos, corte vm. lá dú-
as ánas d'elle,*

*Asséguro-lhe a vm. cómo hó-
mem de bem que sou, que
não gánho náda com vm.*

*Ahí tem vm. cinco moédas de
ouro, dé me a demasia,*

*Ténha a bondáde de dar-me
óutra em lugar d'êsta, pôr-
que não he de pezo,*

Ahí está óutra,

A Déos, criádo de vm.

Come, come, cut off two
ells of it.

I protest, on the word of an
honest man, I don't get
any thing by you.

There's five moidores, give
me the change.

Be pleased, sir, to let me have
another for this, it wants
weight.

There's another.

Farewell; sir, your servant.

D I Á L O G O X I.

Pará húma Jornáda.

QUANTAS legóas ha da-
quí a N.?

Ha óuto legóas,

*Nos não poderémos chegár lá
hóje, he muito tarde,*

*Não he senão méyo día, vm^{ces}
áinda tem bastánte tẽpo,*

Hé a astráda bóa?

*Não he muito bóa, passão-se
bósques e ríos,*

Há algúm périgo nêlla?

*Não há notícias d'isso; he
estráda real em que se en-
cóntra gẽte a cada pássso,
Póis não dízem que há ladrõ-
ens nos bósques?*

*Não ha de que ter médo, nem
de día, nem de noite,*

Por ónde se vái?

*Quándo vm^{ces} chegárem ao pé
do outeíro, he preciso que
tómem á mão direíta,*

*Póis não he necessário subír
hum outeíro?*

D I A L O G U E X I.

For a Journey.

HOW many leagues is it
from this place to N.?
It is eight leagues.

We shall not be able to get
thither to day, it is too late.

It is not more than twelve
o'clock, you have time
enough yet.

Is the road good?

So, so; there are woods and
rivers to pass.

Is there any danger upon that
road?

There's no talk of it, it is a
highway, where you meet
people every moment.

Do not they say there are
robbers in the woods?

There's nothing to be feared
either by day or night.

Which way must one take?

When you come near the
hill, you must take to the
right hand.

Is it not necessary to ascend
a hill then?

Não

Não, Sr. não há outro outeiro senão húma pequenã ladeira, (ou descida) no bósque,

Custa a atinár com o camínho pello méyo dos bósques?

V^{ms} não pôdem erra-lo,

Lógo que v^{ms} sahírem do bósque, lembrem-se de tomar á mão esquérda,

V^{me} muitos annos, fico-lhe muito obrigado,

Vámos, vamos, senhores, tomémós hum cavallo,

O'nde está o marquéz?

E'lle foi adiãnte,

E'lle há de estar esperándopor vós lógo ali fóra da cidade,

Pórque está v^{me} agóra esperando? hóra, vámo-nos daqui, acabémós,

Fiquem-se embóra, senhores, a Déos,

Fação v^{ms} muito bóa jornada,

No, sir, there is no other hill but a little declivity in the wood.

Is it a difficult way through the woods?

You can't lose your way.

As soon as you are out of the wood, remember to keep to the left hand.

I thank you, sir, and am very much obliged to you.

Come, come, gentlemen, let's take a horse.

Where is the marquis?

He is gone before.

He'll wait for you just out of town.

What do you stay for now? come, come, let's be gone, let's have done.

Farewel, gentlemen, farewell.

I wish you a very good journey.

D I Á L O G O XII.

D I A L O G U E XII.

Da Cêa e da Pousáda.

Of the Supper and Lodging.

CO'MQUE assim estámos chegádos a estalagem,

Apeémó-nos, senhores,

Péga nos cavállos destes senhores, he trãta delles,

Vejámos agóra o'que v^m. nos há de dár pará cear,

Hum capão, méya dúzia de pombos, húma saláda, seis codornízes, e húma dúzia de calhândras,

Quêrem v^{ms} máis algúma cousa?

Isto he bastãnte, daí nos algúm vinho que seja bom, e húma sobremesa,

SO, we are arrived at the inn.

Let's alight, gentlemen.

Take these gentlemen's horses, and take care of them.

Now let's see what you'll give us for supper.

A capon, half a dozen of pigeons, a fallad, six quails, and a dozen of larks.

Will you have nothing else?

That's enough, give us some good wine, and a dessert.

Deixem

*Deíxem um^{es} isso por minha
Conta, eu lhes prométo que
fiquem bem servidos,*

*Alúmia áos senhores,
Dái-nos de ceár o máis de-
prêssa que fór possível,*

*Antes que um^{es} ténhão des-
calçado as bôtas, estará a
cêa na mēsa,*

*Tênde cuidádo que trágão
pará cima as nössas malas
e pistôlas,*

*Descalçai-me as bôtas, e de-
spoís iréis ver se tem dádo
algúm fêno áos cavállos,*

*Lévai-os áo río, e tênde cui-
dádo que lhes dem alguma
avéa,*

*Eu terêi cuidádo de tódo,
estêjão um^{es} descanzádos,*

*Senhores, a cêa está prômpta,
está na mēsa,*

*Nós vámos ja,
Vámos ceár, senhores, pará
nos hirmos deitár cédo,*

*Dái-nos ágoa pára lavár as
mãos,*

*Sentêmo-nos, senhores, sente-
mónos á mēsa,*

*Dái-nos de bebér,
Afáude de um^{es} méus senhores,*

*He bom o vinho?
Náo he máo,*

*O capáo não está bem affúdo,
Dái-nos húmas póucas de*

*laránjas, e hum póuco de
pimēta,*

*Pórque não cóme um^{es} destes
pómbos?*

*Eu ténhe comido hum pómbo,
e tres calhândras,*

*Díze áo estalajadeiro quelhe
querêmos fallár,*

Let me alone, I'll please you,
I warrant you.

Light the gentlemen.
Let's have our supper as
soon as possible.

Before you have pulled your
boots off, supper shall be
' upon the table.

Let our portmanteaus and
pistols be carried up stairs.

Pul, off my boots, and then
you shall go see whether
they have given the horses
any hay.

You shall carry them to the
river, and take care they
give them some oats.

I'll take care of every thing,
don't trouble yourself.

Gentlemen, supper is ready,
it is upon the table.

We'll come presently.

Let's go to supper, gentle-
men, that we may go to
bed in good time.

Give us water to wash our
hands.

Let us sit down, gentlemen,
let's sit down at table.

Give us some drink.
To your health, gentlemen.

Is the wine good?
It is not bad.

The capon is not done enough
Give us some oranges with a
little pepper.

Why don't you eat of these
pigeons?

I have eaten one pigeon and
three larks.

Tell the landlord we want to
speak with him.

DIALOGO XIII. DIALOGUE XIII.

Do saltár e do corrér.

*Of jumping and running.***H**Ó R A vámos, quer um.
saltár,Não he bom saltár logo des-
pois de comér,De que módo de saltár gosta
um. máis?O máis commum he a pés jún-
tos,Quer um. que saltémós só com
hum pé?

Cómo um. quizêr,

Este he hum saltomuito grande
Quántos pés saltou um.?

Máis de quátro,

Apósto que salto por cima da-
quélle barranco,Um. salta com hum páo com-
prido,

Dêmos húma carreira,

Quer um. que corrámos a pé
ou a cavállo,

De húma e outra sorte,

Diga um. dónde se há de come-
çar, e ónde se ha de acabár,

Começámos a corrér daqui.

Correrêmos até chegár a está
arvore,Têngo corrido três vézes
dêsde o lugar assinaládo até
a árvore,Um. não esperôu pello sinál pa-
ra principiár a corrér,Aquélle cavallo corréo muito
bem.Quántas carreíras tem elle
dádo?

Três ou quátro,

Um. tem ganhádo,

C O M E, will you go to
jumping?It is not good to jump imme-
diately after dinner.What leaping do you like.
best?The most usual is with one
foot close to the other.

Shall we hop with one leg?

As you please.

This is a very great leap.

How many feet have you
leap'd?

More than four.

I lay I leap clearly over that
ditch.

You jump with a long stick.

Let us run races.

Shall we run on foot or on
horseback?

Both ways.

Appoint the race.

This will be the starting
place.

This tree shall be the goal.

I have run three times from
the starting-place to the
tree.You did not stay for the sig-
nal to start.That horse has run his race
very well.

How many heats has he run?

Three or four.

You have won the plate.

C A R T A S

SOBRE

A Mercancia ou Negocio.

Senhor F. F. Londrés, 30 de Janeiro, 1808.

A S de Vm^{ce} de 3e. 15 do mez passado recebi em 5 do Corrente, pello Navio F. F. Capitão B. B. Mestre, e nellas advirto q^o. carregara Vm^{ce}, abordo do primeiro bom Navio destinado p^a. esta praça, as fazendas q' recommendei a seu cuidado na minha ultima, com esta vão mais mostras; mas o que lhe peço he de emcomendar a o tintureiro que as corres tenham vivesa e q^o. sejam de dura; pello ultimo Navio mandei a vm^{ce}, a conta da venda da partida das meas de seda como tambem dos 3 Caixões de chapéos que me vierão consignados pello Navio A; se se offerecerem mais de qualquer dos generos sobreditos sendo acomodados bem, pode mandalos, por serem agora pedidos, com esta condiçam que sejam da moda e de bom feitio; tenho contratado por suas 20 Pipas de azeite pellos primeiros navios de çafra e as 20 Pipas de Vinho tinto com as 20 Pipas e 3 quartos de Branco ja estam abordo do Navio S. F. Capitão F mestre, dos quaes a Factura vai inclusa, e os conhecimentos irão pello correio; queira Deos que chegue a salvamento: sendo o que por ora se offerece.

Mais obrigado Servidor de Vm^{ce}. q^o. S. M. P.

LET-

LETTERS

Business, or Mercantile Affairs.

Mr. F. F. London, the 30th of January, 1808.

YOURS of the 3d and 15th of last Month, came to Hand on the 5th Current by the Ship F. F. Captain B. B. Commander; and therein I take Notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last. Herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable. By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship A; and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, please to send them, such Articles being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and put on board the Ship N. your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, Capt. F. Commander, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Lading shall be sent by the post, and I hope will come safe to Hand; which being all that is necessary at present, I remain,

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

Senhor Jasinto Jones,

Meu Senhor,

ESTAS servem para avisar a Vm^{ce}. como por este Navio, o Derby, tenho feito o Retorno do seu Cabedal em meu Poder em duas Bolsas de Diamantes montando a Pagoda 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks tendoas registrado conforme sua Ordem nos Livros da Companhia, incluzo está o Conhecimento, junto com a Factura e sua Conta Corrente fechada, a qual dezeijo que chegue a Salvamento, e que lhe faça boa Conta; como eu estou para Tornar com este Trespasso para Europa, á minha chegada a Londres, terei o Honor de ver a Vm^{ce}. e darlhe hum exacta conta do Negocio na India, e sou Enteiramente,

Fort St. George.
Nov. 12, 1808.

Mais humilde Servidor,
de Vm^{ce}. Q. S. M. B.

Londres, a 4 Março, 1808.

A Lisboa.

Sr. João Ferrier.

Meu Senhor,

ESTOU favorecido com a de Vm^{ce} de 3do Corrente, e acho que em Comprimento á minha Ordem tem Vm^{ce}. comprado os quinhentos Barils de Arenques de fumo a Livras onze por Lastre; eu não tenho duvida que esse foi o menor preso porque Vm^{ce}, os podia ter, e que sua boa Qualidade o Corresponda, meu Navio se está preparando com toda a pressa para hir Buscalos: elle se pode caregar

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

THESE will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, I have made the return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds, amounting to Pagodas 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks, having registered them according to your Order in the Company's Books; inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account, as I am returning by this Conveyance into Europe; at my Arrival in London, I shall have the Honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,

Fort St. George,
Nov. 12, 1808.

Your humble Servant,

London, 4 March, 1808.

To Lisbon.

Mr. John Ferrier.

Sir,

I AM favoured with yours of the 3d Current, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at 11 $\frac{1}{2}$ per Last, I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price you could get them for, and the goodness of them does answer it: my ship is getting ready with all Speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Key, as she draws no

* F 3

more

gar em o seu Cáys, sendo que não tira mais de que nove Pes de Agua; como Vm^{ce}. he servido de apontarme, que me apouparia de Gastos quatro pempiques por Baril, eu julgo que elle podera levár sette centos Barils ou mais; se assim for, quando elle chegar, Vm^{ce}. o podera despachar: o Capitão não tera Ocazião de qualquer dinheiro, assim que não havera mister de nenhum Suprimento. Agradeço a Vm^{ce}. pella Informaçã que me dá em relação dos Cambios de Lisboa a este Lugar: mas como eu olho para Remessas do Dinheiro aqui tão ariscado em Lettras do Exchequer. Vm^{ce}. sera servido de sacar sobre mim ao mais acomodado Cambio que lhe for possivel, e suas Lettras ao usual Curso, as quaes terão todo o devido Honor,

Mui certo Servidor de Vm^{ce}. que S. M. B.

Londres, 18 Março, 1808.

A Cadiz.

Senhor Joao Fryer,

Meu Senhor,

DIVERSAS Cartas de Vm^{ce}. me vierão á mão a seu Tempo, como tambem minha conta Corrente a qual tenho notado em Conformidade com Vm^{ce}. sua ultima foy de 29 do Mez passado, na qual me dá Vm^{ce}. recibo das trez Letras importantes seis Mill Pieces de Oito, as quaes meo Irmão Joseph mandou a Vm^{ce}. por minha Conta, e por minha Ordem; eu farei hum triste Negocio com ellas depois do desembolio de meu Dinheiro ha tanto Tempo, ademas que o Cambio me custou caro, eu Acho que seus limites a Vm^{ce}. forão mais somenos que o Preço da Prata e Cambio, agora sendo que tenho es-

perado

more than nine Feet of Water, as you are pleased to mention, which will save me the Charge of four Pence per Barrel; I judge she will carry about seven hundred Barrels, or more; if so, when she arrives, you may fit her up, the Captain will not have Occasion for any Money, so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you give me in relation to the Exchange between Lisbon and this Place; but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due Honour from,

Sir,

Your humble servant,

London, March 18, 1808.

To Cadiz.

Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

YOUR several Letters came to Hand in due Time, as did my Account Current, which I have noted in Conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to six thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain of them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange; I find his Limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send

perado todo este Tempo e não havendo Probabilidade de sua baixa, seja Vm^{ce} servido de mandarme meu Dinheiro como vem o Cambio tanto para esta praça, ou Amsterdam, como Vm^{ce}. julgar me fará melhor Conta, se a Prata ou Cochonilha baixar a preço que a Vm^{ce}. lhe pareça ser melhor do que por remessa de Cambio, em tal caso investa Vm^{ce} meu Dinheiro em qualquer delles, que deixo inteiramente a Vm^{ce}. estando persuadido que Vm^{ce}. actuara em meus Negocios como se forão seus proprios, eu me alegraria ouvir da chegada da Frota que podera ser que desse algum alento ao Negocio para que huma pessoa podesse fazer algum emprego que ao presente não Convida a nada sendo quanto se offrece.

Servidor de Vm^{ce}. que S. M. B.

Londres, Março 21, 1808.

A Cadiz, Senhor João Fryer.

Senhor,

DO outro-lado, está a Copia da minha ultima de 18 do Corrente, eu supponho que meu Irmão Joseph tem feito algumas Remessas a Vm^{ce}. por minha Conta, do que saberei a quantia pello primeiro Correio de Olanda; com esta mando a Vm^{ce}. tres Letras, importantes quatro Mil pesos de Outo, sobre a boa pessoa de Vm^{ce}. a quem as endousei, valor em minha Conta, cujo Dinheiro, Vm^{ce}. sera servido empregar, junto com aquelle que meu Irmão Joseph lhe tiver remetido, em dous, ou tres Navios de Guerra, e me alegrarei que isto chegue a Tempo bastante para alcançar ao Senhor John Truman, e os outros Navios de Guerra, em tal Caso, e não de outro modo, podera Vm^{ce}. sacar mais do
que

my Money, as the Exchange comes either for this Place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by Remittance at a due Exchange, in such case invest my Money in either of them, which I do entirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival; for, perhaps, it might give some favourable turn to business, so that one could make some use of one's Money, for at present, it does not invite one to any thing; which is all from,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

Londres, March 21, 1808.

To Cadiz, Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

ON the other Side is a Copy of my last to you of the 18th instant; I suppose my Brother Joseph has made you some Remittances for my Account, of which I shall know the Sum by the first Dutch Post. I herewith send you three Bills, amounting to four thousand Pieces of Eight on your good Self, to whom I have indorsed them Value in my Account; which Money please to employ, together with that my Brother Joseph has remitted you in two or three Men of War, and should be glad this should get time enough to reach Sir John True-man's, and the other Men of War: in such Case, and no other, you may draw over and above what is remitted you for my Account, ten thousand Ducats,

que se lhe tem remetido por minha Conta, Dez Mil Ducados, e ponhaos Vm^{ce}. com o meu outro Interesse; em tres ou quatro Navios de Guerra, e seja servido de observar que sem embargo que eu ordenei a Vm^{ce}. na Copia da minha antecedente, para carregar em hum Galera ou Navio Marcante, tres Mil Ducados, e para sacar; eu revoco a Ditta Ordem, e peço, a Vm^{ce}. que não carregue em Galera, ou Navio Marcante, mais de dous Mil Ducados, e que não saque ao presente, mas somente que empregue o que tenho remetido a Vm^{ce}. e seja servido mandarme hum distincta Conta, com inteira informação do Negocio para meu Governo, e fico com todo o devido respeito.

Mui certo Servidor de Vm^{ce}. Q. S. M. B.

*Hum escritinho que vai aberto a hum vezinho,
ou Amigo, em qualquer ocasião.*

AO Senhor G. S. que T. M. ou seu servo criado beja a S. M. mil vezes, e que lhe faça a mercede de lhe mandar pello portador desta

sendolhe precisamente necessario nesta ocasião, e sempre ficará mui prompto as suas Ordens.

A. Q. D. G.

A Carta ou Instrumento de Procuração.

SAIBAM todos quantos este instrumento ou Carta de procuração virem, que eu A. B. de Londres, homem de negocio, tenho nomeado e constituido e
por

cats, and put it, with my other Interest on three or four Men of War; and please to observe, that notwithstanding I ordered you in the foregoing Copy, to load in any Galley or Merchantman, three thousand Ducats, and to draw, I do revoke the said Order, and desire you not to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, more than two thousand Ducats, and for the present not to draw, but only employ what I have remitted you, and please to send me a distinct Account of the Cost, with full Information of the Business for my Government, and I do remain with due respect,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

*A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend
or Neighbour, for any Thing upon Occasion.*

TO Mr. G. S. that T. M. his most humble Servant, desires the favour of him to send by the Bearer

having at present immediate occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his

Humble Servant.

A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of London, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these presents do name, ordain, appoint,

por estes presentes, nomeo, ordeno, constituo e faço o Senhor B. C. de o meu verdadeiro e legitimo procurador, por mim e em meu Nome e ao meu uso pode demandar, arrecadar e receber de T.B. Mercador, a soma de a mim devida por ditto T. B. dando e por esta concedendo ao meu ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade de exercitar, de usar de todas taes acções e outras cousas em direito necessarias para a cobrança da ditto divida e em meu nome, de dar, e fazer quitações ou outras descargas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia sobreditta tão plenariamente como se eu mesmo fizesse ou pudesse fazer, estando pessoalmente presente ; ratificando, confirmando, e outorgando tudo e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procurador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella por estes presentes. Em testemunha do que Assinei e sellei esta em aos 20 dias do mez de Março de 1808.

por A. B.

Assinado e Sellado adiante

de

T. A. }

M. B. }

Testemunhas.

A Carta ou o Instrumento de Fretamento.

ESTA carta ou Instrumento de Fretamento contratado feito aos dias do mez de do Anno de do nascimento de nosso Senhor Jesus Christo, &c. Entre T. B. Mestre debaixo de Deos do bom navio nomeado, de dozentas e cincoenta toneladas de carga P. M. que ao presente esta Surto e ancorado no Rio de de huma parte e E. T. M. B. L. &c. homens de negocio da outra parte : Certificação que o ditto Mestre tem dado em aluguel e fretado o Ditto Navio aos dittos homens de negocio e que elles

appoint, and make my trusty friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Use, to Demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of Merchant, the Sum of to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for the recovering of the said Debt, and give Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name; to make and give, and generally to do and execute on the Premises, as fully as myself might or could do, were I personally present; ratifying, confirming and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of March, 1807.

Sealed and delivered

In the Presence of

A. B.

T. A.

M. B.

The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter Party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of Anno Domini, between T. A. Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master has granted and let the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly

os dittos Homens de negocio tem tomado em aluguel pella viagem aos concertos e as condições, asaber o ditto Mestre faz concerto, promete e otorga, por elle mesmo, os seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, e com os dittos homens de negocio, e qualquer delles, ou seus, e a qualquer dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, por estes presentes ; que o ditto Navio forte e saõ de quilha, e bem bastantemente provido de mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as cousas convenientes e necessarias para fazer a viagem por diante declarada ; com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos premittira depois da data destes presentes, partira do porto de com todas as taes fazendas e Mercadorias que os dittos homens de negocio ou os Seus Constituintes, entrementes carregaraõ ou meterão abordo delle, e com elle em direitura dara a vela e applicara ao como o vento e o tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem ; e em chegando taõ perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto Mestre ou os Seus Constituintes dentro de Dias de trabalho para se contarem logo depois de tal sua chegada, não somente descargaraõ, entergaraõ as dittas fazendas e mercadorias meridas abordo do dito Navio ao sobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Feitores ou Constituintes, ou a alguns ou algum delles em Salvamento e bem acondicionadas, salvante o risco dos mares, e o tolhimento de principes e Governadores, mas tambem receberão, tornarão a carregar, e tomarão abordo do ditto Navio de e dos ditto homens de negocio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou de alguns ou algum delles, todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali carregaraõ ou meterão abordo delle ate o comprimento inteiro da carga do ditto Navio ; asaber : tanto quanto bem se podra arrumar debaixo da cuberta

no

cordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to say, the said Master does covenant, promise, and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and sound, and well and sufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things fit, needful, and necessary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall, with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of _____ with all such Goods and Merchandize as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean Time lade and put on board of her, and therewith directly sail, and apply unto _____ as Wind and Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as near to the said Place of _____ he the said Master, or Assigns, shall and will, within _____ working Days next, from and after such her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandize put on board the said Ship at _____ aforesaid, unto the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, relade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchandize, as they or any of them shall there please to lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the main mast, Room only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and Apparel,

no conves, e adiante do masto grande, Salvante os lugar pellos mantimentos, enxarcias e aparelhos do ditto Navio, e os dittos dias de trabalho sendo acabados ou o ditto navio sendo ali mais depressa despachado, o que primeiro succeder elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus constituintes com a primeira boa occasião de tempo e vento favoravel em dereitura navegarão e tornarão a vir com o ditto Navio e a Sua Carga do ditto porto de descarregar, e recaregar de aqui dentro de

dias de trabalho logo depois da entrada do ditto Navio dada na alfandega desta ditto

elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes descarregarão e eutregarão as dittas fazendas e mercadorias carregadas abordo do ditto Navio ao seu descarregar e recaregar sobre ditto aos

dittos homens de negocio, e os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, ou Constituintes em salvamento, salvante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Principes e Governadores, e assim se acabara a ditto destinada Viagem

E os dittos homens de negocio concertam, prometem, e otorgam por elles mesmos e qualquer delles, ou seus, e qualquer de seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes por estes presentes: que os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Feitores ou Constituintes não somente descarregarão e recaregarão o ditto navio ao seu porto de descarregar, e recaregar de sobre ditto, e despacharão e descarregarão o mesmo neste na maneira e forma acima declarada: e dentro dos certos dias e tempos sobre nomeados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete que se vencer, para se pagare pedir por e durante esta presente destinada viagem; bem e verdadeiramente pagarão ou Causarão que se pague ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes a summa de

de dinheiro corrente de

na maneira e forma

Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unloading and relading Port of afore said, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the Port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on board the said Ship at her lading and relading afore said, unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, in safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers, excepted, and so end the said intended Voyage; and the said Merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to and with the said Master, his Executors and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, that their Executors, Administrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unloading and relading Port of afore said, and dispatch and discharge the same at this in the Manner and Form as above expressed, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and duly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, the Sum of of lawful Money of in the Manner and Form following: That is to say, Part thereof within

forma seguinte ; Afaber parte delle
dentro em dias despois da entrada
do ditto navio dado na alfandega de

Item mais delle dentro em dias proxi-
mo seguintes, e o restante do ditto frete inteiro
dentro em dias logo ; despois da descarga
do ditto Navio aqui em sobre ditto, E

acordase reciprocamente por e entre ambas as par-
tes por elles mesmos, os seus particulares Testamen-
teiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos
portos que se vencerem para pagar-se ou pedir-se, du-
rante esta presente destinada viagem ; serão pagados
e satisfeitos na maneira e forma seguinte ; Afaber

delles pellos dittos homens de negocio ou
seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes : Alem disso,
por este se concerta que podra ser e seja licito aos e
pellos dittos homens de negocio, os seus feitores ou
Constituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao
seu porto descarga e recarga sobre ditto, e tam-
hem a sobre ditto tanto tempo e tantos dias que
se requireirão, alem dos dias certos acima apontados
salvo que não passem dias por inteiro ;

Elles os dittos homens de negocio, os seus Feitores,
Constituintes por cada-hum e cada tal dia pagando
ao ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em
dia como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquer
 cousa sobreditta em contrario não obstante ; e pello
comprimento de todas, e de cada huma das cousas
acima declaradas, as quaes par parte e pello que to-
ca ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros, Ad-
ministradores ou Constituintes e cada hum delles
são e devem de ser avidas, tidas, observadas e
compridas, O ditto Mestre se obriga a si mesmo, os
seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, juntamente
com o ditto Navio, o seu frete, enxarcias e aparelhos
aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamen-
teiros, Administradores e Constituentes, e cada hum
delles na soma ou pena de dinheiro corrente de

para

Days after the said Ship shall be entered into the Custom House of *Item,*

more thereof within Days then next following, and the remaining part of the said whole Freight within Days next after the

said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at afore said; and it is mutually agreed by and

between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators,

That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in the Manner and Form following; That is to say, thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other thereof by the said

Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unloading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at afore said, over and above the re-

spected Days aforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not Days in the whole, they the

said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master, or his Assigns Day by Day, where the same shall

grow due and payable, any thing afore said to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every

para se pagar bem e verdareiramente por estes presentes e tambem pello comprimento de todas e de cada hum das cousas sobre dittas, os quaes por parte e pello que toca aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Constituintes ou qualquer delles, São e devem de ser guardadas, pagadas e Compridas; os dittos homens de negocio se obrigão a si mesmos, os seus Testamenteiros, e Administradores, junta e separadamente com a suas fazendas que se caregarão abordo do ditto Navio nesta presente destinada viagem, ao ditto Mestre aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e a cada hum delles, na semelhante Soma da pena de de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ser pagado bem e verdadeiramente por estas presentes; Em Testimunha no que as partes Sobredittas affinarão e Sellarão reciprocamente estas presentes Cartas de fretamento contratadas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado.

T. B.

Sellado entregue
adiante de
A. B. C. D.

A Police de Seguro.

Em o Nome de Deos, *Amen.*

Tanto no seu proprio nome, como por ou em o nome ou nomes de todos e cada pessoa ou pessoas a quem o mesmo pertence, possa ou podra pertencer, em parte ou em todo faz o Seguro, causa assi mesmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles de assegurar-se, perdidos ou não perdidos

sobre qualquer genero de fazendas e Mercadorias qualquer carregadas ou para se carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome da Carga
de

de toneladas, P. M. do que he Mestre debaixo de Deos C. T. M. ou quem quer que for por Mestre do ditto Navio ou o Mestre delle se nomea ou nomeara; principiando a aventura sobre as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de, e logo despois de carregallas abordo do ditto Navio e assim se continuara e ficara ate que o ditto Navio com as dittas fazendas e Mercadoriãs quaesquer chegar

e as mesmas ahi descarregadas em Salvamento; e sera licito pello ditto navio, nesta viagem, de parar e deterse em quaesquer portos ou lugares sem prejuizo a este Seguro. As

dittas fazendas e Mercadorias por concerto, são e serão avaliadas em Sem que se de outra

contra dellas mesmas, Tocante as Venturas e riscos com que nos os asseguradores contentamonos e que tomamos sobre nos nesta viagem, Ellas são dos Mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos, Cossaios, ladrões, Roubadores, Jettezonas ou fazendas perdidas e deitadas no mar, lettres de Marte, e contra Marte, sobresaltos tomadias no Mar, citações, tolhimentos e detenças de todos os Reys, Principes e povos de nação condição ou qualidade qualquer, barratria e contrastes enganofas do mestre e dos Marinheiros, e de todos os outros perigos; perdas e desastres que ja vierão ou que virão ou prejuizo, desaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazendas e mercadorias, ou de alguã parte dellas. E se acaço succeder alguma perda ou desventura, sera licito aos Asseguradores, Feitores, Servos e Constituintes de mandar fazer diligencias e trabalhar por, em, e acerca da defeza, Salvamento, e recobrimento das dittas fazendas e mercadorias, ou de alguma parte dellas sem prejuizo ao deste Seguro, aos gastos do que nos os Asseguradores contribuiremos cada hum conforme a Sua contia nelle assegurada; e nos os Asseguradores estamos de acordo e concerto que esta escriptura e seguro tera tanta força e valor como
a mais

or thereabouts; wherefore P. M. is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or who-soever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called; beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Lading thereof aboard the said Ship and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without prejudice to this Assurance.

The said Goods and Merchandise by Agreement, are and shall be valued at without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Men of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jetsons, Letters of Marque and Counter-marque, Surprisals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandise, or any part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured Factors, Servants, and Assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the said Goods and Merchandise or any part thereof, without Prejudice to this Assurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Assurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein assured: And it is agreed by us the Insurers,

a mais authentica Police ou escritura de Seguro dantes feita em qualquer parte de E assim nos os Asseguradores fomos contentes e por este prometemos e obrigamonos cada hum por sua propria parte, os nossos Eredeiros, Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes pello verdadeiro comprimento das cousas acima declaradas, confessando que estamos pagos e satisfeitos do que se nos deve aconta deste Seguro.

Em testimonha do que nos os Asseguradores, affirmamos ao pe deste com as contias asseguradas, &c.

Eu A. B. Sou Contente com este Seguro }
por cem libras Esterl. L. em de } £.100

O Conhecimento.

DIGO eu T. B. de Mestre ou Capitão que sou do Navio que Deos salve por Nome que ao presente esta furto e ancorado no porte de para com o favor de Deos seguir a sua viagem ao porto de aonde he minha direita descarga, que he verdade, que recebi, e tenho carregado dentro do ditto Navio debaixo de cuberta enxuto e bem acondicionado de Marcado da marca de fora o qual me obrigo e prometo, levandome Deos a bom salvamento o ditto Navio ao ditto Porto de entregar em nome do sobredito a T. M. auzente a quem seus poder tiver pagando-me de frete para assim comprir e guardar, obrigo minha pessoa e bems e ditto Navio em certeza do qual dei tres conhecimentos de hum theor assinados por mim ou por meu Escrivaõ, hum comprado

I *A. B.* am contented with this Assurance for
One hundred Pounds. Witnesses my Hand }
The 15th of March, 1808. { £.100

SHIPPED, by the Grace of God, in good Order, and well-conditioned, by _____ in and upon the good Ship called the _____ where-of _____ is Master under God, for this present Voyage _____ and now riding at Anchor in _____ and, by God's Grace, bound for to say _____ being marked and numbered as in the Margin _____ and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well-conditioned, at the afore-said Port of _____ the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr. _____ or his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Average, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master and Purser of the said Ship has affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accomplished, the other two to stand

prido os outros não valham ; feito em
14 de Março de 1808 Anno..

Do que contein não fei.

O Instrumento ou Escriitura de Compromisso.

A TODOS quantos este presente Instrumento ou Escriitura de Compromisso virem, de nos Acredores de G. M. Mercador de Saude ; Em como ditto G. M. ao presente fica devendo e em direito deve a nos os Acredores d'elle ditto G. M. varias e diversas summas e Dinheiro, &c. As quas em rasão de muitas dividas e algumas dellas mui grandes, que tambem em direito se lhe devem a elle, nem se podem arrecadár sem alguma dilação de tempo, e por ferem algumas dellas irrecuperaveis sem demanda, elle está por ora muito defabilitado de fazer págamento a nos os seus Acredores da nossa inteira e justa divida conforme a sua vontade e desejo ; ao respeito de que, elle nos pede com todo o encarecimento que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos fossimos servidos de dar e conceder a elle o Ditto G. M. aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, ou Constituintes, tanta largueza o dilação de tempo pello pagamento e fatisfação de nossas dividas particulares que lhe parecer justo e rasão pello alcance e cobrança das dittas dividas ; Afaber, que nos e cada hum de nos ficassemos contentes a tomar e receber de nossas dividas inteira sem para se repartirem em partes, para se pagarem em pagamentos diversos na maneira e forma Seguinte : Afaber, o primeiro pagamento della ha de fer e o resto pagar-se-ha em proximo pella inteira paga e Satisfação das dittas dividas especeficadas ; E pello mais pleuario comprimento dos varios pagamentos sobre-dittos

stand void. And so God send the good Ship to her desired Port in Safety. Amen. Dated in
on 14th of March 1808.

Inside and Contents unknown.

A Letter of Licence.

TO all People, to whom this present Writing shall come, We the Creditors of G. M. of

Merchant, send greeting. Whereas the said G. M. at this present Time, does stand indebted, and does justly owe unto us the said Creditors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry Sums of Money, &c. which, by reason of many Debts, and some of them very great, that are likewise justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without some Respite of Time, and some of them not without Suit, he is very much disabled at present to make Payment unto us the said Creditors, our whole and just Debt, as he seems willing and desirous ; in consideration whereof, he instantly desires us, That we the said Creditors, and every one of us, would be pleased to give and grant unto the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, such Liberty or Respite of Time, for the Payment and Satisfaction of our several Debts, as he thinks reasonable for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the said Debts : viz. That we and every one of us would be content to take, and accept of our whole Debts in to be divided in Parts, to be paid at several Payments, in Manner and Form following : viz. The first Payment thereof to be and the Residue to be paid at next in full Payment and Satisfaction of the said several Debts : And for the more full Performance of the said several Payments aforesaid, in such Manner and Form

dittos em tal maneira e forma como acima se limita e declara, ao verdadeiro intento destas presentes elle o ditto G. M. ao ou antes do fera obrigado a nos os dittos acredores na mesma conformidade, por huma obrigação que se fara na melhor forma de dereito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lugares convenientes de nos os dittos Acredores nomeados, e a pena de cada huma das obrigações ha de ser dobrada da Summa inteira inclusa nella mesma para ser a nos entregue e a cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, ou Constituintes, ao ou antes do proximo Seguinte data desta; por esta causa Saiba-se; que nos os dittos Acredores aqui em baixo assinados, e cada hum de nos para si em particular, e por seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao respeito do emcima especificado e declarado, por estes presentes de vontade propria consentimos, contratamos, prometemos e concordamos ao e com o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes. por estes presentes que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, aceitaremos do ditto G. M. dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada huma de taes dividas e contias dinheiro do ditto G. M. a nos e cada hum de nos, de vidas e vencidas na virtude de taes obrigaçoens, Segurança ou Seguranças sobredittas para se pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima se limitão e requerem. E alem disso, que nos os dittos Acredores e cada hum de nos, ou nossos e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, em conformidade ao entregue da ditta Obrigação a nos e a cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes ao custo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, Sellaremos assinaremos e

na

Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true meaning of these Presents, he the said G. M. shall and will, at, or before the become bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every one of the Payments in such Sort as is above limited, at some convenient Place or Places by each of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be doubled the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered unto us, and every one of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under-written, and every one of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly consent, covenant, promise and agree to and with the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, to accept of the said G. M. his Executors and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and Sums of Money by the said G. M. unto us, and every one of us, owing, and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due Form of Law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general Release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date
and

na melhor forma e dereito entregaremos ao ditto G. M. a noſſa geral e ſufficiente deſcarga, para ſer rendida por elle o ditto G. M. ou ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores, e Conſtituintes a data e a limitação antes do dia e data deſta obrigação nova; em teſtimunha do que a eſta temos affinado e ſellado ao dia e no anno, &c.

A Letra de Cambio.

Londres,

por 300 Milreis.

A VISTA deſta minha primeira Letra de Cambio, pagará Vm. ao Senhor T. M. ou Ordem a Contia de treſentos Milreis em dinheiro corrente de Portugal, o Valor recebido do Senhor T. D. a tempo fãra bom pagamento, lançando-a na conta como por avifo de

Ao Senhor T. M. Mercador
em Liſboa.

S. D. V. M.
T. M.

Lisboa em do

1807, por 250l. Starl.

A QUARENTA Dias Viſta deſta minha Segunda Letra de Cambio, (a primeira não ſendo paga-da) pagara Vm. ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou Ordem a Summa de dozentas e Cinquenta libras Eſterlinas em moeda corrente de Ingalaterra, o valor recebido do Senhor J. D. a tempo fãra bom pagamento acentando-a na conta com por avifo de

Ao Senhor T. B. Mercador.
em Londres.

H. S.

and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this new Obligation, to be made for the Debt. In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals. Dated the 15th of May, 1808.
Ec.

Bills of Exchange.

London, 5th of June 1808,

for 300 Milreas.

AT Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange, please to pay to Mr. T. M. or Order, the Sum of Three Hundred Milreas in current Money of Portugal, Value received of Mr. T. D. at Time, make good Payment, placing it to Account, as per Advice, from, SIR,
To Mr. T. M. Merchant Yours, H. S.
in Lisbon. T. M.

Lisbon, 7th of June 1808.

for 250*l.* Sterling.

AT Forty days Sight, of this my second Bill of Exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or Order, the Sum of two Hundred and fifty Pounds Sterling, in current Money of England, Value received of Mr. J. D. at Time, make good Payment, and place it to Account, as per Advice, from SIR,
To Mr. T. B. Merchant Yours, H. S.
in London, F. P.

A

O protesto de huma Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todas a quem esta presente escritura tocar que aos _____ do mez de, do anno de _____ ao requerimento de P. C. Mercador de _____ eu M. N. Tabilião de notas jurado e admitido pella autoridade del Rei, &c. fui á casa da morada do Senhor T. B. sobre quem a Letra de Cambio emcima referida he facada, e mostrei a original ao ditto T. B. requerendo a sua aceitação della: o que me respondeo que não aceitaria a ditta Letra por humas rasões que escrevesse ao Senhor T. P. o facador; pella qual razão eu o ditto Tabilião protestei, por estes presentes protesto, tanto contra o ditto F. P. o facador como tambem contra o ditto T. B. sobre quem e facada, demais contra todas as outras pessoas, Endorsadores, ou outras nella interessadas, por todos os Cambios, Recambios, danos e interesses quaesquer: Em presença de H. J. S. T. chamados por Testemunhas a este presente acto feito no meu Escritorio em o dia e anno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

*Varias Formas de Recibos.**Dinheiro recebido por inteiro.*

RECEBI 1 Janeiro, do Senhor Thomas Crew, Seis Livras Sete Chilins Seis peniques por inteiro comprimento de todas as contas, por

Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.

RECEBI a 22 de Fevereiro, do Sr. Jonas Lee, quatro Livras e Cinco Chilins por Conta de meu amo Moises Trust, por.

Din-

A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all Persons whom this present Writing may concern, that the _____ of _____ in the Year _____ at the Request of Mr. P. C. of _____ Merchant, T. M. N. Public Notary, sworn and admitted by Authority of his most sacred Majesty, did go to the Dwelling-house or Habitation of Mr. T. B. upon whom the above named Bill of Exchange is drawn, and shewed the Original unto the said Mr. T. B. demanding his Acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same Bill, for some Reasons he should write Mr. F. P. the Drawer, Wherefore I the said Notary did protest, and by these Presents protest, as well against the said F. P. the Drawer, as likewise against the said T. B. upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other Persons, Indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages and Interest whatsoever, in Presence of H. J. and S. T. called for Witnesses to this present Act, done in my Office in _____ the Day and Year above mentioned.

M. N. Notary Public.

Various Forms of Receipts.

Money received in Full.

RECEIVED 1st January 1808, of Mr. Thomas Crew, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands per

For another's Use.

RECEIVED 22d February, 1808, of Mr. Jonas
Lee, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my
Master Moses Trust, per
* H Money

Dinheiro recêbido em parte.

RECEBI a 30 de Março, 1808, do Sr. Jacinto Cook, Cinco Livras Cinco Chilins, em parte de doze Livras e dez Chilins, por Conta de meu pai Antonio Truelove, por

*Dinheiro recebido em parte de Contas que não estão
ajustadas.*

RECEBI a 24 de Abril 1808, da Senhora Martha Rich, por maos de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras a Conta, por

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

RECEBI a 15 de Mayo, 1808, a contia de esta Conta, por

Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta de hum rol.

RECEBI a 6 de Junho, 1808, Sete livras em parte desta Conta, por

*Notas ou Obrigacoens que faz hum Homem
quando toma dinheiro emprestado.*

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1808.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. E. D. Banqueiro do Thesouro de sua Magestade do Excise, ou á sua ordem quarenta dias despois da data desta obrigação quatro centas e trinta livras por valor recebido

£.430

p Christovão Wade.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. Paulo Barker cavalheiro ou a sua ordem em sendo requerido trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Chilins

Money received in Part.

RECEIVED 30th of March, 1808, of Mr. James Cook, Five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father Anthony Truelove, per

Money received on Accounts unsettled.

RECEIVED 24th April 1808, of Mrs. Martha Rich, by the Hands of Peter Cornet, Eleven Pounds on Account, per

When a Bill is paid in Full.

RECEIVED 15th May, 1808, the full Contents hereof, per

When a Bill is paid in Part.

RECEIVED 26th June, 1808, Seven Pounds in Part hereof, per

Promissory Notes for a Man's Self.

London, June 4th 1808.

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. Edward Draper, Cashier of his Majesty's Revenue of Excise, or Order, forty Days after Date, Four Hundred and Thirty Pounds. Value received

£. 430

per Christopher Wade.

I PROMISE to pay to Paul Barker, Esq. or Order, on demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence,

lins e Seis peniques por valor recebido hoje 17 de Julho, 1808.

£. 394 2 6

per Philip Venham.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. J. T. ou a sua ordem, quarenta e nove livras, e tres Chilins 6 mezes despois da data desta obrigação por valor recebido em verdade do que assignei hoje 24 de Agosto 1808.

£. 49 3

N. B. Observe-se que em notas ou obrigaçoens sempre se declara a foma recebida sem a qual não são de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

Value received this 17th of July, 1808.

£. 394 2 6

per Philip Venham.

I PROMISE to pay to Mr. J. T. or Order, Forty
nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after Date
Value received. Witness my Hand this 24th of
August, 1808.

£. 49 3

per William Jones.

N. B. Observe in Promissory Notes that the
words Value received are mentioned, or they are
of no Force.

A NEW

PORTUGUESE

GRAMMAR.

PART IV.

CONTAINING

*Several useful and entertaining Passages, where-
of the greatest Part is collected from the best
Portuguese Writers, such as Andrade, Bar-
ros, Camoens, Lobo, &c.*

ENTRE os bons ditos de Souzêni, poeta Perfi-
ano, se conta, que bebêdo com outro poeta,
seu amigo, certo licor, se queixava, de que era mu-
ito quente & dizêndolhe, amigo, pobre de ti que
daqui a poucos dias te farão beber no infêrno agoas
sulfurêas, & ardêntes, que te abraçarão as entrân-
has ; não impôrta, replicou Souzeni ; bastará que
me lembre algum dos teus versos, que ellas se farão
mais frias, que neve.

Catharina

Catharina Parthenay sobrinha da célebre *Anna Parthenay*, deu esta bella respósta a *Hénrique IV.* saíba vossa mag^{de} que eu sou muito pobre para ser sua consorte; e que no mesmo tempo descendo de huma família muito illústre, para ser sua dama.

Huma Princéza Cathólica, e de rara virtúde vendo reduzido o Marichal de Saxonia ás agonias da morte, disse, que éra pará sentir o não se poder rezar hum *De profundis* pella alma de hum que tinha feito cantár tantos *Te Deum*.

A Dom *Christovão de Moura*, Marquéz de Castello Rodrigo, e Vice Rey de Portugal por Dom *Philipe Tercéiro*, hindo por huma sala do Paço de Lisboa, hum soldádo honrádo, que tinha bem servido na India, lhe dáva hum memoriál, e pedía, que se lembrásse dos seus papeis, porque havia largo tempo, que andáva pretendendo. Respondéo-lhe o Marquéz, que havia muita *Gente* pará despachár, e não se podião despachár todos com brevidade; o soldádo adiantando o passo se atravessou diante sem descomposição, e fazendo parár-o Vice Rey lhe disse com grande confiança; *senhór Dom Christovão despache Vs. os homens, e deixe a Gente.* O Marquez aceitou o memoriál, e o despachou no mesmo dia.

Mandando hum Fidálgo em Lisboa abrir em huma rua os Alicerces pará se fazerem humas casas, sem licença da camera, passando por alli o procuradór da cidade, poz pena aos officiães, que não trabalhássem na obra sem licença dos Vereadores; e os officiães dizendo-o ao Fidálgo mandou-lhes elle que não deixássem de trabalhár, e que não fizésssem caso do que dizia aquelle villão ruim; tornando-o procuradór da cidade por allí e achando os officiães trabalhádo, mandou que désssem com elles no tronco; e não faltando quem lhe contásse o que o Fidálgo différa, teve-o em olho; e no tempo que el-

le hía atravessando pello Rocio pará sua casa, sahio-lhe ao camincho a cavállo, e com huma lança que leváva, dando na sua sombra, lhe disse: porque o que diséstes, foi em minha ausência, dou em vossa sombra, se mo tivesséis dito no rosto, dera na vossa pessoa.

Abou Hanifah, o mais célebre doutor dos Musulmanes, tendo recebido huma bofetada, disse ao que o tinha insultado: eu poderia vingarme, pagandovos na mesma moeda; mas não o quero fazer. Poderia accusarvos ao calife: mas não quero ser accusador. Poderia nas minhas orações queixarme a Deos desta affronta; mas nem isso quero fazer. Por fim poderia pedir a Deos, que se quer no dia do juizo vos castigasse; porém o mesmo senhor me livre de semelhante pensamento; mas antes, se succedesse que neste instante chegasse aquelle formidável dia; e se a minha intercessão tivesse alguma efficacia pará com Deos, não quizera por companheiro se não a vos pará entrar no Paraiso. Que admirável exemplo pará os Christãos aprenderem a perdoar as injurias!

De Peregrinação.

Passadas que se dão peregrinando, são degrãos pará a casa do desengano. Das suas fontes sahem os rios muito pequénos, e crecem correndo, e levão mares ao mar. Hómens, que da sua terra nao sahem, são navios, que acabão no estaleiro. A sabedoria como vinda do céu, anda neste globo terréstre perigrina, não he facil achála senão peregrinando; errando por este mundo, se aprende a não comettér erros. Vapores, que na terra eram lodo, apartados della se fazam estrellas. Aos homens que querem luzir, déve a pátria servir, como aos planétas o horízonte, de berço, pará ensayo do seu luzimento, longe do ponto ortivo, e remontados a mais alta região, apúrrão as influências, e duplicão as luzes. Que nome terião hoje

hoje no mundo *Socrates*, *Pithagoras*, e *Platão*, e outros sábios da antiguidade, se a modo de cepos, ou troncos, que aonde nascerão fazem rais, e no seu priméiro chão apodrecem, não buscárão fora da Patria as notícias, que lhes faltávão. Não se ornára *Hercules* com os despojos dos Monstros, que domou, se os não fora buscár pelo mundo; á sua dilatada viagem devem os Argonautas a conquista do vello de ouro; Se não corréra *Ulysses* remotos climas, fóra a Aldéa de *Ithaca* de toda a sua gloria o theatro. Homens perpetuamente caseiros, são gallos, que só sabem do seu poleiro. Sábios peregrinos, imitam no seu curso as fontes, que passando por veas de prata, ouro, esmeraldas, e safiras, tomão, e consigo levão a flor de suas preciosas qualidades. Zombe embora *Plutarco* dos que louvão a peregrinação, e diga, que se parácem com os que julgão as estréllas errantes mais nobres, e felices, que as fixas. Não a escola mais util para a vida, que as muitas vidas ou modos de viver, que na variedade das Nações se observa. Vem se muitas cousas nunca vistas; aprendem se muitas, que se não sabião, faz se o homem capaz de toda a casta de negócios, e folga de vér este mundo, antes de sahír d'elle. Até para os príncipes, que das suas cortes fazem na terra o seu paraíso, bom he que peregrinem, para conhecêrem o mundo, que elles governão. Os commodos, as delicias, os obsequios dos súbditos, podem dar a conhecér a hum homem, que nascéo soberano, mas com este conhecimêto, não o fazem digno da soberania: se não sahíra *Alexandre* da sua *Macedonia*, não passára dos limites de régulo e não chegára a avassallar o mundo.

Do Tempo futuro.

Trate o homem do presente, e não quíra penetrar no futuro; quem de tão longe põem a mira, não póde dar no alvo. Muitas vezes bom hé ignorar o que ha de succeder; porque se fór bem, a dilacção

lação ha tórmento; e se for máo, o trabálio he sem proveito. Para futúros, não ha segurança. Ao Embaixadór, que na guerra movida por Luix XI. Rey de França, a Carlos Duque de Borgónha, procuráva attrahir ao Emperadór Fredérico, com proméssa de que se repartírem com elle os despójos, e os estádos, respondéo o dito Emperadór com este apólogo: tres caçadóres com a esperança de apanhárem hum urso, se comprometterão na repartição delle. Chegádos á boca da cavérna, sahio a fera com tão grande impeto, que hum dos caçadóres botou a fugir, outro subio a huma árvore, e o outro se estendéo no chaõ fingindo-se morto; chegouse o urso a elle, poz lhe o focinho no nariz, e nos ouvidos, e não lhe concedéo sólego, nem final de vida, o deixou por morto. O que estava na árvore, disse ao companhéiro; hómem, que te disse o urso, quando te fallou á puridade, com o focinho nos ouvidos? Disseme que era mal feito, dispór da pelle, e carne do urso, antes de o vérem morto. Com isto o Emperadór déu a entender ao Embaixadór, que éra preciso apanhárem priméiro ao Duque de Borgónha, que depóis se trataria de repartição dos seus estádos. Dos successos do tempo futuro, só Deos tem certéza.

Dos Ricos.

Os Antigos Patriarchas éraõ ricos só em gado. Os Banquéiros são ricos em dinhéiro. Os Príncipes são ricos em terras, & Senhórios. Em lugáres este-reis, sem hervas, nem plantas produz a naturéza o ouro, para mostrár que os amadóres das riquézas não tem fé, nem honra. Os ricos facinorófos, que ainda que celebrádos nas histórias, são o oppróbrio da sua posteridade, poderião ter boa fama, se lhes não facilitára este metal a execuçaõ de seus danádos inténtos. Em todas as idádes fórão as riquézas antagonístas da virtúde; ellas inventarão os mais enórmes delítos; ellas ensinarão os filhos a tirár a seus pais

pais a vida ; enfiñarão os poderófos a opprimir os innocétes, arruinár as famílias, faqueár os templos, & despír os altáres ; ellas induzirão os amigos a que faltáſſem á fé, incitárão os vaſſállos a negár aos príncipes a obediência, a os libidinóſos dérão meyos para violár a pudicícia das donzéllas, e eſtragár a honra dos maridos : finalménte ellas ainda que boas para a vida civil, são causa de todos os males ; e poſto que os sábios ſe ſoubérão aproveitár dellas, o cobiça, é o mau uſo das meſmas, enchêrão o mundo todo de criminóſos. Hómens ricos ordinariaménte ſe pérdem, por térem muito, e ſabérem pouco ; deſprêzão o ſabér, porque lhes paréce, que para todo o género de vida, lhes baſta o ter. A Ariſtippo perguntóu Dionyſio, porque razão os filósofos frequentávão as cazas dos ricos, e não os ricos as dos filósofos. Reſpondéo Ariſtippo, que os filósofos conhécem o que lhes falta, e os ricos ignóráo o de que neceſſitão. Senhores ricos, e filósofos pobres, não pódem fazer couſas grandes, porque a eſtes lhes falta dinhéiro, e áquelles eſpírito. Dizia Diogenes, que muitos ricos são como as plantas, que náſcem em deſértos, e deſpenhadéiros, porque dos frutos, que ellas dão, não cómem os homens, mas corvos, bilháſres, e feras ; também as riquêzas de muitos não ſão para fugéitos beneméritos, mas para cho-carreiros, eſpadachins, ruſiões, e meretrizes.

De Liberalidade.

A liberalidade he huma virtúde moral que ſabe diſpendér as riquêzas em bom uſo. Ariſtotles diz, que he virtúde, que com o dinhéiro, e fazênda ſe moſtra benéfica aos homens. Segúndo a definição dos filósofos modérnos, he virtúde moderada do affécto humano no dar, e no recebér riquêzas humanas, unicamente pelo motivo do honeſto. Na liberalidade não ſão actos incompatíveis o dar e o recebér, nem o liberal ſe ha de envergonhar de recebér ; porque

que dar sempre, e nunca recebér, he caminho certo para em breves espaços não ter mais que dar. Brevemente se secarão os rios, se o mar dando sempre do seu, não recebêsse do alheio, mas dando, e recebendo, se faz o círculo de perpetuo movimento, com que se sustenta o mar e se fertiliza a terra. O liberal não da para recebér, mas recebendo para dar, da no mesmo tempo que recebe, recebendo de huns com a mão, e dando aos outros com atenção. Pintarão os antigos a liberalidade em figura de molhér, com a cornucopia em huma mão, e hum compásso na outra. Na cornucopia significávão a inclinação em dar; e no compásso denotávão as medidas, que a prudência ha de guardár nas dadas. Dar com excêssô, he extinguir a liberalidade; o muito óleo apaga a luz; conserva se esta virtude com effusão moderada; dar pouco a pouco, e em diversos tempos, he saboreár o gosto de dar; quem da com attenção, esta com ânimo de dar mais. Não he bem fechár a arca de sorte que se não pôssa abrir; nem convém abrilla de maneira, que se não torne a fechár. Chuvas de ouro são farguezas de Deóses; ainda assim andou Jupiter moderado nesta preciosa profusão; porque não cáhe de pancada a agua da chuva mas a gota, e gota se distribue. Porém ao rigor desta ley não estão obrigados os Príncipes, que tem muito que dar; porque o seu melhor thesouro he o coração dos súbditos; tanto mais se augmenta este erário, quanto mais o da fazenda real se despéja. Repartindo Alexandre com os Macedónios os seus dominios, se abriu caminho para conquistar o mundo. Principalmente com litteratos, e homens dóutos foi liberalíssimo. A Aristoteles em remuneração do trabálho que tomou em indagar a natureza; e propriedades dos animaes, deo de hum jacto o valor de quatrocentos e oitenta mil escúdos. De Cyro, cognominado o Grande, escreve Atheneo, que a Pythareo, seu doméstico, fizera hum donativo de sete cidades. De Julio Cezar escreve Seneca, que

que das suas victórias não queria ó outro proveito, que o poder, e o gosto de distribuir com os seus soldádos os despójos. Em nenhuma cousa mais se parecem os monarcas com Deos, que em dar; celebra Cassiodoro o liberalidade de hum Príncipe, que para alegrar o povo, não reparava em fazer gastos exorbitantes. Este género de larguezas não arruina o estado, porque alivia o povo. Nem estas devem ser estrago: só Deos, cujos thesouros são inexhaustos, póde dar sempre, e a todos. Entre os antigos Romanos era inviolável a ley, que mandava que ninguém gastasse em festa pública, sem provér do necessário os pobres do seu bairro: tomavão por afronta, que andassem hums homens por portas, quando estavão outros brindando nas mesas. A este propósito dizia Platão, que na cidade em que muito pobre mendiga, ha muito ladrão que furta. Mas para que he dar regras, e ajuntar documentos, para huma virtude, que a mofina, ou a cobiça desterrou do mundo. Hoje a liberalidade he como aquelles rios que fumidos na terra, nunca mais são vistos.

Da Liberdade.

A liberdade he hum estado natural, no qual tem o homem todos os movimentos da sua vontade independentes, e livres. Esta he a liberdade da alma, a que nem as influencias dos astros, nem a presciencia divina, nem os divinos decretos, nem os ameaços dos tirannos necessitam a querér, ou não querér; porque Deos a deo ao homem, com livre alvedrio, e poder absoluto, para observár, ou quebrantar sua divina lei. O corpo pelo contrario he sujeito a todo o género de cativieiros. Forma se na prisão do ventre materno, apenas nascido, fica envolto, e preso nas faxas; livre desta escrayidão cáhe na da puerícia, sujeito aos açoutes; nos confins da adolescência, esperão por elle tiránnicas paixões, e crueis appetites
para

para o despojar do resto da liberdáde ; cada arte, ou cada sciência a que se applica, he huma carga de regras, hum oppressão de precéitos. Em idade mayór ; achaques, e doências o encravão na cama, donde cahe para a cova, em hum cativéiro que não tem resgate. Ainda assim, no meyo de todas as pensões, e prisões da sua triste vida, logra o homen no seu trato hum certa liberdáde, da qual ninguem se quer privar, por não viver violentado. Até os animaes, as feras, e os mais vis insectos, procurão defendér, e conservár a liberdáde, que lhes deo a naturéza. Finalmente os elementos, ainda que insensíveis, se esforçam para vencér os obstáculos, que os cativão : voará o fogo hum monte, por não ficar constipado na mina ; indignada do freyo de hum dique trespordará a agua, e alagará huma província : impaciente de clausura de lugáres subterraneos, abalará o ar hum reino, e com horríveis tremóres abrirá a cidades intéiras profundas sepulturas. Não he logo maravilha, que fação os homens tantos extremos para conservarem a liberdáde própria do seu estado. Diogenes aquelle famoso desprezador de quanto cubica a ambição dos homens, para se ver livre das fugeições deste mundo, se revolvía no seu dolio, como planéta de differente esfera, e tendo valor para recusar a graça de Alexandre, não teve animo para se fugeitar ao jugo da Corte. Não queremos senhór, por brando que elle seja, (dizia Demofthenes) receoso da dominação da Antipater. A liberdáde he hum bem que se não deve perdér se não com o sangue. Não he senhor de si, quem a outrem fugeitou a lingua. Hum só homem, que queira, e saiba fallar a tempo, faz callar, e tremér a muitos ; póde ser causa da conservação de hum reino, que o silêncio perderia. Neste perigo esteve o império Romano, reinando Tibério, tempo em que (segundo escreve Tacito) o fallar era delito. Não tem outro açoute as culpas dos grandes, que o de huma lingua, generosamente solta. Absténhasse de obrár mal, quem

quem quizer que se falle bem. A verdáde muda introdúz a tirannia. Téve graça huma moça, filha de certo homem rico de Lisbóa, a qual perguntáda, porque não queria casár com hum fugéito, que a pedía a seu pay sem dote; disse que por não perdér a liberdáde, que as outras mulhéres tem, quando téndo differenças com seus maridos, podem com razão dizér, que os comprarão com o que ellas lhes dérão em casamento.

Das Demándas.

Litigios são chagas do estado, e minas das famílias. Qualquer demánda he huma furia infernal, que tudo descompõem, e tira a todos do seu lugar. Da cultura da terra tira ao lavrador, do commercio ao mercador, do altar ao sacerdote. Litigios são os filhos do Chaos e da noite, tudo nelles são confusões, e trevas. São hum funesto compósito de todos os males; tem na ira incêndios, no rancor veneno, no dolo ciladas, na vingança rayos. Diante das demándas anda o dezejo da fazenda alheya; aos lados a falsidade, o engano, a mentira, a perfidia: vem atrás o arrependimento, e a pobreza, com pés de chumbo se ha de entrár em litigios, e fugir delles com azas de aguia, sempre procurão os bons politicos atalhar os litigios, e abafallos no seu nascimento. Com este intento fizerão os Cyrénios huma ley, pela qual os homens litigiosos e demandistas éráo chamados para diante dos Juizes, chamados Ephoros, e este depois de os multar, os declarávão infames. Dizia Catão, que para bem se havião enchér as audiências, de estrepes, e abrólhos, para as partes não irem pleitear sem perigo de quebrar as pernas. Os antigos Romanos lavantárão na sua mayor audiência a estatua de Marfyas, com huma corda na mão dando a entendér, que quem sem razão movesse demánda a alguém, encurreria na mesma pena que o dito Marfyas, a quem por contendér com Apóllo temerariamente

rariaménte fobre as ventágens da música, os juizes mandárão dar garróte. Antigaménte os juizes deixávão pendurados em hum prégo todos os pleitos problemáticos, ou feitos, em que havia razões para julgár pro e contra. Por isso Claudio Henrique, julgadór Parisiénse, em huma das suas orações forense traz o cazo da mulhé de Smyrna, que por haver dado peçonha a seu marído, os Areopagitas, seus juizes, a absolvérão para cem annos, por quanto este mesmo seu marído havia morto hum filho do priméiro casaméto da dita mulher, e na causa intentada havia compensação de delíto. Toda a pessóá, que se poem a litigár, se engólfa em hum mar de provas, futilézas, e trapáças, que tem por praya, e porto, a pobreza, e a morte. O peyor he, que neste conflicte, o gasto he das partes; e o proveito dos advogádos. Em quanto com as raas pelejão os ratos, vem o minhóto, e papa tudo. A rapóza que vío o leão, e o urso cansados de pelejár fobre o logro de huma préza, ainda que naturalmente muito tímida, se foi chegádo, e lévou comsigo a matéria da conténda. As ruinas de dous enriquecem o tercéiro.

Da Lisónja.

A lisónja he huma nimia complacência, e affectada finéza em louvár as prendas, obras, ou palavras alhéyas. Mal suáve, doce venéno, vicio cortesão, brando verdúgo da verdáde, escándalo dos animos generôfos, e só de espíritos humildes indígna estimação. O boy, rústico quadrúpede, permite que o enfeitem; o leão, generósa fera facóde de si os enfeites da cama. Compóz Aristóbulo hum livro, chéyo de lisónjas, fobre a victória que Alexandre alcançara del rey Poró; tomóu o magnánimo príncipe o livro, e lançádo o ao mar, disse; meréce o author semelhante Castígo. Também da sua corte lançou Alexandre ao famoso escultór Stasicrates, que se offerecêra a fazér-lhe de todo o monte Athos huma estátua. Notável artífice he o lisonjeiro, para todas as caras
tem

tem carêtas, e calçados para todos os pés ; mas todas as suas obras são postiças, e todo o seu artificio fingimento. A sua mayor destreza está em conformar o som da sua lyra com a picada da Tarantula. Com esta aſſonância, ou conſonância ſe fez Sejano tão abſoluto ſenhôr da vontade de Tibério, que ſendo eſte Príncipe para todos diſſimulado, ſó era facil, e ſincero para Sejano. O Liſonjeiro, para viver a ſombra do ſeu Príncipe, ſe faz do ſeu Príncipe ſombra, que aſſim como a ſombra he o bugio do corpo, anda com elle, e com elle para ; com elle ſe deita, e ſe levanta ; ſe tem corcova, ſe encurva ; e ſe coxea, claudica ; aſſim para o liſonjeiro he perfeição arremedar até os defeitos do príncipe. Na corte de Antigono, que tinha o collo torto, os cortesãos ſe fizeram torcicollos. Eſta depravada imitação do Príncipe he ruina da monárchia, porque he veneno da verdade. Não tem eſta mayor inimigo, que o falſete do intereſſe, que ordinariamente faz o compaſſo na muſica dos palacianos. Pinta ſe a liſonja em figura de mulher tocando huma frãuta, com hum veado aos pés, adormecido ao ſom deſte instrumento ; no veado ſe representa o Príncipe, que vencido da ſuavidade da liſonja, fecha os olhos a verdade. Com cem olhos guardava Argos a Io, convertida em vacca, começou Mercúrio a tocar tam ſuavemente, que os cem olhos de Argos ſe fecharão, e teve Mercúrio poder para lhe tirar com a vacca a vida. A's falſas adulações dos Aulicos de Vitellio attributa a hiſtória à cegueira do orgulho, e crueldade deſte Príncipe. Era Veſpaſiano de natural brando, e benigno, com liſonjeiras falſidades o induzirão ſeus cortesãos a carregár de tributos o povo. Finalmente muitas vezes mayores danos faz a lingua do liſonjeiro, que a eſpada do inimigo.

Da Vingança.

Toda a vingança particular, e privada, he usurpação do poder, e da juſtiça pública, e divina. Des-
* I prézão

prêzão nobres ânimos as injúrias de fogeitos vulgares. Não fez Achilles caso das calúrnias de Therfites ; Philippe de Macedónia, e Cesar fórão insensíveis aos tiros da maledicência. Zombóu a Agui de Esópo da peça, que lhe fez o rato ; parecólhe indigno da sua ira, bicho nojento. O vingárse não he restaurar o credito, he confirmárse desacreditado. Com feridas alhévas não se cûrão as próprias, com sangue não se esmáltão injúrias. Enfurecérse aos defacatos de hum furióso, he fazérse espélho da sua bravéza ; rebatér calúrnias, he fazérse ecco de aggrávos. Sé a cada bataria de ondas respondéra o penhásco com huma pedra, brevemente se destruiria o penhásco. Anelár vinganças, he terabérta, e fresca huma ferida, a qual esquecida, estaria encouráda. Injurias lembradas se perpetuão, porque se fázem hereditárias, ellas são a única coufa, que neste mundo o tempo não gasta ; enterrádos renáscem, semelhántes aos rios, que depois de corrér debaixo da terra, tórnão a inundár os campos. Os que com mostras de amizade disfarção o dezêjo de se vingár, são como a nuvem, que vío o profeta Ezequiel ; era cercáda de hum círculo de ouro, mas trazia dentro em si rayos, e tórméntas. A mais nobre vingança he mostrár o offendido, que se póde vingár do offensór ; o não vingárse, he mostrár, que não sentio a offénsa ; e não sentilla ; he prova de ânimo invulnerável. A impassibilidadade he attributo divino. As mulheres são vingativas, porque são frageis ; a sua sensibilidadade he demonstração da sua fraquêza.

Da Loquacidáde.

Ha homens, que não vivêdo de ar, como o camalcónte, continuamênte tem a boca abérta, edella cahe hum dilúvio de palávras, que inúnda os ouvidos, e affóga a gente. Quando ha trovoádas, emmudécem as rãas ; estes são rãas, que em charcos de pantanófas parlêdas atroão o mundo. Huns metidos a políticos, tudo redúzem a razoens de estádo ;
chovem

chovem da sua boca Democracias, Aristocracias, Oligarchias, Ochlocracias, Capitolios, e Areopagos, Triumviratos, e Dictaturas, Plebiscitos, e Senatusconsultos, Leys Municipaes, e Castrênses ; compárrão o govêrno dos Cesares com o dos nossos Principes, as modêrnas com as antigas repúblicas, os costumes de hoje com os dos antepassados, e com infructuôsa navegação correndo mares de sabedoria, ventílão questões, sem dar fundo as matérias. Outros presumidos de geógraphos, sem tropeçar córrem (como diz o vulgo) as sete partidas do mundo ; púxão por zonas, e remótos climas, acarrétão isthmos, e penínsulas, terras árticas, antárcticas, e austrâes incognítas, e quando parece que põem fim, pégão em longitudes, e com latitudes se estêndem. Que diremos do poeta loquaz, mimoso das Musas, e fanfarrão do Parnáso ? A qualquer phrase poética, sente cócegas nos ouvidos, e não ouve fallar em versos, que logo os não traga todos a balla. Hexâmetros, e Pentâmetros, Iâmbos, Sâphicos, Adónicos, Choriâmbicos ; da regras, e precêitos para Coplas Reaes, e Redondilhas, para Sonetos, encadeados, e retrogados ; allêga com poetas nacionaes e estrânhos ; amontôa todos os termos da E'pica, Lyrica, Dramática, Dithyrâmbica ; a ouvillo bêbe de hum gole toda a Hipocrene, e procúra esgotar de hum jacto a Caballina fonte. Compára Plutarcos aos loquâzes com vasos vafios, que são mais que os cheyos. A hum grande falladôr, que depois de huma larga prática pedio a Aristoteles, que lhe perdoasse a moléstia ; respondéo o filósofo : não ténho que perdoar, que eu não tomêi sentido no que distestes. Careon, homem loquáz, pedindo a Isócrates, que lhe ensinasse Rhetorica, pedio Isocrates dobrado salário : e perguntando Careon a razão das duas pagas, respondéo Isócrates : quero hum para ensinarte a fallar, e quero outra, para ensinarte a callar. Grandes falladôres são bespas, que todo o dia estão zunindo, e não fazem mel nem cera. Ho-

mem loquáz (dizia Solon) he cidade sem muros, casa sem porta, návio sem piloto, e cavállo sem freyo. Em cavállo desbocádo ninguem se póem sem medo, sempre se deve temér boca defrenada. Foi tomáda a cidade de Athenas, e destruida por Silla, porque na loja de hum barbêiro os espías deste general ouvirão particár na parte mais fraca da dita cidade.

Da Maledicência.

O dizer mal, he próprio dos que não podem fazer mal. De todos diz mal Pasquinho, que não tem pés nem mãos, e ainda que estivera inteiriço, por fer estatua, e figura immóvel, não pode fazer mal. Dizem que o Papa Adrião VI. lhe mandára dizer, que o faria lançar no rio Tybre; respondéo Pasquinho: Também debaixo da agua canta a rã. Nem está fora de razão, chamáirse rã o maldizente, porque sempre a sua voz he o rúco som de hum chárco; e assim como as rãs, que infestarão a corte de Pharaó, sujarão a prata, o ouro, e as mais ricas alfáyas de palácio, assim se págão os maldizentes á coróa, e tiaras. No proximo não enxérgão os olhos do maldizente se não defeitos. O alvo dos seus inténtos he denigrir, procurar ter fama, infamando, funda em detracção o seu augmento, e de vitupérios espéra louvór. O maldizente he o tigre da república: nao sofre armónias de encómios alhéyos; a sua lingua he cauda de escorpião, sempre em acto de picar; sábe achár cicatríz, aónde não houve chaga; não póupa vivos, nem mortos, nem a amigos, muito menos a inimigos; he verdúgo da reputação, e homicida do crédito; seméa confusóens, e colhe discórdias. Notável defeito he este da lingua humana, para os applausos muda, para vitupérios eloquente. Toda a antiguidade nos déo só tres, ou quatro bons panegy'ricos, todas as sátiras parecerão excelléntes. Aos seus piques

déve

deve Tacito á sua estimação ; muito mais agrada, quando motéja de Tiberio, do que quando celébra a Germánico ; finalmente todos o gábão, porque nunca gabou a ninguém. Mas a virtude, ainda que perseguida de maledícos, não descónfia. Nenhum homem grande, quando calumniado, se repúta pequêno. Tres grandes Emperadores. Theodósio, Arcádio, e Honório, pai, filho, e neto, fizêrão huma lei, aqual manda, que os que cegos da paixão dizem mal, sêjão perdoados, porque a sua maledicência, se procedeo de pouco juizo, meréce desculpa ; se de furor, piedade : se de malinidade, esquecímêto e desprezo.

Prologo de Jacinto Freyre de Andrâde.

São os prologos hum anticipado remédio aos achaques dos livros, porque andão sempre de companhia os erros, e as desculpas. Eu por hora me desvíio do camínho trilhado, nam quero pedir perdão de nada : quem achár que dizêr, não me perdôe, (nem fera necessário encomendálo.) Se me notárem o livro de roim, não negarão que he breve, e escreto em lingua Portuguésa, que tantos engênhos modernos, ou temem ou desprezão, como filhos ingrátos ao primeiro leite, servindo se de vozes estrangeiras, por onde passarão como hóspedes, sem respeito áquellas veneráveis Cans, e ancianidade madura de nossa linguagem antiga. Escreví esta história com verdade de memórias fieis, sem que a penna, ou o affecto alterásse o menor accidente. Antes que este pápel sahisse dos borróens, sei que muitos o taxarão de escasso, dizendo, que houvera de dilatár a história com allusóens, e passos da escriptura, que o fizésssem mais crecido ; estes cómprom os livros pello pezo, nam pello feitio : da mais que nam permíttem, tam licenciôza penna as leys da história. Outros queriam que me valésse do estrepito de vozes novas, a que chamam cultura, deixando

e estráda limpa por camínhos fragózos, e trocádo com effimação pueril, o que he melhór, pello que mais se ufa. Mas como nam determinei lifongear a gostos estragádos, quiz antes com a singeléza da verdáde servir ao apláuso dos melhóres, que á fama popular, e erráda.

*Prologo do Conde da Ericeira ao seu Portugal
Restaurado.*

Esta ceremónia, leitór, de escrevêr Prologo, máis por escusár a censúra de que salto á ley de dar princípio com elle a huma história tão grave, que por me parecer a ley precísa, me resólvo a observála: porque discursádo o fim com que se estabelecéo, avalío por inutil este trabálho, entendédo que na escólha da história, e no acerto do escrevélla consísste toda a fortuna dos authóres. Porque nem a amizade dos leitóres póde encobrir os defeitos do escritór, nem escurecêrlhe os acértos o odio; e entre estes dous extrémos, (ordinariaménte viciófos) se levanta o tribunal da justiça dos desinteressádos, por independétes, ou por não conhecidos, que costumão dar ou louvór por prémio aos beneméritos, e a censúra por castigo aos culpádos.

Huma das mayóres emprézas do mundo he a resolução de escrevêr huma história: porque além de innumerável multidão de inconveniêtes, que he necessário que se venção, e de hum trabálho excessivo, que he preciso, que se supere; no mesmo tempo em que se pretende lográr o fructo de tantas diligências, téndo se vencido formár o inténto, vencêr a lição, assentár o estílo, colhêr as notícias, lançar os borradores, tirálos em limpo, conferilos, e apurálos, quando quem escreve se ánima na emprénha do livro que escrevéo ao pompóso título de authór, então coméça ser réo, e réo julgádo com tão excessiva tirannía, que téndo lingua para fallár de tantas pessóas, como são as que comprehénde qualquer
vólume

volume, a não pôde ter para deixár de ser condemnado sem ser ouvido. Júlgó por muito errada a opinião commua, que affênta, que a historia he paralelo da pintura: porque he tanto mais privilegiado o pintór que o escritór, que teve lugar Apelles, pondo em público huma figura que havia pintado, de lhe emendár a roupa, que hum artífice dellas lhe condemnou por imperfeita, e de castigár o ouzadia de outro, que não sendo pintór se attrevéo a arguir-lhe o perfil da figura. Não he concedida aos escritóres tanta liberdade: porque no mesmo ponto que os finetes do prelo acabarão de sellar a historia que escreverão, logo perderão toda a acção de emendála, e na difficuldade de satisfazer a hum mundo de juizos diversos, fica provado o defangano, de que não pôde haver historia bem avaliada de todos. O sol por que costuma tão repetidamente offerecer-se do berço do oriente ao túmulo do occaso aos olhos do unívérso, se expõem á censura dos que sem penetrar a majestade do seu resplandór, e a utilidade dos seus rayos, fugeitando a razão ao appetite, huns o condemnão de claro quando e calma os aperta, outros de escuro quando o frio os afflige, sem reparar que os latidos do cão celêste, que amedrêntão na canicula os vapóres, de que as nuvens no invérno se formão, são, e não o sol, culpados no rigor da calma, como as nuvens ná asperéza do frio. Que impórta, que a verdade da historia, e puréza do estílo a formem como o sol perfeita, se os leytóres pretêdem avaliála como querem, e não como meréce.

A estas, e outras muitas difficuldades se sujeita quem se resólve a escrever huma historia que pela opinião commua dos historiadores costuma ser se seculos passados, em que mais desaffogados os animos éntão a descubrir a verdade dos succéssos. Porém quaes serão os inconvenientes, quaes perigos quasi invencíveis, a que se arrója quem tomou a te meraria resolução de imprimir em sua vida a história do seu tempo. Em verdade que até imagi-

nado faz horror este intento: porque oppostas, e incompatíveis as obrigações forçadas aos riscos manifestos, não parece possível, apurados, destilarem hum composto profeito; pois faltár á verdade fica sendo infâmia do author, descobrilla nas acções desacertadas, cáhe em descrédito dos comprehendidos. Encarecer os beneméritos, será inveia dos indignos: louvár os viciófos, opprobrio dos beneméritos: contar todos os successos, he empenho invencível: callár alguns póde ser queixa dos interessádos. Nos casos grandes, e ainda nos inferiôres ajustáremse todos em que são verdadeiramente contados, difficul-tosamente se poderá conseguir: porque eu experimentei, achádo-me em quatro batálias, e em outros encontros, com muitos mil homens, não se descobrirem dous que concordássem no mesmo facto; e tenho alcançado que a razão desta variedade vem a ser, que como hum só homem não he possível affi-ssir a todos os successos de hum conflicto, entendén-do erradamente que cahe no descrédito de não ter parte em tantas acções divérfas, todas as que não póde alcançár com a vista desacreíta por fabulosas. Se pois me não foi possível contar sem contradicção em varias conversações hum só successo na presença dos que se acháráo nelle; como poderéi conseguir facilmente escrevendo tantas batálias, sitios, intre-prézas, e encontros succedidos á valerosa nação Portuguêza por espaço de vinte e oito annos nas quatro partes do mundo, julgárem todos a narração das victórias por verdadeiras, e por certos os motivos das empresas militares, e políticas, seguindose ordinariamente deste erro de discursos, e falta de notícias humá queixa perpétua contra quem escreve, e em alguns hum odio eterno, que muitas vezes se des-affôga pelos caminhos de delirio. A este, pois, labiryntho de estradas confusas, a este encanto de fantásmas disórmes me persuadió a arrojárme o entranhável amor da minha patria, de que se compóz com o sangue a naturéza, fundádo no justo temor de que

nao

não occultáſſem mortaes, as urnas do eſqueciménto, as acçoens glorióſas de tantos heróes excelléntes: accreſcentándose e estas razões outro mayór eſtímulo, que foi avaliár como obrigação precisa deſcobrir os motivos do princípio, e remate deſta hiſtoria de Portugal reſtaurádo, que me animei a eſcrevêr, pois como Alpha, e Omega, divino ſymbolo dos Gregos, fórao verdadeiramente os dous polos (ſe unidos pela naturéza, pelos accidéntes divérſos) que me perſuadirão a abraçar eſte grande empêño, pretendéndo mostrar claraménte ao mundo, aſſim a juſtiça com que o Sereníſſimo Rey D. Joáo IV. de immortal memória ſe reſtituiu á Coroa de Portugal, como a juſta razão com que o excellénte Principe D. Pedro, ſegúndo Tito, delicia dos homens, ſem mais cauſa, que a deſénſa, conſervação, e ſegurança deſte reyno, tomou ſobre ſeus generóſos homens o govérno d'elle, julgádo o por menos pezádo que a coróa, que com tanta admiração dos meſtres da política, deſpreza. Naõ me obrigádo, ſó o zelo da honra de pátria a deſcobrir os fundamentos de tão grandes ſuccéſſos, ſe não tambem a ſegurança da minha opinião que ameí ſempre mais que a própria vida; porque como logrei a fortuna de ter na guerra parte nas mayóres victórias, que ſe conſeguirão neſte reyno, era neceſſário moſtrar que a guerra foi juſta, para que as acçoens ſe julgáſſem por virtuóſas. E como da meſma ſorte me ſuccedéo ſer hum dos que aſſiſtirão ás heróicas reſoluçoens do Principe D. Pedro, era preciso manifeſtar, que fórao juſtificádas, para me livrár de calumniá dos que ſem noticias verdadeiras diſcurſaſſem a fatalidáde del Rey D. Affónſo VI. ſem entenderem que foi depóſto pelos tres eſtados do reyno por incapáz do govérno d'elle, e por inútil para a ſucceſſão da coróa.

Além deſtas tão urgêntes cauſas, não fórao menos poderóſas para me levár a eſte inténto, aſſim a magoa (como já referi) de ver que inſenſivelmente hía o tempo conſumíndo a noticia de tantas acçoens heróicas

heróicas, por faltár quem se resolvéſſe a eſcrevéllas, porque ſó até o anno de 1664. que eſcrevéo com errádas noticias Joaõ Bautiſta Viraugua Veneziano os ſuccéſſos deſte reyno, e o conde Mayolino nas ſuas guerras civis, ſe acha memória delles. Como a pena da pouca verdáde com que todos os authores Caſtelhanos, que ſe animárão a fallár na guerra ſuccedida entre as duas coroas a referirão: porque não ſó tratarão de encobrir com ficções a grandéza das noſſas victórias, ſenão que cahirão na ignorância do errár os tempos das campânhas, preferindo as ſucceſſivas as antecedéntes, os nomes aos ſitios das províncias onde acontecerão, e aos cabos, e officiães que ſe achárão nellas, ſeguindo o meſmo delicto que condenárão a hum author Francez, que imprimindo hum livro, em que affirmáva, que Francisco I. Rey de França não fora prezo na batálha de Pavia. E perguntándolhe a razão porque calumniáva a ſua verdáde, lançando ao mundo aquella mentíra, reſpondéo, que nos ſeculos futuros quem lêſſe a ſua hiſtória, e a dos Caſtelhános, daria credito a opinião a que ſe aſſeioáſſe. Eſtes ſerão os motivos que me perſuadirão tão difficultoſo empenho, animándome juntaménte a tomállo por minha conta as muitas circumſtâncias, que me habilitarão; porque além de herdár de antigos, e valeroſos avós ſer a verdáde alma da vida, como he da hiſtória, tive a fortuna de me criar no paço com o ſoberáno, e eſclarecido Príncipe D. Theodoſio, aſſiſtíndolhe continuaménte aprendéndo com elle a primeira gramática e a lição das hiſtórias. Neſte tempo fiz memória das primeiras políticas com que el Rey D. João deo princípio ao govérno deſte reyno.

De quinze annos comecei a ſervir na guerra, em que paſſei por todos os poſtos tão vagaroſaménte como qualquer ſoldádo da fortuna, e cheguei ao mayór emprégo de governadór das armas. Acheime em todas as occaſioens grandes da provincia de Alentejo

tejo do anno de 1650 até a batalha de Montes Claros, e fui voto em todos os negócios de mayor consideração. A guerra das provincias aonde não afflicí, e a das conquistas conferí com os cabos e officiaes que se achárão em todas as emprézas, depois de examinár os papeis mais intímos em que a curiosidade de varias pessoas se havia exercitado.

As negoceações fóra do reyno, que tocáram a differétes fugeitos, escrevo por informação de cada hum delles, e pelos livros em que os embaixadores lançáram as embaixadas. Os mais negócios pelos documentos das secretarias de estado, e guerra, buscando em todos, alem destas noticias, a segurança de testimúnhas desinteressadas, que tivrão sem dependência parte em todos os successos políticos, e militares.

Dez annos de trabalho me levóu este primeiro volume; no discurso deste tempo não houve pessoa douta ou intelligente que se animasse a examiná-lo, a quem o não entregasse, fugeitando me a qualquer censura que se me apontava, e emendando o que se me advertia, ainda que fosse contra o proprio entendimento, entendendo, que como esta historia não ha de ser so satisfação do meu juízo, se não dos alheios, fico melhor livrado em ter por defensores os que a emendarem. He documento, que felicemente devo ao sobre todos prudentissimo discurso do Príncipe nosso senhor. Antes que começasse a escrevella, passei por espaço de dous annos as historias mais selétas antigas, e modernas, conhecendo, que era necessario assentar o estylo: porque não costumão deizár á lição dos livros muitas horas de exercicio, havião levado a inclinação a equívocos, e termos poéticos, frase de que os primeiros annos mais continuamente se alimentáram, e de que me fez apartar o mais que me foi possível a doutrina dos mestres da historia, e a dos preceitos historicos de Mascarde Italião, e de padre Mene Francéz, que
nesta

nesta idade com grande elegância se empregarão neste assumpto. Nos últimos dous annos padeci mayor trabalho: porque tocándome nelles a occupação de Vedor da Fazenda da Repartição da India, que costuma deixar poucas horas livres, as que me ficavão de descânço, empregava neste exercicio, conhecendo, que passar dia sem lançar linha, he perdér do tempo a melhor joya, que atégora não tem havido milagre que fosse poderoso para restauralla.

Humo das mayores satisfacoens que tenho alcançado neste meu emprégo, he imprimirse quasi juntamente com este livro, os que com tanto louvor próprio, a com tanta honra da nação Portuguêza escreveo o moderno Livio Manoel de Faria e Souza; e como en todos chégão os successos, que refere nas quatro partes do mundo, da fundação de Portugal até o anno de 1640, fica com a minha historia enfiada a de Portugal até a paz celebrada entre esta corôa, e de Castella, que he o assumpto que comprehendem estes dous volumes.

Agóra, leytór, ou pio, ou malévolo, ou desinteressado, he necessário affiár o discurso, e eu seguro que muito menos ha de custár aos leytóres arguir, do que a mim me tem custado o escrever. E se alguma satisfacção se entender que mereço pelo meu trabalho, não quero mayor recompensa que o reconhecimento, de que atégora não sahio ao mundo historia mais verdadeira: pois sem effeicção, odio, esperança, ou temor, não perdoei a requizito algum necessário para a historia, que me ficasse por escrever, parecendome só escuzado relatar defeitos particulares, tendo por opiniao, que os que se arrojarão a descobrillos merecem mais o titulo de satyricos que de historiadores, exceptuando aquelles que referirão vicios, de que depende a narraçao da sua historia, como he necessário que me aconteça quando chegar a referir os successos da vida del Rey D. Affonso VI.

Naõ

Não podia Tito Livio eximir-se de contar os excessos de Tarquino, originando-se da sua laciva a mudança de Reis á República no Império Romano; mas pudera Quinto Curcio encobrir os vícios de Alexandre Magno, que não lhe embaraçarão as victórias da Asia. Preciso foi a João de Mariana relatar a cegueira de Henrique VIII. de Inglaterra na indigna affeição de Anna Bolena. Mas pudera Henrique Caterino de Avila diffimular os divertimentos de Henrique III. de França, que não pertencerão ao governo da sua monarquia. Faminiano Estrada os desconcertos de Chapim Vitello, e o Cardeal Bentivoglio nas suas memórias históricas os vícios de alguns Cardeaes do sacro collégio, e outros muitos que usarão desta indigna liberdade. Descobrirem-se os defeitos que não prejudicarão a interesses públicos, muitas vezes servem aos leytôres mais de estímulo, que de emenda, usando dos exemplares para desculpa dos vícios que pretendem seguir, e he Déos verdadeira testemunha de que o meu principal intento, he atalhar todos os que podem offender a sua divina magestade, e ser prejudiciaes á gloria desta monarquia.

Ao muito poderoso e Christianissimo Principe el Rey Dom João nosso senhór, deste nome o terceiro de Portugal. Prólogo de João de Barros, em as primeiras quatro Décadas da sua Asia.

TODAS las cousas, muito poderoso Rey e senhór nosso, tem tanto amor á conservação de seu próprio ser, que quanto lhe he possível, trabalhão em seu modo por se fazerem perpétuas. As naturaes em que somente obra a naturéza, e não a indústria humana, cadahuma dellas em si mesma tem huma virtude generativa, que quando devinamente são despófitas, ainda que periguem em sua corrupção: essa
mesma

mesma naturéza as torna renovár em novo ser, com que ficáo vivas e conservádas em sua propria espécie. E as outras cousas que não são obras da naturéza, mas feitos e actos humanos, estas porque não tinham virtúde animáda de gerar outras semelhantes a si, e por a brevidáde da vida do homem, acabávão com seu autor: os mesmos homens por conservár seu nome em a memória dellas, buscarão hum divino artificio, que representásse em futuro, o que elles obrávão em presente. O qual artificio, però que a invenção delle se dê a diversos autôres: mais parece por Deos inspirádo, que inventádo por algum humano entendimento. É que bem como lhe aprouve que mediánte o pádar, lingua, dentes, e beiços, hum respiro de ar movida dos bofes causado de huma potencia, a que os Latínos chámão *affatus*, se formásse em palavras significativas, para que os ouvidos seu natural objecto, representássem ao intendmento diversos significádos e concéptos, segúndo a disposição dellas: assi quiz que mediánte os charactéres das letras, de que usamos, dispóstas na ordem significativa da valia que cada nação déu ao seu alfabeto, a vista objecto recéptivo destes charactéres, mediánte elles, formásse a essência das cousas, e os racionaes concéptos, ao modo de como a fala em seu officio os denúncia. E ainda quiz que esto modo de elocução artificial de letras, por benefício de perpetuidáde precedesse ao natural da fala. Porquo esta, sendo animáda, não tem mais vida que o instante de sua pronunciação, e passa á semelhança do tempo, que nao tem regresso: e as letras sendo huns charactéres mortos, e não animádos, conthem em si espirito devida, pois a dão acérca de nós á todas las cousas. Cá ellas são huns elementos, que lhe dão assistência: a as fazem passár em futuro com sua multiplicação de annos em annos, por modo mais excellenté, do que faz a naturéza. Pois vemos que esta naturéza para gerar alguma cousa, corrómpe e altera os elementos, de que he compósta, e as letras sendo

elementos,

elementos, de que se compoem e forma a significação das cousas, nem o entendimento (posto que seja passivo na intelligência dellas pelo modo de como vem a elle :) mas vão-se multiplicando na parte memorativa por uso de frequentação, tão espirituál em hábito de perpetuidade, que por meyo dellas no fim do mundo, tão presentes serão áquelles que então forem, nossas pessoas, feitos, e dittos; como hoje por esta custódia literal, he vivo o que fezêrão e differam os primeiros, que forão no principio d'elle. E porque o fructo destes actos humanos, he mui differente do fructo natural, que se produz da semente das cousas, por este natural se nacer no mesmo homem, para cujo uso todas forão criadas, e o fructo das obras delles he eterno, pois procede do entendimento e vontade, onde se fabricão e acéptão todas, que por serem partes espirituaes, as fazem eternas: fica daqui a cadahum de nós huma natural e justa obrigação, que assi devêmos ser diligêntes e solícitos em guardár em futuro nossas obras, para com ellas aproveitarmos em bom exemplo, como prôtos e constantes na operação presente dellas, pera commum e temporal proveito de nossos naturaes. E vêndo eu que nesta diligência de encomendár as cousas á custódia das letras (conservadoras de todalas obras) a nação Portuguêza he tão descuidada de si, quão pronta e diligente em os feitos que lhe compêtem por milícia, e que mais se preza de fazer, que dizêr; quiz nesta parte, usár ante do officio de estrangeiro, que da condição de natural; despoêndome a escrever o que elles fezêrão do descobrimento e conquista do Oriente, por se não perdêrem da memória dos homens, que viêrem despois de nos, tão gloriôsos feitos, como vêmos serem perdidos de vossos progenitores, mayores em louvor do que lêmos em suas chônicas (segundo môstrão alguns fragmentos de particulâres escripturas). E na acceptação deste trabalho e perigo a que me despues, antes quêro ser tido por tão ousado como foi o derradeiro dos trinta e tantos escriptôres que escreverão a passagem e expedição que Alexandre

dre fez em Asia, o qual teméo pouco o que delle podião dizér, téndo tantos ante si: que imitár o descuido de muitos, a quem este meu trabálho por officio e profissão competia. Pois havéndo cento e vinte annos (porque de tantos tracta ésta escriptúra) que vossas armas e padrões de victórias tem tomádo posse, não fomite de toda a terra marítima de A'frica e Asia, mas ainda de outros mayóres mundos, do que Alexandre lamentáva, por não ter noticia delles: não hóuve algúem que se antremetesse a ser primeiro neste meu trabálho, somente Gomez Eanes de Zurara Chronista mór destes reynos em as coufas do tempo do Infánte Dom Hénrique (do qual nós confelsámos tomár a mayór parte dos seus fundaméntos, por não roubár o seu a cujo he.) No cometér do qual trabálho, véndo eu a magestade e grandéza da obra, não fui tão atrevído que logo como isto desejei, pusesse mãos a ella; antes toméi por cautélla deste cometiménto, uzár do modo que tem os architectóres. Os quaés primeiro que ponhão mão na obra a tração e debuxão, e de si apresentão estes deliniaméntos de sua imaginação, ao senhór de cujo ha de ser o edificio. Porque esta matéria, de que eu queria tractar, era dos triumphos deste reyno, dos quaes não se podia salár sem licença do autor delles, que, naquelle tempo deste meu propósito éra el Rey vosso padre de gloriósa memória: estándo sua Altéza em Évora o anno de quinhéntos e vinte, lhe aprofentei hum debuxo feito em nome de vossa Altéza, porque com este título ante ella fosse accepto. O qual debuxo não era alguma vatrachomiomachia, guerra de raãs e ratos, como fez Homero por exercitár seu engénho, ante que escrevesse a guerra dos Gregos e Troyanos: mas foi huma pintura metaphórica de exercitos, e vitórias humanas, nesta figura racional do Emperador Clarimundo, título da traça (conforme a idade que eu então tinha) a fim de aparár o estílo de minha possibilidadade pera ésta vossa Asia. A qual pintura,

tura, por ser em nome de vossa Altéza, assi contentou a el rey vosso padre, despóis que sôube ser imagem desta que ora tracto, que logo me pagou meu trabalho: dizendo aver dias que desejava estas cousas das partes do oriente serem postas em escriptura, mas que nunca achára pessoa de que o confiásse, que se me eu atrevia a esta obra, (como o debuxo mostrava) o meu trabalho não seria ante elle perdido. Por a qual confiança lhe beijeí a mão perante pessoas que hoje são vivas: por a pratica ser hum pouco alta lendolhe e hum ou dous capitulos da mostra e debuxo. E estando pero abrir os aliceces deste grande edificio, com o fervor da idade e favor das palavras de confiança que se de mi tinha: aprouve a Deos levar a el Rey vosso padre áquelle celestial assento, que se dá aos Cathólicos e Christianíssimos Príncipes, com que fiqueí suspenso desta empréza.

Socedendo tambem logo provérme vossa Altéza dos officios de thesoureiro da casa de India e Mina, e depois de feitor das mesmas casas, carrégos que com seu pezo fazem acuruar a vida, pois levão todos os dias della, e com a occupação e negócio de suas armadas e commércios, afógão e cattivão todo liberal engénho. Mas parece que assi estava ordenado de cima, que não sômente me coubéssse por forte da vida, os trabalhos de feitorizar os commércios de Africa e Asia: mas ainda escrevór os feitos, que vossos vassallos na milícia e conquista dellas fezêrão. Porque correndo o tempo, e achando eu entre algumas cartas que el Rey vosso padre antes da minha offerta, tinha escripto a Dom Frâncisco d'Almeida, e a Affonso d'Albuquerque, que conquistarão e governarão a India, encomendandolhe que miudamente lhe escrevêsssem as cousas e feitos daquellas partes, com tenção de as mandar por em escripto, e que vossa Altéza com a mesma tenção no anno de quinhentos e trinta e hum, tambem o escrevêo a Nuno d'Acunha, que naquelle tempo a governava, mandandolhe sobre isto regimentos feitos por Lourenço de Cacêres, a

* K

quem

quem tinha encomendado a escriptura destas partes, o que não houve effeito, e seria por ventura por elle falecer: determinei, por se não dilatár este dezêjo que vossa Altéza tinha, e eu pagar a confiança que el Rey vosso padre de mim téve, repartir o tempo da vida, dando os dias ao officio, e parte das noites a esta escriptura da vossa Asia: e assi comprí com o regimento do officio, e com o dezêjo que sempre tive desta empreza. E como os homens pela mayor parte são mais prontos em dar de si fructos voluntários, que os encomendados, imitando nisto a terra sua madre, a qual he mais viva em dar as sementes que nella jazem por naturéza, que as que lhe encomendamos por agricultura: parece que me obrigou ella a que patrizasse, e que por diligencia prevalecesse mais em mim a naturéza que della tenho, que quanto outros tem recebido por obrigação de officio, proffissão de vida, e agricultura de beneficios. Pois não tendo eu outra cousa mais viva para tomar esta empreza, que hum zelo da gloria que se deve a vossas armas, e fama a meus naturaes, que militando nellas, vertêrão seu sangue e vida: fui o primeiro que brotei este fructo de escriptura desta vossa Asia, se he licito, por ser de árvore agreste, rústica, e não agricultada, poder merecer este nome de fructo ante vossa real magestade.

*Prólogo na Chronica del Rei Dom Emanuel, dirigida por
Damião de Goes ao serenissimo Príncipe Dom Henrique, Infante de Portugal.*

Muitos, e graves authóres nos princípios de suas chronicas trabalharam em louvar na historia, da qual rudo o que dixeram foi sempre muito menos do que se devia dizer, porque assi como ella he infinita, assi seus louvores não tem fim, nem termo a que se possam reduzir, e pois tudo o trattado nesta parte, he quasi nada em comparçam do que deve ser, voltarei daqui a vela, para por a proa nesta:

na

na qual por certo não ousára, nem dévera de tocár, se me não fóra mandádo por V. A. por ser de qualidáde, que depois dalgumas pessoas a terem começáda el Rei dom Joam vosso irmão que sancta gloria haja, lhes mandóu tomár o que ja tínhão escripto, para se acabár por outros, de cujas habilitádes tinha maiór opinião, em maos dos quaes ficóu atte seu faleçíménto. E considerádo V. A. que pois estas pessoas, de que se tanto speráva, nam tínham feito em tempo de trinta e sette annos, que há que el Rei Dom Emanuel voffo pay faleçéo, coufa que respondéffe ao mereçíménto de tal negocio, sem se lembrár de quão fraco eu devo ser para hum tamáinho peso, me mandóu neste anno do Senhor de M.D.LVIII. que daquillo em que muitos, como em coufa desesperáda, se nam atrevérão por a mão, tomásse eu o cuidádo, o que fiz com maiór ousadia do que a meu fraco juizo convínha, movído com tudo por sós dous respéitos, o hum por eu ser fectúra do dito senhór Rei voffó pai, criádo em sua casa, e em seu serviço, desde idáde de nove annos, o outro por me parecer que sé nam movéra V. A. a me mandár coufa em que consistíam todos os feitos, e louvóres, deste felicíssimo rei, e daquelles que o servíram na guerra, e na paz, senam por confiár de mi o mais substânciál que no escrevér das chrónicas se requiere, qué hé com verdáde dar a cadahum o louvór ou reprehénsam que meréce. Pelas quaes razões matrevi a tomar este trabálho, o qual tal qual he, me pareçéo que não devía, nem era bem que dedicásse se nam a V. A. como á prinçipál authór de la fama, e glória del Rei seu pai fairem em luz, e nam perecér a lembrança das cousas notáveis que aconteçeram aos Portuguéses por todo o discúrso de seu regnádo.

De Francisco Rodriguez Lobo no seu Pastor Peregrino.

Chegarão as ferránas ao pé da fonte com esta alegria, e saudarão ao peregrino, que com inveja da quella liberdade as estava olhando, e em quanto (lavando os cantáros) com graciosas perguntas importunarão a fonte, o velho pegureiro se veyo assentar junto d'elle, e perguntandolhe donde era, e o que alli buscava, viêrão a travar prática, da qual Lereno entendéo que o ferrano era homem fingelo, e tão de vidro, que se lhe via pello rosto o coração, e pëllor amor com que elle tratava a gente daquella condição, lhe fôí de hum lanço em outro, perguntando da vida, e do cuidado que tinha na ferra, pois naquella companhia o via tam contente, ao que o velho respondéo desta maneira: ha mais de sessenta annos que nací detraz daquelle penêdo que daqui apparece no alta da ferra, e de então ate agora, nem vi mais terra que a que d'elle se descobre, nem desejei outra, de quantas ouvi gabar a meus naturaes, nunca tive de meu outro bem mayor, que não de sejar os alheos, nem outro mal que me desse mais cuidad, que as occasiões que o tempo me offereceo de poder possuir o que os homens estimão, e sentem tanto perdér, como são enganos; sou tão pobre do que a fortuna repárte, que cada hora que me quiser tomar conta de tantos annos, lhe não ficarei devêdo, nem hum desejo; vivo de guardár gado doutros donos, sôu fiel em o tratar, diligênte no pasto, e remédio d'elle, rico com a parte que me cabe da sua laã, e do seu leite, porque della me visto, e d'elle me sustênto, nem quando os frutos são poucos me lastimo, nem quando as novidades são mayores me alvorôço: contentame o bem, não me çoçobrã o mal; tenho huma cabána em que vivo, feita por minha propria mão das árvores destas brenhas, não acharas dentro coufa que deva direitos á vaidade, todos são instrumêntos necessários ao meu officio

offício de guardadór, e se alguma cousa sobéja, será das que ainda são mais importantes para a vida, da qui me alevánte conténte, e aqui me recólho descansádo, porque nem acórdo com os pensamentos na ventúra, nem adorméço com elles repartidos em bens que engânão, e em males que os homens escólhem de seu grado: de noite qualquer estrélla que vejo, he a minha, porque todas favorecem o meu estado, de dia sempre o sol me apparece de hũa cor, porque o vejo com os olhos livres. Ténho este instruménto, a cujo som canto, quando he bem me alégro, porque canto para me alegrár, e quando pello contrario me não peza muito, porque o não faço por alegrár outrem, quando ha frio, e neve na serra, também ha lenha nestes montes, e fogo nestas pedras com que me deffendo, quando a calma he grande, com o abrigo destas árvores, e a vesinhança das fontes me recreo, assim são os meus manjâres, como he a minha vida, nem ella me pede os que lhe fação dano, nem eu os tenho, o meu vestído he sempre desta cor, porque em qualquer cousa (ainda de menos conta) he a mudança perigósa. O mayór trabalho que tenho, he os pastóres com que trato, porque cada hum tem huma vontade; e hum entendiménto, e eu me hei de servir só do meu para com todos; porem de tal maneira uso d'elle, que me não dá do succésso que póde acontecer; ao avaréto não lhe peço nada nem lhe aconsélho que dé a outrem, nem lhe louvo o não dar nada a ninguem, e assim nem lhe minto, nem o moléstó. Ao sobérbo, nem me faço grande por não ficár com elle em conténda, nem aos outros pequénos, porque com elles se não alevánte mais. Ao ingrátó, ou o não sirvo, porque me não magoe, ou quando o sirva, lembrome que a sua má naturéza não póde tirár o preço da obra, que de si he boa. Ao falladór, calóme: ao caládo, descúbrome com tento. Ao dóudo, não lhe atálho a furia: ao nescio, não trabalho por lhe dar razão; ao pobre não lhe dévo;

ao rico não lhe peço ; ao vão não o gabo, nem o reprendo ; ao lifonjeiro não o creio e deste modo com todos eftou bem, e nenhum me faz mal. Não digo verdades que amarguem, nam tenho amizades que me profanem : não adquiero fazendas que outros me invêjem, porque neste tempo, das melhores tres cousas delle, nâcem as mais danôfas que ha no mundo : da verdade odio, da conversação desprêfo : da prosperidade invêja ; fôu qual me ves, e qual te eu digo, não quero parecer outro, nem fer mais do que parêço : vénho muitas vézes a esta fonte, que me pegou a sua condição, falla verdade a todos, e com nenhumi tem differença ; custumeime a estas suas agaos, que ainda que são amargôfas, são saudáveis, apágão peçouha, desfâzem feitiços, e valem contra mordiduras de bicha. Se nisto que me ouviste achas alguma cousa que te contênte, e queres hir comigo, pois já he tarde, te hospedarei da minha cabana, na qual pôdes entrár sem temor, dormir sem perigo, e sair sem saudade ; comerás de leite, ouviras dos contos, e partirás quando quizeres. Em quanto o velho pegureiro isto dizia, estava o pastor lançando contas a sua vida, com grande invêja do que aquêlle lhe contava da sua, e no cabo lhe respondéo com hum suspiro. Ah ditoso fer-râno, as estréllas te confervem neste estado, para que nunca conhêças a differença delle : tu só vives, tu só deves ao ceo estar izênto das leis da ventura, mais he para invejar tua pobreza, que a mayor vaidade do mundo, mais para estimar a tua cabana, que os mais lustrôfos edificios delle, mais para se dezejár a tua liberdade, que os mandos e senhórios, com que os homens se cativão, e engrandecem, e mais para se buscar a tua companhia, que o mayor thesouro, eu não quero mais della por agora, que partirme chorando pello que te ouvi. A este tempo se partião ja as ferrânas, que o chamarão, elle se despedio do peregrino, dândolhe hum pequeno vaso de cortiça que levasse daquella agoa, e tocando a sua

rabéca

rabéca se apartou, e o pastor ficou em batalha com males próprios, que á vista dos bens alheos tomarão força contra hum sujeito, que elles já tinham de todo desbaratado.

Não pareceo a Lerenó o Lugar accomodado para passar nelle a noite, e quasi arrependido de não aceitar o offercimento do ferrão, tomou outro caminho que hia mais pella fralda da serra, imaginando que perto averia alguma aldeia, em que se recolhese, e andando por elle o que ficava do dia, lhe veyo a faltár na entrada de hum valle, que por hum parte estava cheio de árvores altas, e espessas, que apertadas de dous outeiros que as assombravão, e com a claridade das estrellas que por entre os ramos as feria, se movião vagarosamente sobre hum lagóa, feita de hum ribeiro que decia do monte, na qual a sombra e movimento dos ramos, a luz que por entre elles lhe vinha mostrando o escuro das agóas, e alguns arrebatados saltos das roucas rans, fazendo hum temeroso ecco nos ouvidos, e na vista, hum medroso pavor, com tristezza, e recéo constrangimento o coração do desterrado pastor. E vendo que dalli para diante lhe ficava outra vez o caminho da serra, se abrigou a hum tronco que tinha as costas no ribeiro, que com o murmuro da agoa lhe podia ajudar a grangear o sono, e alli lançado entre as hervas, e os ramos não podendo adormecer, cantava desta maneira.

Entre estas árvores tristes
Que a sombra da noite cobre
E com manso movimento
Tristes pensamentos movem.

Ao longo deste ribeiro
Que por entre as pedras corre
Fazendo hum doce rugido
Que o mudo silencio rompe.

Debaixo deste arvorêdo
Que dos carregados montes
Tomando a cor, vai perdêdo
Vista, graça, sombra, e cores.

Perguntar quero a meus males
Pois fei que os males respondem
Se exprimenteí quanto custão
Que me digão quanto podem.

Se podem matar, que esperão?
Se dar vida, qual escolhem?
Pois a que entre elles padêço
He vida que sempre morre.

Mil annos há que a sustêto
E inda que mil annos conte
He porque em pezâres crescem
Como para os gostos fógem.

Conjurarão se contra ella
Dous cegos que estão conformes
Contra a razão, e o desejo,
Que he hum amor, outro a forte.

Mandarão me desterrádo,
E eu vou sem saber aónde,
Se fei que ambos vão comigo
E que se eu ándo elles córrem.

Males, se avéis de acabárme,
Para que fão tantos golpes?
Que o menor deiles pedía
Hum sofrimento de bronze?

Contra mi vós, e a ventura
E eu sem outros valedóres,
Máis que so meus pensamentos
Para que me faço forte?

Se quereis viver comigo,
Porque temeis vossa morte?
Que os males não durão mais,
Que em quanto hum triste os esconde.

Descubrime algum remédio
De esperanças, que essas podem
Sustentarme, e sustentárvos
Neste valle, e noutros montes.

Porque inda que sam venéno
Que vai matando de lonje,
Criouse com elle a vida
Que lhe tem posto outro nome.

Que he isto! não respondéis?
Mas outrem por vós responde,
Que aos males pedir razão
He pedir firmeza a forte.

Do Camoens.

Estavas linda Inez posta em fôssêgo,
De teus annos colhendo o doce fruto,
Naquelle engano da alma, ledô, e cego,
Que a fortuna não deixa durar muito:
Nos saudôfos campos do mondêgo,
De teus formôfos olhos nunca enxuto,
Aos montes ensinando, e as ervinhas.
O nome, que no peito escripto tinhas.

Do teu príncipe alli te respondião
As lembranças, que no alma lhe morávão,
Que sempre ante seus olhos te trazião:
Quando dos teus fermôfos se apartávão:
De noite em doces sônhos, que mentião,
De dia em pensamentos, que voávão:
E quanto em fim cuidava, e quanto via,
Erão tudo memórias da alegria.

D'outras

D'outras bellas fenhóras, princézas,
Os dezejádos talamos engéita,
Que tudo em fim, tu puro amor desprézas,
Quando hum gesto, suáve te sugéita :
Véndo estas namorádas estranhézas,
O velho pay fefúdo; que respeita,
O murmurár do povo e fantasía.
Do filho, que casárse nã quería.

Tirár Inez ao mundo determiná,
Por lhe tirar o filho, que tem prefo,
Créndo co sangue só da morte indina,
Matár do firme amor o fogo acéso :
Que furor consentio, que a espáda fina,
Que pode sustentár o grande peso
Do furor Mauro, fosse levantáda,
Contra hum fraca dama delicáda ?

Trazião a os horríferos algózes
Ante o Rey, ja movído a piedáde,
Mas o povo com falsas, e ferózes
Razóens, á morte crua o persuáde.
Ella com tristes e piedósas vozes,
Sahídas só de magóa e faudáde
Do seu Príncipe e filhos que deixáva,
Que mais que a propria morte a magoáva.

Para o céo cristalino levantádo
Com lágrimas os olhos piedósos,
Os olhos, porque as mãos lhe estáva atádo
Hum dos duros ministros rigurófos :
E depois nos menínos atentádo,
Que tão queridos tinha, e tão mimófos,
Cuja orfandáde como mãi temía,
Para o avô cruel assi dizia.

Se ja nas brutas feras, cuja mente
Natúra fez cruel de nasciménto :
E nas aves agréstes, que sómente
Nas rapinas aérias tem o intéto,
Com pequénas criânças vio a gente,
Térem piedóso sentiménto,

Como coa mãy de Nino ja mostrarão,
E cos Irmãos, que Roma edificarão.

O tu que tens de humano o gesto, e peito,
Se de humano he matár huma donzella
Fraca, e sem força so por ter fugêito
O coração, a quem sôube vencella
A estas criancinhas tem respêito
Pois o não tens á morte escura della,
Móvate a piedáde sua, e minha,
Pois te não move a culpa, que não tinha.

E se vencêdo a Maura resistência,
A morte sabes dar com fogo, e ferro,
Sabe tambem dar vida com clemência,
A quem para perdella não fez erro :
Mas se te allí meréce esta innocência,
Póemme em perpétuo e mísero destérro,
Na Scythia fria, ou lá na Libia ardênte,
Onde em lágrimas viva eternamente.

Poémme onde se use toda a feridáde,
Entre leões, tigres, e verêi
Se nelles achar posso a piedáde,
Que entre peitos humanos não achêi ;
Alli co amor intrínseco, e vontáde,
Naquelle por quem morro, criarêi
Estas relíquias suas, que a qui viste,
Que refrigerio sêjão da mãi triste.

Quería perdoár lhe o rey benino,
Movido das palavras, que o magóão,
Mas o pertináz povo, e feu desino,
(Que desta sorte o quiz) lhe não perdóão :
Arrancão das espádas de aço fino,
Os que por bom tal feito alli pregóão,
Contra huma dama, os peitos carniceiros,
Ferózes vos mostraes, e cavalleiros.

Qual contra a linda moça Policena,
Consolação extrêma da mãy velha,

Porque

Porque a sombra de Achilles a condéna,
Co ferro o duro Pirro se aparélha :
Mas ella os olhos, com que o ar feréna
(Bem como paciente, e mansa ovélha)
Na mísera mãy postos, que endoudéce,
Ao duro sacrifício se offeréce.

Taes contra Inez os brutos matadóres,
No collo de alabáastro, que sostinha
As obras, cõ que amor matóu de amóres
A'quelle, que depois a fez rainha :
As espádas banhando, e as brancás flores,
Que ella dos olhos seus regádas tinha,
Se incarnicávão sérvidos, e irófos,
No futuro castigo não cuidófos.

Bem pudéras, o sol, da vista destes,
Teus rayos apartár aquelle dia,
Como da seva mesa de Thyestes
Quando os filhos por mão de Atreu comia :
Vos o concávos valles que pudéstes,
A voz extréma ouvir da boca fría,
O nome do seu Pedro, que lhe ouvístes,
Por muito grande espaço repetístes,

Affi como e bonína, que cortáda
Antes de tempo foi, candída, e bella,
Séndo das mãos lascívas mal tratáda,
Da menína, que a trouxe na capélla,
O cheiro traz perdido, e a cor murcháda,
Tal está morta a pállida donzélla,
Secas do rosto as rosas, e perdída
A branca, e viva cor, co a doce vida.

As filhas do Mondégo a morte escúra,
Longo tempo chorando memorarão,
E por memória etérna em fonte pura,
As lágrimas chorádas transformarão :
O nome lhé puzérão, que inda dura,
Dos amóres de Inez, que alli passarão ;
Vede, que fresca fonte rega as flores,
Que lágrimas são a agóa, e o nome amóres.

Do Mesmo.

Porém ja cincoos foes éráo passádos,
Que dalli nos partirámos, cortando
Os mares nunca de outrem navegádos,
Prosperaménte os ventos affoprádo :
Quando huma noite astando descuidádos,
Na cortadóra proa vigiádo,
Huma nuve que os ares escuréce,
Sobre noffas cabéças apparece.

Tam temorafa vinha, e carregáda,
Que poz nos coraçóens hum grande medo,
Bramíndo o negro mar de longe bráda,
Como se désse em vão nalgum rochédo :
O potestáde, díffe, sublimáda,
Que ameáço divíno, ou que segrédo,
Este clima, e este mar nos apresetá,
Que mór coufa parece, que torménta?

Não acábava, quando huma figúra
Se nos mostra no ar, robústa, e válida,
De disórme, e grandíffima estatúra,
O rosto carregádo, a barba esquallída :
Os olhos encovádos, e a postúra
Medónha, e má, e a cor terréna, e pállida,
A boca negra, os dentes amaréllos.

Tam grande era de membros, que bem posso
Certificárte, que este era o segúndo,
De Rhodes estranhíffimo Colóffo,
Que hum dos sete milágres foi do mundo :
Cū tō de voz nos falla horréndo, e grosso,
Que parecéo sahir do mar profundo,
Arrepiãose as carnes, e o cabéllo,
A mi, e a todos, só de ouvílo, e velo.

Do Costa.

Logo o póldro de generófa casta,
Nos Campos anda mais alto, e foberbo,
E poem a tempo as dobradiéas pernas.
E priméiro fe atréve ir o caminho,
E tentár os arrebatádos rios,
E arremeçarfe ao mar não conhecido;
Nem dos estróndos vãos fe teme, e espánta;
O pescóço tem alto e tem pequéna
A cabéça, e a barriga breve, e curta;
As costas têm muy gordas, e carnúdas,
E com as polpas o animófo peito
Se mostra proporcionadaménte gordo.
Os mais fermófos são cástanhos claros,
E os que tem de cor verde-mar os olhos;
A mais má cor tem alvos, e meládos;
O generófo não sabe estár quedo;
Se algúmas armas dérão fom de longe,
As orelhas levánta, e abáyxa, e treme
Cos membros todos, e nas ventas volve
Hum recolhído fogo, reprimíndo-o:
A coma tem espéssa, a qual descança
Séndo lançáda no diréito quarto;
Mas pellos lombos passa a larga espínha,
Rapándo cava a terra, e grandemente
A unha, que he de corno duro, soa.

Da Saudáde.

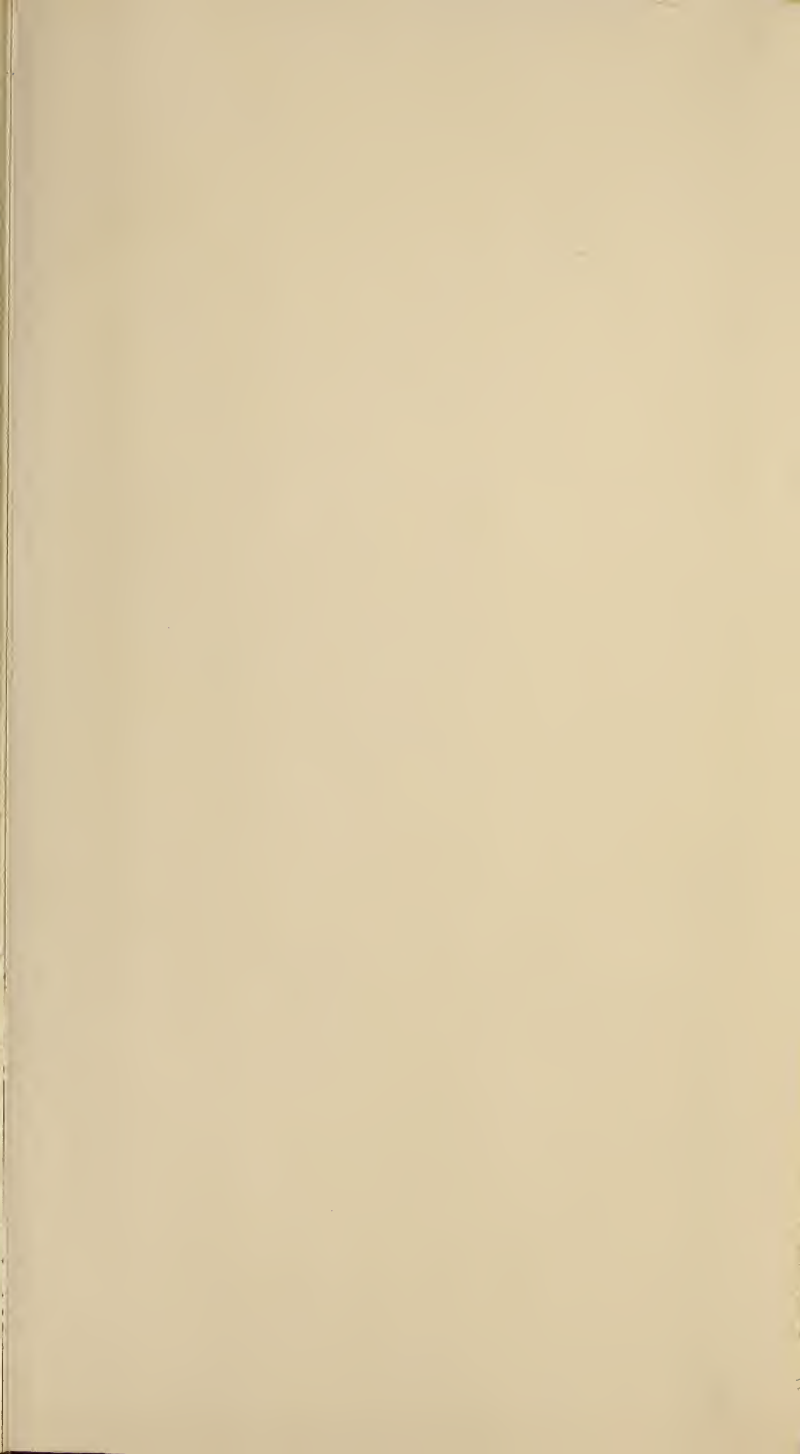
Quinta efféncia da dor, noite temída,
Em cuja fombra he monstro a claridáde,
Mortes, instántes figlos, que a vontáde
Com a pena do temor mede atrevida.

De bens perdidos Argos homicida,
Felice pompa da infelicidade,
Alma da pena, *Triste Saudade*,
Vivo morrer de huma defunta vida.

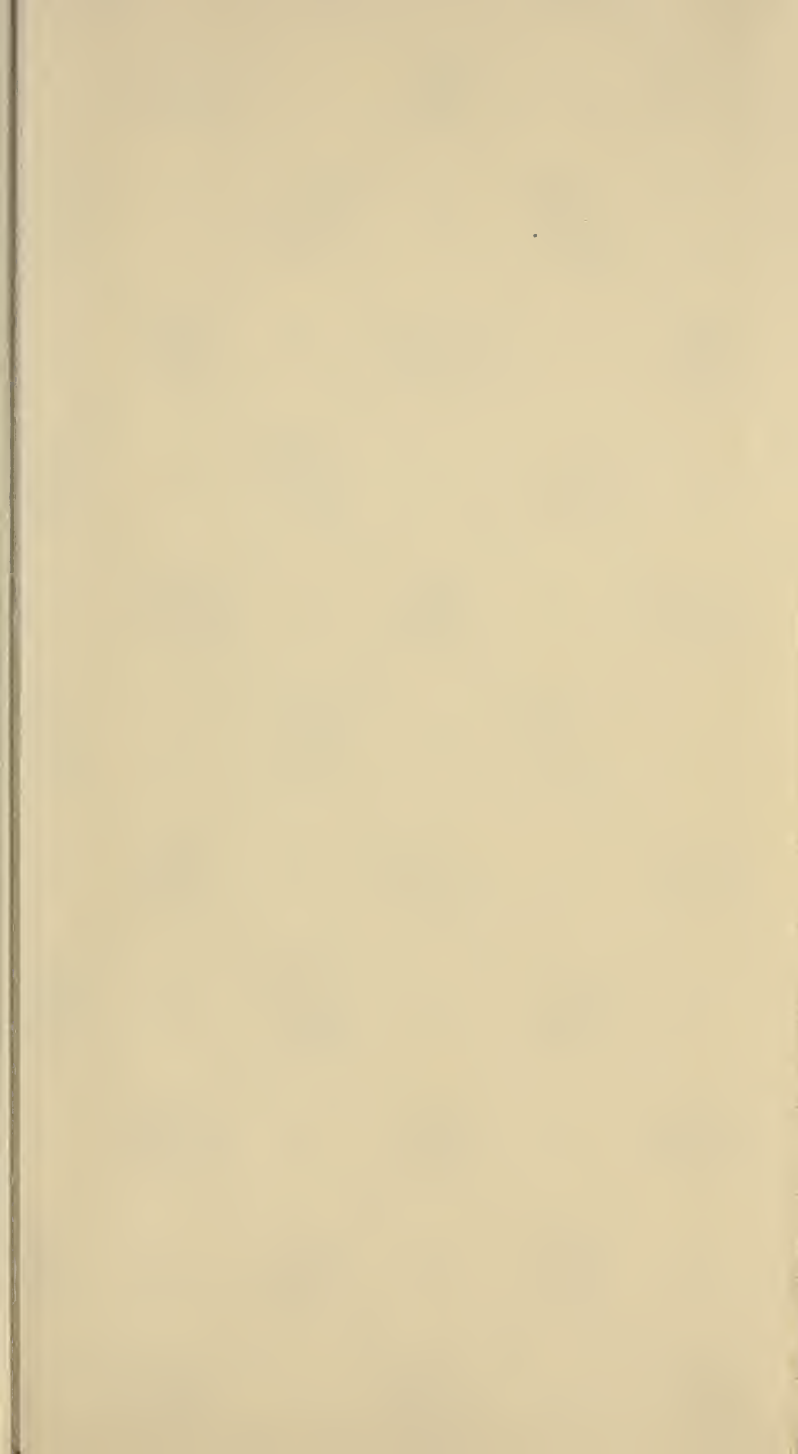
Abráços cos torméntos, que padéço
Por quem a mesma pena a glória ténho
Com vosco ánimo tristes pensamentos.

A vossos males dévo o que meréço
Que a pezár da ventúra a tirár venho
Da auzência fé, da dor merecimentos.

F I N I S.







Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

PreservationTechnologies

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 183 739 A

